



of Harac. The

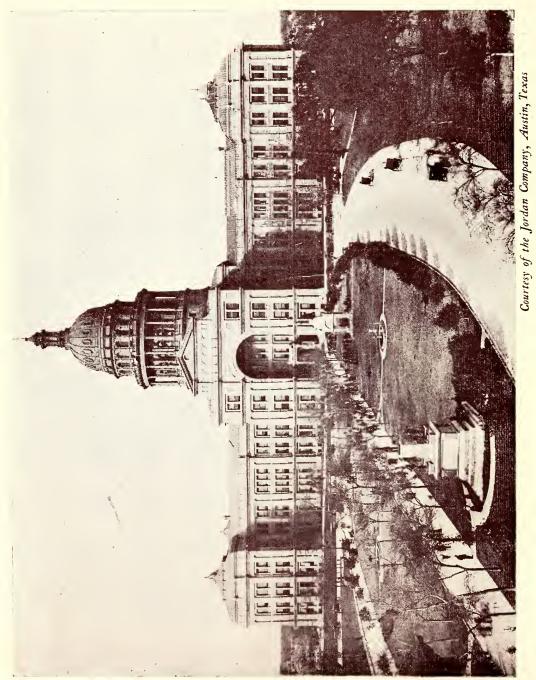


## A HISTORY OF TEXAS

Volume Five

Digitized by the Internet Archive in 2012 with funding from LYRASIS Members and Sloan Foundation





THE TEXAS STATE CAPITOL AT AUSTIN

# A HISTORY OF TEXAS

# FROM WILDERNESS TO COMMONWEALTH

BY
LOUIS J. WORTHAM, LL. D.

IN FIVE VOLUMES
VOLUME FIVE



1924
WORTHAM-MOLYNEAUX COMPANY
FORT WORTH, TEXAS

# Copyright, 1924, by Wortham-Molyneaux Co.

Printed in the United States of America

Printing and Binding by
THE WORLD COMPANY, INC.
Fort Worth, Texas

Electrotyping by
SAM ROSS MCELREATH
Fort Worth, Texas

# 72A111133

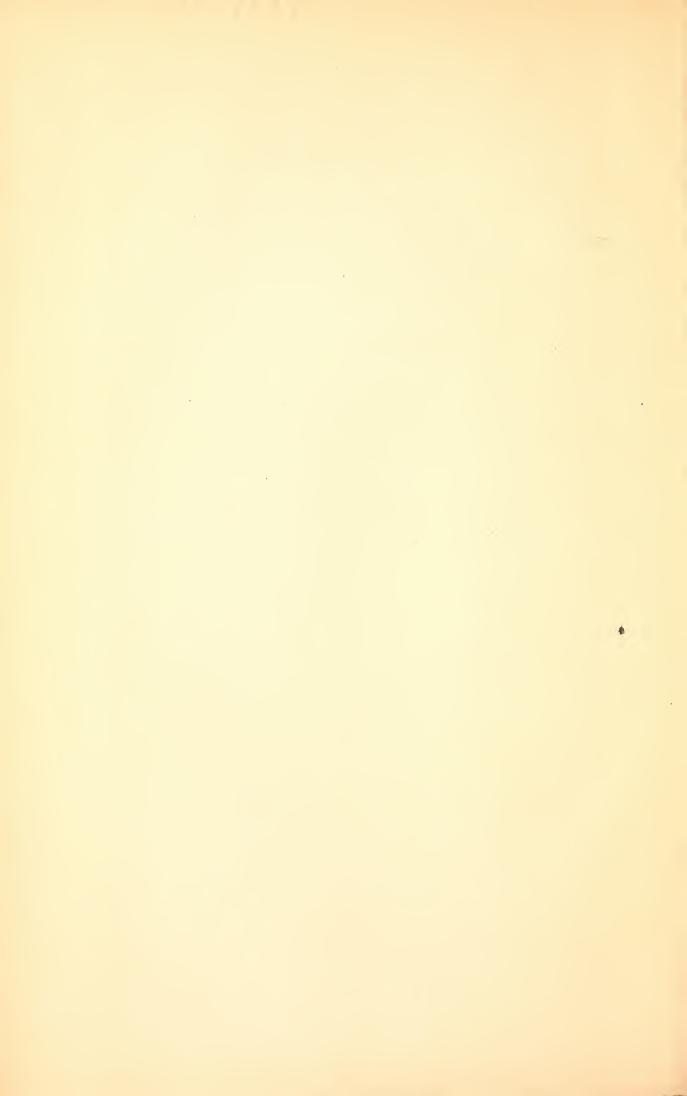
#### CONTENTS.

Chapter		]	Page
LXI.	First Stage of Reconstruction	•	1
LXII.	RISE AND FALL OF RADICALISM .	•	45
LXIII.	Texas Since Reconstruction .	•	87
LXIV.	A CENTURY OF DEVELOPMENT .	•	111
LXV.	THE ROMANCE OF CATTLE	•	135
LXVI.	The Wonder of Petroleum	•	179
LXVII.	Some Other Industries	•	203
LXVIII.	THE RISE OF THE CITIES		223
LXIX.	CITIES OF THE FUTURE	•	257
LXX.	OTHER URBAN COMMUNITIES	•	301
	INDEX		333

T 976.4 W932 72 A 111 33

Wortham, Louis J. History Of Texas; From Wilderness to mmonwealth, Vol.5

801248 29808



### LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS.

STATE CAPITOL AT	Au	STI	N	•	•	•	•	Fro	ont	is f	riece
Andrew J. Hamil	ТО	N	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	•	6
JAMES W. THROCK	MO	RTC	N	•	•	•	•	•		•	22
ORAN M. ROBERTS	•	•	•	•		•	•	•	•		3 <b>8</b>
EDMUND J. DAVIS											54
RICHARD COKE .											55
Richard B. Hubbai	RD	•	•		•	•	•	•	•		70
John Ireland .											71
Lawrence Sulliva	N	Ros	SS	•	•	•		•		•	86
James Stephen H											87
CHARLES A. CULBE	RSC	N	•	•		•	•	•		•	102
Joseph D. Sayers	•	•	•	•	•	•	•			•	102
S. W. T. LANHAM											
THOMAS M. CAMPB											
OSCAR B. COLQUIT											
James E. Ferguson											
WILLIAM P. HOBBY											
PAT M. NEFF .											
Col. E. M. House	•		•	•		•					134
WILLIAM P. McLEA											135
Trail Herd of Ti											
A Prize-Winning 1											4 # 4
IKE T. PRYOR .	•	•	•	•	•	•			•		166
A Prize-Winning	H	ERE	FOF	RD	Cov	W		•	•	•	167
Burkburnett, Sho											
Cotton Yard, Au											
John Henry Kirb	Y	•	•	•	•	•			•		214
B. F. YOAKUM .	•	•	•		•	•		•		•	215
ALAMO PLAZA, SAN	A	NT	ONI	0	•	•	•	•	•	•	230
Business District	OF	DA	LLA	AS	•		•		•	•	231
AIR VIEW OF FORT											

## LIST OF ILLUSTRATIONS (CONTINUED)

Main Street, Houston		•	•	•	•	•	247
PEARL STREET, BEAUMONT .		•	•	•	•	•	262
Austin Avenue, Waco	•		•	•	•	•	263
A VIEW OF EL PASO	•	•	•	•	•	•	278
STATE LINE AVENUE, TEXARKA	NA	•	•	•	•	•	278
AIR VIEW OF WICHITA FALLS							
Approach to University of T	EX	AS	•	•	•	•	294
A FETE DAY ON GALVESTON BI	EAC	Н	•	•	•	•	295
Air View of Paris	•	•	•	•	•	•	310
A VIEW OF LUBBOCK							
Polk Street, Amarillo							

### A HISTORY OF TEXAS

VOLUME V.

#### CHAPTER LXI.

FIRST STAGE OF RECONSTRUCTION.

President Johnson's program for the reconstruction of the seceded states and their restoration to the status of full membership in the Union was the same in spirit as that which had been formulated by Lincoln. The process was simple. In each case a provisional governor was appointed and directed to reestablish the normal operation of the courts as far as possible and to arrange for the holding of a convention of delegates, elected by the "loyal" portion of the population. The test of loyalty was the taking of an oath of allegiance, the precise wording of which was prescribed by the president. The convention was required to make changes in the state constitution to conform with the new condition of things. Specifically it was required to do three things, as follows: First, to nullify the act of secession; second, to declare slavery abolished forever and fix the civil status of the former slaves; and third, to repudiate the state debts contracted in support of the war. All of this, it was required, must be ratified by a vote of the people, and then an election should be held to choose a constitutional governor, a legislature and other state officers. When the legislature thus elected convened it was required to ratify

remained away from the polls. Many of the people had become justifiably disgusted over the condition that had developed with respect to the former slaves. The proclamation freeing the slaves had come on the eve of the cotton-picking season, and quite naturally the negroes interpreted freedom to mean that they did not have to work any more. By the time cotton was ready to pick it became difficult in a majority of cases to induce them to remain in the fields, even where they were advised to do so by their white friends of the Freedmen's bureau, which organization had begun operations in Texas immediately after the establishment of the provisional government. The purpose of the bureau, as originally constituted, was to protect the exslaves in their newly granted rights, but many of the negroes interpreted that purpose as being to take care of them generally. As the bureau did undertake to relieve cases of distress among them, this belief was strengthened. Then somehow the story got started among the negroes, and spread rapidly from one to another, that on New Year's day-January 1, 1866the Federal government would make every former slave a present of a farm and a farming outfit. "Forty acres and a mule" were to constitute the government's New Year's gift to each negro. This belief added to the demoralization and very naturally did not contribute toward allaying the feeling of exasperation with which Texas planters were beginning to view the whole situation. There was a widespread disposition among the latter to "let the Yankees run the convention," since its chief business would be to acknowledge the new order of things.

However, the election was held, and the delegates gathered at Austin on the appointed date. developed that the delegates were divided into three classes. There were radical Unionists who, if they could have their way, would have denied former Confederate soldiers all voice in the government; and there were radical secessionists who were reluctant to accept the situation created by the triumph of Union arms, and finally there were the conservatives of both camps who desired to subordinate everything to the restoration of normal relations with the Union. The last-named class held the balance of power. J. W. Throckmorton was elected president of the convention, a circumstance which in itself revealed the temper of a majority of the delegates. Throckmorton had opposed secession, but had served in the Confederate army during the war. He was, therefore, an ideal presiding officer for a body charged with the task of preparing the way for readmission into the Union.

The radicals in congress, led by Thaddeus Stevens, of Pennsylvania, in the house, and by Charles Sumner, of Massachusetts, in the Senate, already had begun their opposition to the reconstruction program of President Johnson and, in calling the convention to order, Throckmorton made support of the president the keynote of his address. "Let us by our action," he said, "strengthen the hands of the executive of the nation, and by a ready and willing compliance with his suggestions show our national brethren that we are in good faith disposed to renew our allegiance to the general government."

Governor Hamilton sent a message to the convention and frankly expressed his disappointment over the lack

of interest the people had shown in the election. would be wanting in candor," he said, "if I did not declare that the apathy manifested by the people in the recent election fills me with deep concern. From the returns made to the department of state, and the reports that have reached me from various portions of the state, there is reason to believe that less than half the voters participated in the election." The governor outlined to the convention the subjects upon which it would be expected to act, making it clear that what the president required was a political surrender as complete as the military surrender was made. Not only would it be necessary to acknowledge the abolition of slavery and to invalidate the ordinance of secession, but the claim of the right to secede would have to be renounced. The civil status of the former slaves would have to be fixed also, and on this subject the governor made specific recommendations. He was well acquainted with the temper of the North on this question and, as he desired to see normal relations with the Federal government reestablished as soon as possible, he urged upon the delegates the advisability of regulating the qualifications of voters in such a way that it could not be justly charged that former slaves were disfranchised on account of their color. "I believe it would be unwise," he said, "to exclude the freedmen in our midst from the exercise of political privileges by making the enjoyment of those privileges to depend upon the accident of birth or color. I wish to be perfectly frank in the statement of my views, but I do not wish to be misunderstood. I do not believe that the great mass of freedmen in our midst are qualified by their intelligence to exercise the



Andrew J. Hamilton



right of suffrage, and I do not desire to see this privilege conferred on them. But I think that progress is the great law of mind, under every free government, and I do not believe that any policy can be enduring or permanent in this country which is based upon accidental circumstances and the traditions of prejudice, instead of being founded upon the eternal principles of truth and justice. . . I believe it would be wise to regulate the qualifications of those who are to become voters hereafter, by rules of universal application. . . . Justice requires that the national government shall see to it that this now despised and degraded race shall be protected in the beneficial enjoyment of the great boon which has been accorded them. Any system of laws, therefore, intended to deprive them of the actual fruits of liberty, will meet with resistance from the congress of the United States." In other words, the governor suggested that the negro should not be denied the ballot because he was a negro or an ex-slave, but that qualifications for voting should be provided which the bulk of the negroes did not possess, and which would apply to white and black alike. Thus, he thought, the danger of negro domination and the manipulation of an ignorant electorate would be avoided and at the same time the objections of congress to the denial of suffrage to the former slaves would be met on the ground of principle. This suggestion, however, received no support in the convention and suffrage was not granted to the negroes.

The convention adopted an ordinance which declared the act of secession null and void and renounced the right of secession for the future. The extreme Unionists sought to have the ordinance worded in such a way as to declare the act of secession null and void from the beginning, thus branding all who had fought in the Confederate army as traitors. But this was stubbornly opposed by the ex-Confederates in the convention and the conservatives joined them in framing the declaration that was adopted. The extreme Unionists threatened for a time to withdraw from the convention over this question, declaring that the ordinance would never satisfy congress, but the will of the majority prevailed.

The entire civil debt incurred by the state between January 28, 1861, and August 5, 1865, was repudiated by another ordinance adopted by the convention. There was much criticism of this action, the argument being made that there was no justification for the repudiation of any part of the debt which did not relate directly to the war. The fact that other Southern states which had suffered more than Texas during the war had not taken such extreme action supplied good ground for this criticism.

The convention acted promptly in declaring slavery abolished and in providing that the negroes should be secure in person and property. But the question of the civil status of the ex-slaves presented much difficulty. The radicals, of course, favored full enfranchisement of the negroes and the conferring upon them of all civil rights. The provision adopted placed them on a basis of equality with the whites in giving testimony in the courts against members of their own race, and the legislature was authorized to regulate their testimony

in other cases. As already stated, Governor Hamilton's suggestions on the question of suffrage were not adopted.

Other necessary steps to restore civil government were taken by the convention and the required amendments to the state constitution were drawn up. In addition to the changes made necessary by the new order of things, the terms of most state officers were changed to four years and the salaries increased. The constitution as amended was put in shape to be submitted to a vote of the people, and June 4 was fixed as the date of the election. In addition to voting on the amended constitution, the people of that day were to choose state officials.

The convention was in session until April 2, and by that time two well-defined factions had developed. The contest between President Johnson and the radicals in congress was already in full swing, the president having vetoed two bills which were intended to apply a different policy to the reconstruction of the Southern states, and roughly speaking the two factions into which the convention had divided corresponded to the cleavage between the president and congress. The radicals represented the views of Thaddeus Stevens and Charles Sumner, who were leading the opposition to the president's plan of reconstruction, and the conservatives supported President Johnson's program. Just before adjournment of the convention a move was made to have it go on record as indorsing the president's stand, but the radicals were able to block it. On the whole, however, the convention might be said to have favored the president's program.

As the convention neared adjournment, both factions

made moves to carry the fight to the people by holding caucuses to nominate candidates for governor and other state offices. The radicals acted first, and nominated E. M. Pease, formerly governor of the state, but the conservatives immediately countered this action by nominating J. W. Throckmorton, the chairman of the convention.

The radicals published a platform calling upon all men who loved the Union "without respect to past differences" to unite in supporting their candidate. It declared the act of secession "to have been in violation of the constitution of the United States, and of the constitutional obligation of the state of Texas to the other states of the Union and, therefore, null and void from the beginning." It also declared that no part of the Confederate war debt should be paid, and expressed confidence in congress as well as in the president in connection with the reconstruction of the seceded states. On the question of the status of the negro, the radical platform contained the following declaration:

"That we acquiesce sincerely in the act of the Nation abolishing slavery, and that we will endeavor to ameliorate the condition of the freed people in our midst by treating them with justice, and by according to them, not grudgingly but willingly and heartily, the rights which are now, or may hereafter be, secured to them by the constitution and the laws."

The principles of the conservative party were set forth in a formal letter, requesting Throckmorton to become the candidate of the conservatives for governor, which was drawn up by a caucus composed of the following leaders: John Hancock, J. K. P. Record, M. T.

Johnson, O. M. Roberts, J. W. Henderson, H. P. Mabry, C. C. Herbert, H. R. Runnels, John D. Nash, J. W. Whitfield, J. M. Lindsay, W. C. Dalrymple, J. M. Hurt, A. M. Gentry, J. K. Bumpass, A. W. Nelson, J. M. Norris, A. Harwood, F. A. Hill, W. R. Anderson, A. J. Ball, R. F. Slaughter, Benjamin R. Tyus, Wells Thompson, A. W. Moore, W. M. Walton, Benton Randolph, J. W. Parsons, A. W. Terrell and C. S. West. The letter was addressed jointly to Throckmorton and George W. Jones, who was chosen as the candidate for lieutenant-governor. It was as follows:

"The undersigned representing, as they believe, the views of the people in various portions of the state, without distinction as to past party affiliations, desire permissions to use your names for the positions of governor and lieutenant-governor of the state of Texas at the next election.

"Knowing you to be opposed to the radicalism of the day, which is persistently sought to be imposed upon the people of Texas, and being fully satisfied of your opposition to negro suffrage, and the hasty and inconsiderate elevation of the negro to political equality; knowing also that you indorse the good faith of the people of Texas, in their professions of loyalty to the general government, and appreciating their desire for our state to be restored to her former federal relations at the earliest practicable period;

"And believing, as we do, that the great mass of the people of Texas indorse President Johnson in his policy of restoration, which is based on the constitution, we desire that you, whom we know to entertain the same

views of his policy, should become the standard-bearers of the conservative Union men of the state in the coming election.

"Though you have persistently refused to allow your names to be used in this connection, the events of the last few days, we believe, render it necessary that you should yield to our wishes on this subject. These events speak trumpet-tongued to every patriot in the land. The radical branch of the Republican party of the North, who closed the doors of Congress against Southern representatives, who have declared their intention to reduce us to a condition of territorial vassalage, and to place us below the level of those who were once our slaves, have their adherents in our very midst. have had their caucuses, adopted their platforms, nominated their candidates for the principal offices in the state, and are determined to aid and abet Stevens, Sumner, and Phillips, in their opposition to the policy of the President, in their raids against constitutional liberty, and in the establishment of a consolidated despotic government.

"We assure you that this call is not confined to a few persons, nor to any particular locality, but comes from every portion of the state; from men who are determined, if possible, to preserve the country and its institutions from the machinations of those who, in the last hours of the convention defeated the resolution indorsing the policy of the President, and are determined to bind us, hand and foot, and surrender us to the radical Republicans, or prolong indefinitely provisional and military rule."

In replying to the above communication, Throck-

morton signified his acceptance of both the nomination and the principles set forth. "I have the honor to say," he wrote, "that I recognize the obligation that rests upon every individual to respond to the wishes of the people when their interest or free institutions are endangered and, fully concurring with you in the views and sentiments you have expressed, I yield, regardless of my inclinations or interest, to your request and authorize you to use my name as the candidate of the conservative, Union sentiment of Texas, for Governor."

So the campaign was launched. It had hardly started when the concrete plans of the radicals in congress with respect to the Southern states were revealed through a report of the joint committee on reconstruc-This committee, composed of members of the two houses of congress, had been taking testimony on conditions in the South about four months, and in the meantime states that had complied with the President's requirements had been denied representation in congress. On April 30, 1866, the committee reported the measures which revealed the congressional program of re-These measures included a construction in detail. proposed amendment to the constitution granting full suffrage to the negroes and a bill providing that before being given representation in congress the "rebel" states would be required to ratify this proposed amendment. In addition to enfranchising the negroes, the proposed amendment contained a section which disqualified for either state or federal office all persons who, after having taken the official oath to support the constitution, had participated in rebellion. The effect of this last clause

was to bar from office most of the public leaders of the South. This report put the entire South on notice that the radical Republicans, through control of congress, proposed to fasten negro suffrage on the country. The motive with the bulk of the Republican politicians was so palpably the desire to continue radical Republican rule through control of the negro vote in the Southern states that the people in all those states decided to resist to the limit of their power. The purpose was clearly to hold the "conquered states," as some of the radical orators called them, under a condition of political subjection. Sectional government was to be made a fact through the instrumentality of negro suffrage.

The people of Texas now realized the situation they were facing and the state campaign was a bitter one. The radicals, through their declaration in favor of according the negroes "the rights which are now, or may hereafter be, secured to them by the constitution and the laws," were pledged beforehand to the congressional program. The people became fully aroused to the danger and they rallied to Throckmorton's standard. More than sixty thousand votes were cast, and Throckmorton was elected by a vote of 49,277 to 12,168 for Pease. The amended constitution was adopted by a vote of 48,519 to 7,719. There was no mistaking the temper of the people.

The legislature assembled on August 6, 1866, and Throckmorton was inaugurated on August 9. President Johnson had formally declared the rebellion at an end in all of the seceding states except Texas on April 2. On August 20, after having received notice of the organization of Throckmorton's government, the presi-

dent issued a proclamation declaring that the insurrection in Texas was at an end and that peace, order, tranquillity and civil authority existed throughout the United States. But already congress was in the saddle, and the proclamation of the president meant little. However, it will be seen that had President Johnson's program of reconstruction been carried out the normal relations between the states of the Confederacy and the Union would have been restored in less than a year and a half after Lee's surrender.

But the president's program was now cast into the discard. Congress had taken charge of the government and the radical leaders were discussing plans looking toward the impeachment of the president. On June 13, 1866, the fourteenth amendment enfranchising the negroes had been finally passed by congress and sub-This amendment and the thirmitted to the states. teenth, which abolished slavery, were presented to the Texas legislature for action as soon as it convened. In his message submitting them, Governor Throckmorton expressed his unqualified disapproval of the fourteenth amendment and recommended that it be rejected. legislature acted promptly on this recommendation and refused ratification to the amendment. No action was taken on the thirteenth amendment, however, for it already had received the required number of ratifications from other states, and as the state convention had acknowledged the supremacy of the constitution it was not deemed necessary for Texas to ratify this amendment formally.

Texas was now in its second crop season since the freeing of the slaves and the labor situation on the farms

and plantations of the state was becoming intolerable. There was a universal demand for the enactment of legislation to deal with it. The legislature, therefore, passed laws governing labor contracts, prohibiting the enticing away of laborers working under contract, defining vagrancy and regulating apprenticeship. legislation was intended to cure the demoralized condition existing among the negroes, and to stabilize the chaotic labor situation on the farms. It represented an attempt to adjust the economic organization of the state to the changed order of things created by the war. Northern critics, who knew nothing of the actual conditions which had resulted from emancipation, denounced these laws, along with similar measures adopted in other Southern states, as attempts to reestablish slavery. They were, of course, nothing of the kind. On the contrary they were honest efforts to make a system of free negro labor workable in the peculiar conditions which grew up immediately after emancipation.

The legislature enacted other legislation made necessary by the emancipation of the slaves. The negroes were guaranteed protection in the enjoyment of all rights to which they were entitled under the constitution, but were denied the right to intermarry with whites, the right to vote, to hold public office, to serve on juries or to testify in cases in which negroes were not concerned.

One of the chief duties which the legislature had to perform in rehabilitating the government and preparing the way for a restoration of normal relations with the Union was to elect two senators and provide for the election of four congressmen by the people. Oran M. Roberts, who had been president of the secession convention, and David G. Burnet, who had served as provisional president of the republic during the revolution, were elected senators, and an election was called at which the members of congress might be chosen. In due course George W. Chilton, B. H. Epperson, A. M. Branch and C. C. Herbert were elected to congress, and the Texas delegation, headed by Roberts and Burnet, proceeded to Washington.

Meantime, the organization of the state government was completed. John A. Green was made secretary of state and the other state officers were William M. Walton, attorney-general; W. L. Robards, comptroller; M. H. Royston, treasurer; Stephen Crosby, land commissioner, and Davis Guerly, adjutant-general. The judges of the supreme court were George F. Moore, chief justice, and Richard Coke, S. P. Donley, A. H. Willie and George W. Smith, associate justices.

By the beginning of January, 1867, the state government of Texas, under Throckmorton's able direction, was on a stable basis. The courts were in orderly operation and, in spite of frequent military encroachment, the civil power was more securely established than at any time since secession. It required only the seating of the representatives of Texas in the national congress to restore peaceful conditions completely. Then the work of rehabilitating the prosperity of the state and of knitting together again the ties that would bind the state to the nation could be undertaken in earnest.

But the radical Republicans in congress had only begun their mischief-making activities. The congres-

sional campaigns in most of the Northern states during the autumn of 1866 had been orgies of denunciation of the South. Hate and vindictiveness formed the burden of the speeches of the candidates and the people were wrought up to a frenzy. The Southern people were pictured as unrepentant traitors who still plotted the destruction of the Union and the negroes were shown to be helpless and innocent victims of a new system of oppression which the Southern monsters had already devised and put in operation. The impassioned orators demanded the destruction of every state government in the South which had been brought into being through the application of the policies of Lincoln and The Southern states were denied President Johnson. the right to be considered as states. The South, these gentlemen told their constituents, was conquered territory, purchased with the blood of martyred Union soldiers on a hundred battlefields, and it would be treason to the memory of the dead, treachery to the murdered Lincoln, to admit the existing state governments of the South into fellowship with the other states. The "rebel" governments should be destroyed and new governments, formed with the assistance of enfranchised negroes, should be erected in their stead. Only when thus "purified" should these states be again admitted into the Union. President Johnson was denounced as a traitor to his country and an enemy of the Union. The fact that he was a Southern man and had been a Democrat before the war was twisted into proof of his disloyalty to the nation. It was a campaign in which blind fanaticism ruled supreme and the worst passions of the people were stirred up by narrow-minded zealots.

It ended in triumph for the radical Republicans and paved the way for the darkest and most disgraceful period of American history.

It was to the congress fresh from this campaign that the Texas senators, Roberts and Burnet, and the four Texas congressmen presented their credentials. were denied their seats. Whereupon they issued from Washington an "Address to the Congress and People of the United States." This document, which was written chiefly by Roberts, and which was dated January 10, 1867, stands today as an unanswerable indictment of the whole reconstruction program of the radicals and a complete refutation of the theories of government upon which that program was based. It was the first utterance from representatives of the South, in reply to the radicals, since the war, and it was widely printed and commented on, both in the North and the South. No attempt was made to reply to it and it remains unanswered to this hour. It did not stay the hand of the radicals, but it nevertheless pronounced the true principles upon which the American government is founded at the very moment the radicals were preparing an attempt to undermine the foundations of that government. The importance of this address, therefore, warrants its reproduction in full. It follows:

"We, having been chosen to represent the state of Texas in the congress of the United States, and not having been admitted to seats, take this mode of presenting the following facts and views relating to her history, present condition, and federal relations:

"Anterior to the revolution of thirty-five and six, Texas was a part of the state of Coahuila and Texas, in the Republic of Mexico. By the intelligence and valor of its citizens, prompted by an ardent love of freedom, it established a separate nationality, which was recognized by the United States and by the leading nations of Europe, and which it maintained against the power of Mexico and the ravages of savage tribes for ten years, exercising the powers, externally and internally of a perfect sovereignty, being a nation among nations. Resting on the Gulf of Mexico for its outlet to the commerce and intercourse of the world, spreading out over vast and fertile territory, yielding rich harvests of all the varied and valuable productions of the temperate zone, she was an empire within herself, self-sustaining and capable of the highest material and intellectual development, with all her interests and institutions combined and harmonized under a representative republic.

"By annexation, in 1845-6, she surrendered her separate nationality to become a state in the United States of America. It was done by the almost unanimous voice of her people, without compulsion from any quarter, without any necessity, impending or prospective, the alternative being then presented to her of 'annexation to the United States' or 'independence, acknowledged by Mexico and guaranteed by Great Britain and France.' In that act was presented an unselfishness, a devotion to American unity, which challenges comparison with the memorable example of Virginia and other southern colonies in the Revolution of '76.

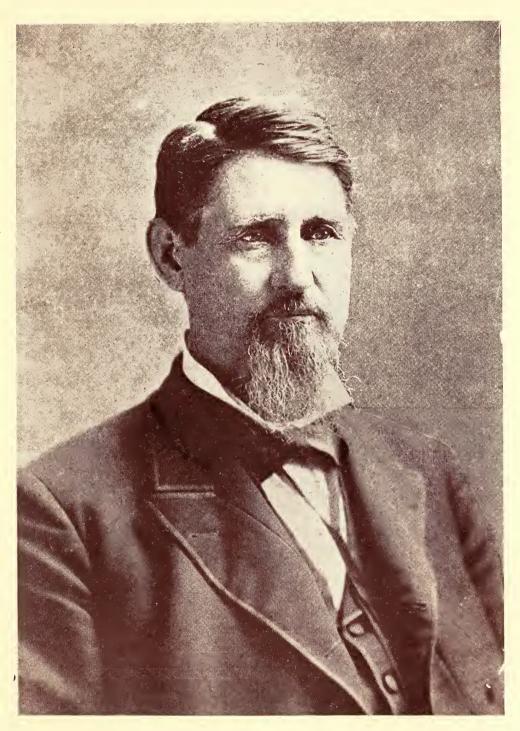
"Her entrance into the federal Union, while it caused a great influx of population, and hastened prosperous development, entailed upon her the political agitations common to her sister states. Her remoteness from the center of political power subjected her to many disadvantages, among the most prominent of which was the want of adequate protection against the continuous depredations of savage tribes of Indians on her frontier, by whom thousands of her people—men, women and children, have been murdered and taken into captivity, and vast amounts of their property stolen from time to time. These shocking barbarities are now being perpetrated, and within the last eighteen months have caused the frontier to recede from thirty to fifty miles along the whole border.

"This has often made it necessary for the state to place a military force of its own on its frontier at great expense, for which it has never yet been entirely reimbursed.

"In 1861 Texas, in convention, passed the ordinance of secession, and participated with other sister states in the foundation of the Southern Confederacy. It was regarded as certain that six or seven of the Southern states would secede. Texas had either to follow or stand still. To stand still was to be rent in twain by civil war at home. The state was sectionally divided upon the question, and nothing but a vote of the people, promptly taken, and the acquiescence of the minority, could then save her from the horrors of a civil war, and make her people a unit on one side or the other. Having thus made her decision, the mass of the people sustained the cause of the South during the whole time of the war. Whatever wrongs or outrages may have occurred, as among themselves, the unity thus produced saved the state from a hundredfold more that would

have occurred without it. Probably, too, it saved the country from the desolation of fire and sword, that swept over other states. It also left it possible, at the close, to harmonize society, and adapt it to the changed condition of public affairs, without the distraction of irreconcilable feuds engendered between neighbors and families during the struggle.

"The causes which led to this great Civil War between the two sections had taken deep root long before Texas entered the Union. One class of thinkers believed that they saw in the language and spirit of the constitution of the United States a plain indication of intention on the part of its framers that the government should be shaped to the discouragement rather than encouragement and extension of the institution of slavery, while another class believed it was intended to protect and permit the spread of that institution. One class of thinkers believed that in the adoption of the constitution of the United States the people of each state, previously distinct, became merged and amassed into one people, for certain purposes embraced within the scope and objects of that constitution, and to that extent lost a portion of their state sovereignty; whereas, another class thought that the people of each state retained their exclusive identity as a sovereign state, and could, therefore, withdraw the powers delegated to the general government by the state. For it was hardly ever questioned but that a sovereign power, the people, could 'reform, alter or abolish' their form of government; but the question was, who, for that purpose, in reference to the general government, constituted the people? The constitution, as it was thought, did not,



James W. Throckmorton

. 141

in express terms, settle either of these questions of slavery and secession. Construction, analogy, and facts of history were resorted to for their solution. greatest intellects of the country, for more than fifty years, had exhausted the arguments on both sides, and had continually diverged the more the longer they debated them. These different constructions necessarily led to radically different results in the scope and action of the government, and in the modeling of society under it. One was adapted to the progressive ideas of the North; the other to the stationary views of the South. The weaker party sought to escape the consequences of the construction of the stronger by withdrawing from the Union—not to prevent the Northern states from retaining the government over themselves with their own construction, but to insure its preservation as to the Southern states as they understood it.

"This statement of these questions that have been settled is here made for the purpose, and for the purpose only, of disrobing them of numerous irritating adjuncts and incidents of passion and prejudice; of inviting a liberal and charitable consideration for the motives of the mass of those in Texas who participated in secession, and to facilitate a more ready comprehension of the reasons why the minority, who did not want to secede, so promptly acquiesced in the decision of the majority, by which the unity of the people was secured and preserved.

"The war was brought on by these questions and their surroundings. The South was overwhelmed by superior force. Measures of conciliation, pacification, and readjustment were set on foot by the President, which were

responded to and acted upon by the people of Texas by taking the amnesty oath; by amending their constitution which was in force previous to 1861, acknowledging the supremacy of the constitution and laws of the United States, declaring the ordinance of secession to be null and void, and renouncing the claim of the right of a state to secede, declaring the slaves to have been freed, and preventing involuntary servitude, except for crime, within the limits of the state; ordaining the full protection of the equal civil rights and immunities of all persons, irrespective of color, and forbidding the legislature forever thereafter from making any provision for the payment of any debts of the state or of the Confederate states, contracted during the war. Under this amended constitution, the officers of the state have been elected, supplanting those of the provisional government, and are in the performance of their duties, the organization of the state government being as complete as it ever was before the war, in full harmony with the constitution and laws of the United States, and commanding the respect, confidence and obedience of the great body of the people. The laws of the United States are being executed within its limits without hindrance or resistance from the people or state authorities. The federal army is on our frontier for protection; the federal judiciary are performing their functions; the United States mails are being carried all over the state; the navy is protecting our commerce; the officers of customs and internal revenue are doing their duty; and the people are paying duties and taxes as in other states. What more could be said of the states of New York and Ohio, except that they have their senators and representatives in congress to speak for and represent the rights, interests, and necessities of their states, and to defend their people from unjust aspersions and misrepresentations, when necessary?

Texas was annexed or admitted into the Union by an act of congress which has never been repealed, and she is now performing the duties and resting under the obligations of a state in the Union, except that one of the departments of the government—the congress—has not admitted its senators and representatives-elect to seats within their respective bodies. They are left to learn the reasons for their non-admission from the debates and measures proposed in congress, and from public discussions upon the subject, rather than from any specific legislative action.

"The adoption by a state of the amendment to the constitution proposed at the last session was not expressly declared to be sufficient to entitle it to representation, and that it was ever so intended is now denied by leading members of great ability and influence. Texas is charged with disloyalty in not adopting it, while it is claimed that she is not in a situation to have done so, being out of the Union. Texas did not adopt it, because she believed its provisions prejudicial to her best interests and dangerous to the public good. then she had no reliable and sufficient inducement to aid in engrafting principles upon the government which she did not approve, and to make a sweeping disqualification of so many of her useful citizens as to make it almost amount to self-imposed degradation. may yield to such a fate if imposed by others, or possibly under some species of duress, and it is to be hoped that her people will do it, if they must, with that uncomplaining fortitude and unshrinking manhood that have characterized them in every emergency. But is it not, indeed, asking too much of such a people to do it themselves?

"It is alleged to the prejudice of Texas that she has elected Senators and Representatives who can not take the test oath. It is taken as an evidence that her people are seeking to reward those who were formerly prominent in opposing the government. That, it is believed, is a misconception of the subject, for with the very slight prospect of getting seats, it could not have been regarded a very valuable reward. In time of great trial, dread and gloom in the political horizon, the people are not likely to select men as mere objects of reward, but far more likely because they are for the time representatives in fact. The test oath, at most, was regarded as a war measure, and was supposed to be founded on the feeling (rather than the principle) that 'the preservation of the life of the nation is a public duty, rising above the constitution and laws of the United States.' Such a proposition is not to be reasoned upon, not being susceptible of argumentation. The feeling which prompted it has been kept alive far beyond any conceivable occasion for its exercise. however, it is assumed to be founded on any part of the written constitution, it is presumed to be on that clause which makes each house the judge of the 'qualifications' of its own members. If the term here quoted can be construed to mean anything other than those prescribed for members in the constitution, then the judgment, as to general fitness, of the majority of

each house of congress becomes the standard of qualification, which could be used to perpetuate their principles after a majority of their electors should become opposed to them, and thereby make the agent superior to the principal, which is destructive of representative republican government. It is thought, however, that it was commonly believed that if the state was allowed to be represented at all, the two houses would not retain this rule of exclusion.

"It is said that the people of Texas are disloyal and rebellious in disposition still. If that were all it would hardly in other times be held a good ground for excluding its representatives; for that would establish the precedent that a majority in congress could exclude the delegation from a state whose people, in their judgment, were manifesting a rebellious and disloyal spirit which might often be the case in times of high party rancor and strife. But, admitting that under the present pressure of disfavor we have to be judged by that rule, we beg it to be considered that Texas has no voice of her own in congress to explain or contradict statements made about the conduct and temper of her people. Further, it must occur to any reflective mind how readily the general tone of sentiment in the states of Massachusetts and Illinois, as well as in Texas, might be wholly misunderstood, by considering only the representations of bad actions and idle expressions here and there, scattered over a large country, and perhaps reported ex parte, with the exaggerations and coloring of prejudiced informers. Where do members of congress get their information? Not from the messages of the president; not from the reports of the general of the

army; not from any published reports of the officers of the judiciary or revenue in Texas; not from our patriotic and vigilant governor, or other state officers. It is but fair dealing to recollect that there may be disappointed men and violent partisans, and even good men, as well as those not falling under that class, who are continually seeing things around them in a distorted Besides, it is not to be disguised that there is a class of men in and out of Texas, small though they may be, who seem to be endeavoring to bring her people in as bad odor as possible before the public mind. grave questions, involving the future welfare and destiny of a great state, ordinary prudence would dictate a careful examination into the facts upon which national action is to be based. We respectfully solicit the most searching and extensive inquiry as to the real facts on this subject.

"As part of the representatives chosen by the state, we assert it as our sincere belief that the great body of the people of Texas are loyal to the government of the United States, and have now the most intense desire to obliterate all cause of animosity between the sections, and to enter upon a social and material development that shall redound to the power and stability of the whole Union. What motive have they otherwise? During the late struggle they looked to foreign powers for help. It came not. Disgust and bitter estrangement followed disappointed hopes. An asylum was searched for by many in Mexico, Brazil, and other countries. There they found and reported the evils in reality they were seeking to escape from in anticipation at home. They are looking to no other land as

their abode and that of their children. They are entirely satisfied with the experiment of division, and are resigned to their losses and sacrifices. They aspire to arise from the new standpoint, and to be part and parcel in the great progress of their race on this continent. Texas will stand by the flag of the United States against any nation on earth, and the descendants of the heroes of San Jacinto will contest the palm on any field where the country's foe may be met with the descendants of the heroes of Bunker Hill.

"It is said that Northern men, 'Southern loyalists' and negroes are badly treated in Texas, and that the laws are so administered as to furnish them no adequate protection. This, ordinarily, would hardly be considered good ground for the nonadmission of members of congress, being purely a matter of local state jurisdic-But, so far from this assertion being true, we are prepared, from personal experience and recent observation, to assert that there are thousands of Northern men and 'Southern loyalists' now in Texas, who are no more the objects of insult and injury than anyone else; and for any offenses committed against them they would, as it is believed, find in the courts an impartial redress of them. The judiciary, from the Supreme bench down, so far as known to us, are men of high character for intelligence, integrity, independence, and impartiality, and would scorn to shrink from the discharge of a duty from considerations of party or political opinion as readily as they would in any other state or country.

"As to the negroes, it is not to be expected that the prejudices against an inferior class should be banished

in a day or a year. Still, in the main, they are treated humanely and justly by the whites; and when such has not been the case, they have appealed, and are now constantly appealing, to our own courts for redress, and not in vain. If society is allowed to adjust itself, as it certainly is doing, and will do, a public opinion will be formed for the full protection of the negro in every respect. When reports of personal injuries, either to whites or blacks, are heard, it should be borne in mind that in the Southwest the people are more prone to personal encounters than in the North; that the country is sparsely settled over a vast extent, and that from these and other such causes the laws punishing offenses of personal violence have never been as rigidly and certainly executed as in the older states. This is not peculiar to Texas. Nor is there any reason to believe that the laws are not as well executed there as they were before the war, or that there are any more crimes of that character now being committed than were usual before the war. The people of Texas, pursuing their ordinary peaceful avocations, would doubtless be amazed at the exaggerated impressions produced in the North of their alleged enormities against the weaker portions of their own community. It is the part of cowardice, and not of bravery, to concert or encourage a systematic How can such a thing be oppression of the weak. believed of such a people—a people whose courage has added lustre to the name of Texas in every field where its flag has floated, from the time of its birth as a nation to the present?

"Isolated instances of wrong from impulse and pas-

sion will occur, and bad men will here and there continue to do wrong, no doubt. These are the exceptions, not the rule.

"During several months after the close of the war a few negroes were killed in different parts of the state, and other wrongs were committed by bad men. to those who understand the facts it is a matter of surprise that there were not ten times as many crimes committed as there were. Upon the surrender of the forces east of the Mississippi river, those west of it regarding a further effort to maintain a separate independence futile, with one accord broke up their camps and departed for their homes, traversing the country in all directions with arms in hand, and without the restraint of commanders. Several months afterwards a nearly similar scene occurred by the soldiers going to places to be paroled. In the meantime the negroes were declared to be free by military order, many of whom left their homes and wandered about over the country. There were only a few military posts established, hundreds of miles apart. For three months there was no civil officer who knew that his interference to preserve order would be tolerated by the federal authorities. During this whole period of confusion and disorganization there was a moral restraint pervading the masses which so reduced the amount of crime below what might have been expected as to present the civilization of our people in a light of elevated grandeur never before contemplated of it. The truth is now that all classes of persons have gone to work in some avocation, with a spirit and energy redoubled by their losses, to improve their fortunes, and develop the resources of the

country, directing their attention more than ever before to factories, railroads, and whatever else will tend to advance their industrial and social interests. In the race of competition in these pursuits, previous differences will be forgotten, passions and prejudices will subside, all classes will find their proper level, and general protection of each and all will be commensurate with the common interest.

"It is now proposed, as the means of protecting Southern loyalists,' Northern men, and negroes, and of reforming state governments generally in the South, to set aside the state governments now existing, and either directly or through territorial governments, to erect new state governments, based upon the suffrage of the Southern loyalists and negroes, and upon the disfranchisement and disqualification from office of all those who adhered to and aided in the rebellion, excepting those only who may be relieved from such disability by congress. This plan is understood to be proposed by some of the Southern loyalists themselves, and advocated by prominent members of congress.

"It presents an entirely new feature of our affairs, that rises above the mere exclusion of our representatives from congress. It takes for granted that the whole question of war or peace is still open. That depends upon stubborn facts in the past, and no construction can now alter them or warp the legitimate deductions from them. What are they? The government of the United States took measures to prevent the withdrawal of the Southern states, and by the proclamations of the President, and by the resolutions of both houses of congress, and by diplomatic correspond-

ence with other powers, defined and announced its object in carrying on the war to be for the preservation of the Union, 'with all the dignity, equality and rights of the states unimpaired,' and not in 'any spirit of oppression, nor for any purpose of conquest or subjugation.' Such an object, so declared, raised up hosts to fight the battles of the Union, and stayed the hand of foreign powers. To carry it out congress afterwards authorized the President to extend an amnesty and pardon.

"All the authoritative acts of the general government during the whole war, it is believed, spoke the same language; and under and by that policy the war was brought to a successful close. It was on that ground, and that only, that the right was claimed to prosecute the war at all.

"It was on that ground that the Confederate government would never be recognized, and, therefore, no treaty was made with it at the surrender.

"The manifest intention with which an act is done, in law and reason, forms a part of the act itself, and gives character to it.

"Considering the objects of the war as here shown, and as made known to the world, and acted upon throughout, the surrender of the Southern armies, and the subsequent acts of the people and states of the South in response to the proclamations and orders of the president constitute in effect a pacification upon terms as binding upon the good faith of the government of the United States, and upon the Southern people, as though they had been stipulated in a treaty.

"This proposition rests upon the basis that the president had the power to use the means which he did,

and that the people of the Southern states have, in good faith, complied with what was required or expected of them.

"The soldiers of the Southern army surrendered under the obligation to repair to their homes and obey the laws of the country. Under a law of congress, giving the president the power, under such terms and conditions as might meet his approbation, he issued his proclamation tendering to the mass of the people amnesty and pardon, upon their taking an oath in effect surrendering the issues of the war—secession and slavery Afterwards, through his proclamations, the president instituted provisional governments, for the purpose of enabling the people of the states who had taken the oath to reform their state governments and resume their federal relations as states in the Union.

"Through this instrumentality, and for such purpose, that being the consideration in part inducing them, the people of Texas responded to the call for a convention, and did in convention by delegates assembled make a political surrender of the questions at issue in the war, and their incidents, as previously stated herein, thereby binding not only those who had been bound by the amnesty oath, but everyone in the state, with their posterity Is it to be held as nothing that a people after them. who had espoused cherished principles of government, and had attested their sincerity during a struggle in camp and field for four years, should, by affirmative action, surrender them under the solemnity of oaths and constitutions, and thereby deprive themselves of the privilege, in conscience and right, to revive them should an opportunity in future present itself? They did it

in good faith, and did it not for the mere love of the thing itself, but upon an obvious consideration—to be enabled thereby to readjust their state government and to restore their federal relations in the Union.

"The president had a right, we believe, to effect a complete pacification upon such terms. Had it been regarded doubtful, we were in no situation to call it in question without great disadvantage to us. have been denounced as evidence of an incorrigibly rebellious spirit if we had refused to take the amnesty oath or assemble in convention. But the president had the power, we think, not that he is the government, any more than that congress or the federal judiciary is the government. For, while all these departments constitute the government, each one of them represents and binds the government when acting within the scope of its authority—the congress to prescribe the rules of action, the president to execute them, and the judiciary to construe and enforce them when brought within the scope of its jurisdiction.

"It is not to be denied that the war was prosecuted on the theory of the government, that a state had no right to secede, and that the ordinances of secession were utterly void and of no effect. Under no other view could force have been rightfully used to prevent secession. Under this view the president needed no new rule in view of the declared objects of the war. He simply held the Southern states in subjection to his military authority until they voluntarily embraced the amnesty and pardon which congress had authorized him to tender them, and conformed their state governments to the results of the war, and orderly acquiesced in the

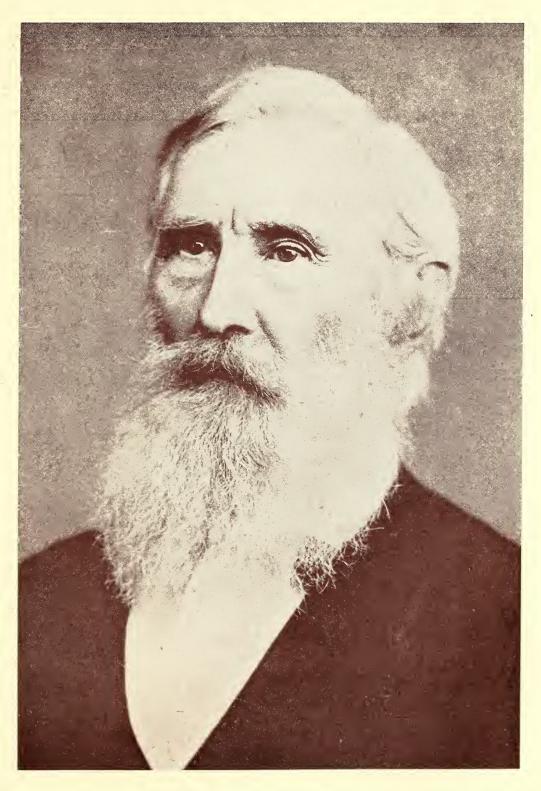
extension over the country of federal authority in every department, military, financial, postal and judicial. Had the people of the Southern states been obstinate and refused to reorganize their state governments and resume their federal relations, some legislation might have been necessary. Or had the congress been in session, it might not have prescribed some additional or different rule for consummating the pacification and restoring the federal relations of the state. fact that the president accomplished it without the necessity of any additional law to aid or guide him, makes it equally binding upon all the departments of the government, as though each had participated in it. Texas having in good faith performed everything required of her in the pacification and resumption of federal relations, awaits the result with patient solicitude. If the war was really not waged in the 'spirit of oppression and for the purpose of conquest and subjugation,' she may well hope that she has done enough to entitle her to the 'dignity, equality, and rights' of a state within the Union.

"This new project ignores or disregards all these considerations, and seeks to make the government now, nearly two years after the cessation of hostilities, and after the pacification has been long completed, and the federal relations all resumed, except representation in congress, adopt a new policy by treating us as a subjugated people, without laws, without government, without state boundaries, without public property of any kind, without social organization, with our lives and property at the will of the conqueror. It is believed and respectfully submitted that such a thing is impos-

sible, without a perversion of facts as notorious as the war itself; without a breach of faith to the brave soldiers who conquered us to preserve the Union of the states; without a breach of faith to the nations of Europe, who were assured that the object of the war was only to preserve the Union, and who, under such assurances saw us overwhelmed; and, should it be regarded as a matter of any importance, without a breach of faith to the Southern people, who surrendered their arms, and the principles at issue in the war, and complied with what was necessary to secure peace and restore their political relations, with a full knowledge of, and in reference to, the avowed and notorious object of the war on the part of the United States. Should the government of the United States change its whole policy on that subject, regarding the war as still progressing, as it must do, and demand, either in express terms or in effect, of the people of Texas, such a surrender—the most abject known to war—'a capitulation at will'— Texas may, and doubtless will have to, submit to it. But it should be known and declared to the world to be a new surrender that will cancel, in conscience, all of the obligations assumed in the one she has hitherto made.

"Before breaking asunder such ties, and plunging the whole country into such confusion, distrust and disaffection as, we fear, must ensue, let us most respectfully beg a patient and dispassionate examination of the whole subject in all its bearings and consequences. The constitution should be again unrolled, and clear and definite ideas fully grasped upon the momentous questions now pending. The proposition presupposes that Texas is dead, politically defunct! Texas was carved out of the

domain of Mexico by the swords of the patriots of 1836, who gave it shape and form and breathed into it the breath of life, and it became an organized body, an independent political society. Annexation did not destroy its corporate existence. It only modified its powers and relations. The late war did not destroy its corporate existence an hour or a day. A temporary supension of her officers, and a substitution of others by the provisional government, with the same powers and duties as those displaced, and whose acts were afterwards recognized by the convention, could not destroy its corporate existence. Under the strongest theory of the federal government as expounded by such jurists and statesmen as Story and Webster, it has always been admitted that a state on entering the Union retained a portion of its sovereignty for the regulation of its own local and domestic concerns, upon which its state government is founded. Those powers of the state of Texas, thus reserved, were not in any wise affected by loss or gain during or at the end of the war, because the controversy was not about them, but about the powers that had been delegated to the United States on annexation, and as to whether they could or should be withdrawn and vested into another confederacy for their exercise. So equally on the doctrine that a state could secede, rightfully or wrongfully, the state government still existed at the close of the war, though a different mode of readjustment of federal relations might have been necessary. Again, the use of the state government in hostility to the general government does not of itself destroy the state government any more when it fails than when it succeeds. The existence



ORAN M. ROBERTS



of a government is a matter of fact and not a legal fiction. Nothing but the conquest and subjugation evidenced in some way as being intended and declared, by the United States, and submitted to by Texas, could annihilate the state. That can hardly be assumed to have been the case. If Texas may now be demolished as a state, the precedent is set, and the principle established, that the general government may, for such acts as a majority of congress may deem sufficient to have forfeited its political existence, set aside a state government and reduce it to a territory.

"The danger of such a principle to republican freedom is above description; and words will fail to express the dismay, horror, and reckless despair of the people of Texas, if they should have the misfortune to live to see the power of the United States used in pulling down the venerated pillars and in digging up the deeply settled foundations of their state government, endeared to them by its own beauty and merits and enshrined in their hearts by a history and a name of which her sons, whether in freedom or in bondage, will ever be proud.

"As to the disfranchisement and disqualification of 'rebels' in Texas in this scheme, it is only necessary to bring to mind the universal truth, that love begets love, kindness begets kindness, generosity begets gratitude; and it can not be pretended as yet that the people of Texas have advanced high enough in the sliding scale of Christian civilization as to be above the murky atmosphere of hate. Too many of us will fail to love those who despitefully use us. It is the part of wisdom to recognize and act upon the fact that this was no mere

insurrection, or petty rebellion of a district, that was contemplated in the constitution to be punished by prosecutions as therein prescribed. That is found impracticable, because it was a great civil war of sections, embracing whole states, and the stamina, intellectual and physical, of the great body of the people in each of these states.

"Why is it that the Irish will not adopt English civilization and pride of country? Because they hate England for its traditional oppression of Ireland. Surely that lesson ought to be known, without learning it by bitter experience in America. The way is still open to keep us one people, rising out of the life and death struggle with common motives and aspirations for the prosperity and glory of the common country, and not bound together by the galling fetters of cold iron. Christian charity and liberal statesmanship point the way.

"We most earnestly desire their exercise towards our people. They are in a tone of mind now to appreciate the necessity of progress, so as to keep pace with the safe advances of the age, in intellectual, social, material and political development. Their faces are already turned in that direction, with the hope that a powerful and magnanimous government will neither thrust them back with its frowns and blows, nor drive them along with a blinding rapidity.

"Texas has now done what she has deemed necessary for the full restoration of the government. She feels that she has vast interests which ought to be represented in the congress of the United States; and she is still willing to do whatever may appear to her to

be her duty. But situated as we are—denied any voice in matters which most vitally affect our constituents to indicate what other terms (if these are deemed insufficient), upon which, in our opinion, the government might be permanently restored, would render us obnoxious to the charge of presumption or dictation, when it is said we ought to exhibit only the spirit of submission. Texas may submit to whatever measures may be adopted, but it does not follow that with this submission there will be good feeling and harmony. If this be desirable, it can not be attained whilst a sense of injustice and oppression rankles in the hearts of her people. If it be that it is required that the right of suffrage shall be conferred upon the emancipated colored population of the state, this can be more safely and effectually accomplished by kind treatment and magnanimity towards her white population than in any other way. To force it now, by congressional action, against the almost universal sentiment of the whole state, under the penalty of exclusion or the destruction of the existing state government, will cause the hearts of men to rankle with the sense of injustice, and a feeling of bitterness which will pass from generation to generation. And the negro, from being the subject of kindness, as he is now, may be loathed and hated as the cause—the unconscious victim—of a feeling he has had nothing to do with producing.

"The restoration of the government upon an enduring basis—and this is what we most heartily desire ought, as we think, to be upon such terms as the good people of each section can heartily support. Malice and revenge should not find any place in them, otherwise strife and bitterness will be perpetual, sectional hate will be crystallized and become chronic. Can any man of either section wish to see this?

"If the restoration were now complete, the test oath repealed, or stored away with the relics of the war, universal amnesty proclaimed, what joy would there be in this land! It would be like the sun bursting suddenly from the clouds after many days of gloom and darkness. Then, indeed, a day of national thanksgiving might well be proclaimed. Then would the whole people, in every part of this broad land, and those now in exile and in foreign climes, who are Americans in heart, go into the temple of the living God, and offer up heartfelt thanks for the restoration of kindly feeling and brotherly love to a united nation of freemen united not merely in name, but in fact—who have been divided and at war with each other, but are so no longer. Then would a people, united truly and in fact, pour out upon bended knees the overflowing gratitude of pure hearts, unsullied by remembrance of past bitterness, to the God of their fathers, for the blessed happiness afforded by mutual forgiveness, good feeling, and esteem."

No one, whether Northerner or Southerner, can read this document today without recognizing that the course suggested was the wise and patriotic course to pursue in the circumstances. It was an appeal to true Americanism. But for the moment a narrow and vindictive sectionalism was rampant in congress. The publication of the address of the Texas delegation made no impression on the radicals. They proceeded to carry out their unconstitutional program of vengeance. Within two

months from the publication of the address, congress had enacted legislation placing the entire South under military rule, declaring the existing governments to be provisional and temporary and dividing the Southern states into five military districts. At the same time it stripped the president of most of his powers and started a move to impeach him. And finally it provided that no seceded state should be restored to the Union until after complete reorganization of its government by an electorate composed almost entirely of enfranchised negroes and "Southern loyalists," a sufficient portion of the "rebel" population being disfranchised to insure absolute control by the radicals in every state.

On March 19, 1867, Gen. Philip Sheridan was made commander of the fifth military district, which included Texas, and Gen. Charles Griffin, who had been previously sent to Texas, was placed in command of the state. Thus it was that the arrangements were completed and the task of subjugating Texas was begun.



## CHAPTER LXII.

## RISE AND FALL OF RADICALISM.

GENERAL SHERIDAN'S first act, in taking charge of the fifth military district, which was composed of the states of Louisiana and Texas, was to issue from New Orleans a formal order declaring the state and municipal governments provisional. This order, which was dated March 19, 1867, was as follows:

- "1. The act of congress entitled 'An act to provide for the more efficient government of the rebel states,' having been officially transmitted to the undersigned in an order from the headquarters of the army, which assigns him to the command of the fifth military district created by that act, consisting of the states of Louisiana and Texas, he hereby assumes command of the same.
- "2. According to the provisions of the 6th section of the act of congress above cited, the present state and municipal governments in the states of Louisiana and Texas are hereby declared to be provisional only, and subject to be abolished, modified, controlled or suspended.
- "3. No general removals from office will be made, unless the present incumbents fail to carry out the provisions of the law, or impede the reorganization, or unless a delay in reorganizing should necessitate a change. Pending the reorganization, it is desirable and intended to create as little disturbance in the machinery

of the various branches of the provisional governments as possible, consistent with the law of congress and its successful execution, but this condition is dependent upon the disposition shown by the people, and upon the length of time required for reorganization.

"4. The states of Louisiana and Texas will retain their present military designations, viz.: 'District of Louisiana' and 'District of Texas.' The officers in command of each will continue to exercise all their powers and duties as heretofore, and will in addition carry out all the provisions of the law within their respective commands, except those which specifically require the action of the military district commander, and except in cases of removals from and appointments to office."

The chief feature of the law which it was the duty of the commander of the district of Texas to carry out was that which provided for a new registration of voters, on a basis of negro suffrage and "rebel" disfranchisement, and on April 4, 1867, General Griffin wrote Governor Throckmorton requesting his cooperation in making up a list of registrars who could take the "ironclad oath," and whose duty it would be to register the voters. The governor had previously offered to render any assistance that might be required.

"I am exceedingly anxious not to go out of the state for registrars," wrote General Griffin, "and am desirous of obtaining the names of all persons, irrespective of color, that are qualified to act in this capacity—men that can take the oath of office prescribed by act of congress of July 2, 1862, a copy of which is herewith enclosed.

"If possible, please favor me with the probable black and white vote of each county.

"I am very desirous to have the laws impartially executed, and no effort will be spared, on my part, to bring out the full number of legal voters in this state.

"If the citizens accept the situation, come forward, and yield a cheerful obedience, there can be no trouble."

The oath referred to was the "test oath" which all officials of the United States government had been required to take during the war, and which had been continued in force by the radical congress in spite of the fact that hostilities had ceased two years before. It was as follows:

"I do solemnly swear that I have never voluntarily borne arms against the United States since I have been a citizen thereof; that I have voluntarily given no aid, countenance, counsel, or encouragement to persons engaged in armed hostility thereto; that I have neither sought nor accepted, nor attempted to exercise the functions of any office whatever, under any authority in hostility to the United States; that I have not yielded a voluntary support to any pretended government, authority, power or constitution within the United States, hostile or inimical thereto. And I do further swear that, to the best of my knowledge and ability, I will support and defend the constitution of the United States against all enemies, foreign and domestic; that I will bear true faith and allegiance to the same; that I take this obligation freely, without any mental reservation or purpose of evasion; and that I will well and faithfully discharge the duties of the office on which I am about to enter. So help me God."

This oath, of course, excluded the vast majority of the people of Texas, with the exception of the negroes, from acting as registrars, and the registration of the voters who were to "reorganize" the government was thus placed entirely in the hands of the extreme radicals. Governor Throckmorton desired to carry out the directions of the military commander, however, and endeavored to meet all requirements laid down by General Griffin and General Sheridan. Accordingly he sent the following communication to county officials throughout the state:

"In order to facilitate the labors of the military authorities in providing for the registration of the legal voters under the recent acts of congress, known as the military bill and supplement thereto, it is necessary that you furnish to this department, without delay, a list of all persons in your county, 'irrespective of color,' who are competent and qualified to act as registrars, and who can take the accompanying oath.

"It is desired by Major-General Griffin, commanding, that each county, if possible, furnish its own registrars. You will therefore spare no pains to furnish the list at the earliest moment. Send at once those who come within your personal knowledge; afterwards, such others as you may ascertain, noting particularly their business qualifications so far as practicable. The best men, that is, those who are most competent, and who will act fairly and promptly, should be noted.

"You are further requested to give the number and name of each voting precinct in your county; the probable number of whites who are entitled to vote under the laws of the state; the percentage of those disqualified to vote can be ascertained here; the probable number of colored entitled to vote under the acts of congress.

"I can not too strongly urge upon you and, through you, upon the people of your county, the propriety and absolute necessity at this juncture in affairs, of contributing, to the fullest extent, every aid possible, in order that the military authorities may be enabled to execute the acts of congress with promptness and fairness."

There can be no question that Governor Throckmorton did everything in his power to cooperate with the military authorities. His attitude on the registering of negro voters is shown in a letter he wrote about this time to Ashbel Smith. "No impediment," he wrote, "should be thrown in the way of the newly-enfranchised class, but every reasonable means and encouragement should be extended to them in order that they may enjoy without hindrance their new privilege. They are in no way responsible for the present state of things, and should this extraordinary enlargement of the right of suffrage tend to the destruction of republican institutions, or to the demoralization and ruin of the blacks, they are not responsible. Hereafter they are to be, to the people of the South, an element of political power and strength, if wisely and properly treated. Therefore it is to be earnestly desired that all proper means should be used to direct these people to an intelligent and wise use of the high privilege conferred."

However, General Sheridan, who was working in close concert with the radicals in congress, was not satisfied with this kind of cooperation, for it was desired that the registration should insure the control of the convention, which was to be elected for the purpose

of drafting a new constitution, by the radicals. He issued secret orders to the registrars, making interpretations of the reconstruction laws designed to disfranchise a large number of white citizens. When congress passed, on July 19, 1867, a law vesting in the commanders of the military districts the power to remove state officials at will, General Sheridan lost no time in using this new power to get rid of Governor Throckmorton. On July 30 he issued the following order from New Orleans:

"A careful consideration of the reports of Brevet Major-General C. Griffin, U. S. Army, shows that J. W. Throckmorton, governor of Texas, is an impediment to the reconstruction of the state, under the law. He is therefore removed from that office. E. M. Pease is hereby appointed governor of Texas in place of J. W. Throckmorton, removed. He will be obeyed and respected accordingly."

Governor Pease had been defeated by Throckmorton at the previous election by a vote of more than four to one. In spite of this, he was placed in the office to which the people had refused to elect him. Since the election he had spent most of his time at Washington conferring with radical leaders in congress and was, therefore, well acquainted with their plans. But he was a Texan and had twice been governor of the state before the war, and it turned out that his selection as governor proved to be favorable to the people. For even among the radicals there were differences of opinion, and Pease was a moderate among the radicals.

More important to the people of Texas, however, was the removal of General Sheridan from the com-

mand of the fifth district and the appointment in his place of Gen. W. S. Hancock. One of the first acts of General Hancock, who was opposed to the extreme program of the radicals, was to countermand the "secret orders" of General Sheridan designed to disfranchise white men and to direct the registrars to be guided solely by the laws. This order enabled a large number of white citizens to register who otherwise would have been disfranchised. Another policy which General Hancock adopted was that of reinforcing and strengthening the local civil authorities wherever possible and abolishing the practice of bringing prisoners charged with civil offenses before military courts for trial. Finally, on November 29, 1867, he issued his famous "General Military Order No. 40," in which he declared that adequate protection for life and property by the civil authorities existed throughout Texas. This order brought a storm of criticism from the extreme radicals, who feared it presaged the withdrawal of military rule and, in spite of the fact that General Hancock convincingly replied to this criticism, the incident ultimately led to his removal.

On December 18, 1867, General Hancock issued an order for an election at which the voters should decide whether a convention to draft a new constitution should be held and to name delegates to such a convention should a majority favor it. It was required that a majority of the registered voters must vote in order to make the election legal. The voting place in each county was to be at the county seat only and the election was to be held on the four days between February 10 and 14, 1868. Shortly after issuing this order General

Hancock was superseded by Gen. J. J. Reynolds. Reconstruction having been completed in Louisiana, the fifth military district was now confined to Texas, with headquarters at Austin.

The election ordered by General Hancock was held in due course. There had been registered 56,678 white and 47,581 colored voters. Because of the provision that one-half of the votes must be polled in order to make the election legal, a movement was started among the white voters to remain away from the polls and thus defeat the convention. It was argued that a continuance of military rule was better than a government supported by negro suffrage. Many conservative leaders opposed this move and urged the voters to go to the polls and vote against the convention and for delegates opposed to negro suffrage. However, out of a total of 56,678 white voters, 41,234 remained away from the polls. The result of the election was as follows: For the convention, 44,689 (7,757 whites and 36,932 blacks); against the convention, 11,440 (10,-622 whites and 818 blacks). As a little more than one-half of the vote of the state was polled, the election was legal and the convention authorized. In the very nature of things the delegates elected were overwhelmingly of the radical camp.

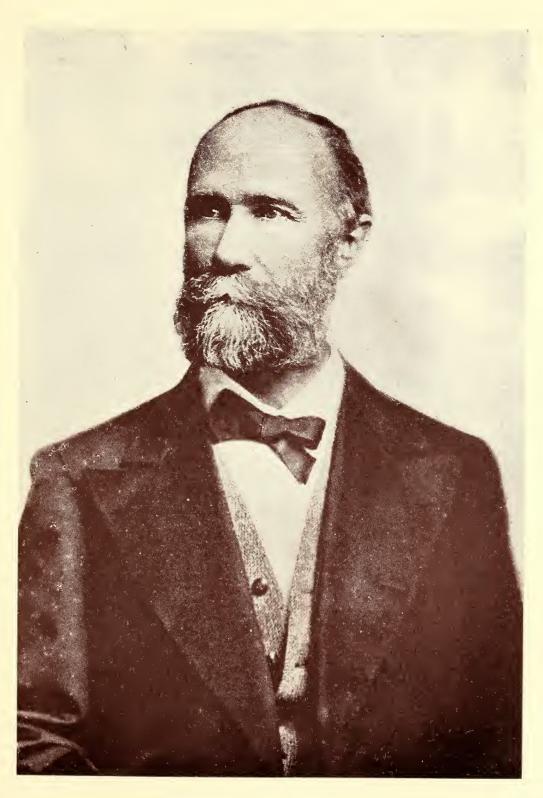
However, a division had grown up among the radicals in the meantime. In administering the laws of the state Governor Pease had taken the position that all laws passed since the date of secession which were not in conflict with the constitution of the United States or in support of the war were still valid. This had been the policy of A. J. Hamilton as provisional

governor and, of course, of Governor Throckmorton. The attorney general under Pease, however, took a different view and held that secession itself had been illegal ab initio, and in consequence all laws passed during the administrations of Governors Clark, Lubbock and Murrah were invalid. He appealed to the military authorities to sustain his view, but without success. Whereupon he resigned from the post of attorney general and joined a faction of ultra-radicals, headed by M. C. Hamilton, which came to be known as the "ab initios." When the convention assembled at Austin on June 1, 1868, it was found that the radical delegates were divided into two factions, the "ab initios" and the moderates. Among the leaders of the former, besides M. C. Hamilton, was Edmund J. Davis. The recognized leader of the moderates was former Governor A. J. Hamilton. The delegates, it should be said, were nearly all bona fide citizens of the state, for reconstruction in Texas was singularly free from the "carpet-bag" type of recent arrivals from the North. There was less than a dozen such delegates in the convention of 1868, and only nine negroes. The convention opened in a contest between the ultra-radicals and the moderates over the election of a president. resulted in victory for the former, for E. J. Davis was named over Judge C. Caldwell by a vote of forty-five to thirty-three.

Governor Pease sent a message to the convention outlining its duties, taking the moderate view on the "ab initio" issue. "You will declare," he said, "that the pretended act of secession, and all laws that have been enacted in aid of the late rebellion, or repugnant to the constitution and laws of the United States, are and were null and void from their inception; and . . . you will at once repeal all laws that make any discrimination against persons on account of their color, race or previous condition."

In keeping with the spirit of "congressional reconstruction," Governor Pease informed the delegates that it would be expected "that you will temporarily disfranchise a number of those who participated in the rebellion, sufficient to place the political power of the state in the hands of those who are loyal to the United States government." In addition to this, of course, the convention was expected to provide for universal negro suffrage.

The convention set a record for wasting time and money. It was in session, off and on, from June 1, 1868, until the early part of February, 1869, and even then adjourned without a quorum present, and it spent \$200,000 or more, the military commander of the district being compelled to refuse to approve any further appropriations for its use. It was plain that the chief purpose the ultra-radicals had at heart was that of controlling Texas for the Republican party after the state should be restored to its place in the Union. attitude on all questions coming before the convention was determined by this consideration and, while they were successful in carrying through many of their projects, they were defeated by the moderates on two important questions. These were the "ab initio" question and the question of disfranchising all ex-Confederate soldiers. Two of the notable victories of the radicals came to naught in the end, for they both de-



EDMUND J. DAVIS



RICHARD COKE

pended upon the action of congress. One of these was the adoption of a report declaring lawlessness to exist throughout Texas and calling upon congress to authorize the convention to organize a militia force of "loyal" men in each county to be under the direction of the military commander. It was represented that only in this way and by filling all local offices with Union men could the lives and property of "loyal men of both races" be made secure. The moderates vigorously opposed this move, insisting that the reports of lawlessness were greatly exaggerated. Inasmuch as the proposed militia would necessarily be composed largely of negroes it was pointed out that its employment by a political party would have the effect of producing a conflict of the races. The radicals won the day on this question and a committee was sent to Washington to lay the report before congress and to urge a compliance with the recommendations. The other victory of the radicals which ended in nothing was the adoption of a resolution providing for the naming of six commissioners to lay before congress a request for the division of Texas into two or more states. The moderates, although defeated on this question in the convention, also sent a delegation to congress in opposition to such division.

The constitution which the convention framed, however, was not as well calculated to keep the people of Texas in subjection as the ultra-radicals wished. The moderates succeeded in preventing the adoption of a clause declaring every ordinance, act or resolution enacted in Texas during the war as null and void from its inception. Instead, such laws as were not in violation of the constitution of the United States or in aid of the rebellion were excepted.

It was on the question of suffrage, however, that the ultra-radicals met their most vital defeat. negro suffrage was provided for, of course, for the convention was practically a unit on that question, but when a committee brought in a report which would have disfranchised ex-Confederate soldiers by the wholesale, A. J. Hamilton took the floor and offered a substitute which confined the disfranchisement to such persons as "are now or may hereafter be disqualified by the constitution of the United States, until such disqualification shall be removed by the congress of the United States." This substitute would permit all to vote who had not held public office before the war. Those who had held public office and, therefore, had taken an oath to support the constitution of the United States previous to taking up arms against the Union, were disqualified under the terms of the fourteenth amendment. Edmund J. Davis, the president of the convention, M. C. Hamilton and other ultra-radicals opposed this substitute to the limit, but the fight put up by A. J. Hamilton was so effective that the substitute finally was adopted by a vote of thirty-seven to twenty-six. The adoption of this suffrage provision, in place of that proposed by the ultra-radicals, was a victory for the white people of the state and ultimately made possible the redemption of the state from negro domination. A. J. Hamilton showed a patriotic and self-sacrificing spirit in making the fight for this measure, for he was

placing the ballot in the hands of those who opposed him politically. "If we reflect," said the Houston Telegraph, in commenting on his course, "that he labored to give the ballot to those who had bitterly opposed him, that he placed himself in opposition to the extreme members of his own party, . . . that he labored for a people who he believed had wronged him, . . . that he clothed us with the ballot at the imminent risk of having it used against himself, and that all passion and even promise pointed out to him the opposite course as the one most for his interest, then indeed does he stand before us as a patriot, firm, tried and true."

The ultra-radicals, finding themselves thus defeated in their designs, in spite of all the careful preparation, drew up a protest against the adoption of the constitution framed by the convention and filed it with E. J. Davis, the presiding officer. This protest read as follows:

"We, the undersigned, delegates to the constitutional convention of the state of Texas, do hereby express disapproval of the proposed constitution adopted by a majority of this convention.

"We object to it, because it is based upon the unwarranted assumption that the constitution of the United States, with the treaties and laws made in pursuance hereof, and the accepted constitution of the state of Texas (of 1845), have not been continually the supreme law of the land. Believing, as we do, that all pretended laws and judicial decisions made within the national limits, and not authorized by and subordinate to the government of the United States, were from the begin-

ning and must remain null and void, and the undersigned will never compromise the principle for any supposed policy.

"We do most earnestly and solemnly protest against the provision in the proposed constitution which extends the right of suffrage to all those who voluntarily became the public enemy of the United States, feeling assurd that it is the aim of congress to enable the loyal people of the state of Texas, without regard to any distinction of race or color, to reorganize and maintain a government in place of that overthrown by the rebellion, and we can not forbear to express the conviction that the adoption by the majority of the convention of the provision in regard to suffrage was obtained by virtue of premeditated deception, and by methods of intimidation, which deserve the greatest censure. The majority of the convention have deliberately removed from the constitution every safeguard for the protection of the loyal voter, white and black. They have stricken from that instrument the whole system of registry; they have repudiated the oath of loyalty contained in the reconstruction laws; they have spurned the test of equal civil and political rights, and we do most solemnly call upon the registered voters of Texas to vindicate the national honor, and the cause of right and justice, by their votes."

This protest was signed by twenty-two members of the convention and below their names E. J. Davis, the president, made the following indorsement: "I join in the above protest, except only that part which charges deception and intimidation on the part of the members." A copy of this protest was sent to congress, as a preliminary step toward asking that body to reject it should it be adopted by the people.

The convention broke up without completing its work. The proposed constitution was not put in final shape and signed by the officers and delegates of the body that framed it, and for a while it looked as if the costly labors of the convention would end in nothing. However, without a quorum present, President Davis read an order from the military commander directing that the records of the convention be turned over to the assistant adjutant general of the district. Accordingly the secretary hastily put the constitution in shape, signed it, and with all other records of the convention, turned it over to the military authorities.

During the period the convention was in session a presidential campaign and election had been held in the United States, but because the "reorganization" of the government in Texas had not been completed, the state was not permitted to participate in the election. Gen. U. S. Grant was elected president on the Republican ticket, though previous to his nomination by the convention he had never been a Republican. General Grant's views on disfranchising ex-Confederate soldiers were different from those of the members of his party in congress, and shortly after his inauguration he sent a message to congress proposing that in the states of Virginia and Mississippi the clauses of the proposed state constitution covering this subject be submitted to the people of those states separately. Meantime, congress had given no encouragement to the Texas ultra-radicals in their opposition to the constitution which the convention had drawn, but before the date fixed for voting on it a bill was passed authorizing the president to regulate the date of the election at his discretion. This, it turned out, was a victory for the ultra-radicals, for as a last resort they desired a postponement of the election.

Following the adjournment of the state convention the two factions which had developed during its sessions nominated their respective leaders, A. J. Hamilton and Edmund J. Davis, for governor. At first it appeared that the Davis faction would have little chance of election, but the appeal to Washington was not altogether in vain. On July 7, 1869, the Davis faction was recognized by the national Republican executive committee as the regular party organization in Texas, and a week later President Grant issued a proclamation postponing the date of the election until November 30. Then the administration at Washington began a systematic removal of Hamilton supporters from federal office in Texas, replacing them with Davis men. General Reynolds, military commander of Texas, who had aspirations to be a United States senator from Texas, and who had been rebuffed in this connection by the Hamilton faction, put into operation a like policy with respect to state offices. In this situation Governor Pease, who was a supporter of Hamilton, resigned, thus turning the government over to the military authorities. During the period of the campaign and the election, therefore, General Reynolds was absolute dictator of Texas. The day following Governor Pease's resignation, General Reynolds issued an order directing the revision of the registration lists and of the registrars. The new registrars appointed under this order were

principally Davis supporters and, when registration began, known Hamilton men were rejected on the slightest excuse. There were complaints and threats of violence and in many instances the registrars performed their duties under guard of detachments of soldiers supplied by General Reynolds. It was plain to everybody that preparations were being made to carry the election by fair means or foul.

The Democrats held aloof from the campaign. Realizing that even if a Democratic ticket could be elected the chief result of such success would be to delay the readmission of Texas into the Union, they refrained from nominating candidates. But the sympathies of the people, quite naturally, were with Hamilton. As the election approached the conviction became general that if Hamilton received a majority of the votes he would be counted out, and in view of this situation a large number of qualified voters remained away from the polls. In many places the election was held under conditions resembling military siege. two counties, where Hamilton supporters were plainly in the ascendancy, the military prevented opening of the polls on the ground that preservation of public peace demanded it. In many places there were complaints of irregularities. But the election passed without any serious clash and the returns were sent to Austin, where they were under the direct control of General Reynolds. It was not until January 8, 1870, more than a month after election day, that he announced the result. And after all the preparation, with control of the registration of voters, the polling of the vote, the counting of the ballots and the declaration of the

result absolutely in the hands of the Davis faction, Davis was declared elected by a majority of only eight hundred and nine votes, with a total of nearly seventy-nine thousand votes cast. The precise result announced was: Edmund J. Davis, 39,901; A. J. Hamilton, 39,092. The constitution, which the Davis faction inconsistently supported from the moment plans were laid to control the election, was declared adopted by a vote of 74,466 to 4,928.

On the same day that he announced the result of the election, General Reynolds appointed Davis provisional governor. The candidates for other state offices on the ticket with him were also named provisional officers. Governor Reynolds then published a list of the members of the legislature elected and on January 11 he issued a proclamation convening that body in "provisional" session. Thus it was that radical rule was inaugurated in Texas. On February 14 the legislature ratified the fourteenth and fifteenth amendments to the constitution and a week later M. C. Hamilton and J. W. Flanagan were elected United States senators. The legislature then adjourned to reconvene in regular session whenever the Texas delegation should be seated in congress. An act of congress, readmitting Texas to the Union, was approved by President Grant on March 30, and the senators and members of congress from Texas were seated at once. On April 16, 1870, General Reynolds issued a proclamation transferring all civil authority to the "officers elected by the people." Reconstruction was legally complete in Texas at last. But for the people of the state it meant the beginning of a despotism. A radical minority, in no sense representing the will of a majority of the citizens, was in absolute control of the government, and while such a condition lasted a proud people like the Texans could not rest content.

The legislature assembled in special session on April 26 and two days later Davis was inaugurated governor. In his inaugural address he made it clear that a new order of things had been established. He said that new lessons in government had been taught by the war, that the powers formerly exercised by the state governments had proved inimical to freedom of thought and speech and in consequence had been swept away. "While local self-government still remains," he said, "it is within the just bounds that there is a supervisory power over all." This, he said, would temper state action. The new system, he thought, would prove the better government. Such was the conception which guided the policies of the new governor.

Edmund J. Davis was a Southern man, a native of Florida, and had been a citizen of Texas since 1848. He was a man of integrity and of courteous disposition. But he had peculiar ideas of government and was ruthless in enforcing them. It has been said of him that he was "strong in his prejudices and almost remorseless in carrying out his purposes," and that he was "blind alike to the good qualities of his enemies and to the bad qualities of his friends." He had opposed secession and when the war broke out had organized a regiment of Unionists at Matamoros and conducted it into the Federal lines in Louisiana. He had served in the Union army in Louisiana throughout the war, and had been promoted to the rank of briga-

dier general. Returning to Texas immediately after the close of the conflict, he had allied himself with the most radical faction of the Republicans and was recognized as a leader from the first. He was a member of both reconstruction conventions. In the very nature of things such a man was bound to be extremely unpopular in Texas during the period following the war and his whole conduct since his return to the state had served to increase his unpopularity. Even if his administration had been a mild one and conciliatory in spirit the people could not have been expected to accept it cheerfully. But it was far from being mild. Indeed, in a few months, with the assistance of the legislature, Governor Davis assumed powers approaching dictatorship. It was inevitable that the people should repudiate him at the first opportunity.

The legislature which was installed with Governor Davis was overwhelmingly of his own faction and completely subservient to his will. It did his bidding almost slavishly, and the result was that during its first session, which lasted from April 26 until August 15, it endowed him with practically absolute powers. The governor lost no time in making it abundantly clear that the withdrawal of United States troops did not mean the restoration of orderly civil government, for without delay he took steps to vest in himself the powers that had been exercised by the military authorities. tary laws were passed which put at his disposal a force of armed men to take the place of the Federal troops and which had the effect of continuing military rule. The military forces of the state were divided into two classes—a state guard, composed of volunteer companies, and a military reserve, which included all persons subject to military duty, not enrolled in the state guard. The law creating these forces contained the following provision:

"He (the governor) shall also have power to declare martial law in any county or counties, and suspend the laws therein, whenever in his opinion the enforcement of the law of this state is obstructed; and he shall call out such part of the state guard or reserve military as he may deem necessary. The expenses of maintaining such a force to be assessed upon the people of the county or counties where the laws are suspended, at the discretion of the governor, whose duty it shall be to provide for the trial and punishment of offenders by court-martial and military commissions."

In ordinary English this meant that the governor, at will, could suspend all civil government in any part of the state, including the right of habeas corpus, place troops in charge, under his direct command, try and punish all offenders against any regulation he or his subordinate might formulate, and then assess the total cost on the people of the section thus "regulated."

In addition to the state guard and the military reserve, a state police force was created. This consisted of two hundred and ninety-four men—forty-eight officers and two hundred and forty-six privates—all appointed by the governor, and under direct command of the adjutant general. It was nothing less than a personal army of the governor's, entirely subject to his will and pleasure.

The legislature also passed an act "to provide for the mode and manner of conducting elections, making re-

turns, and for the protection and purity of the ballot box." This act granted extraordinary and unlimited powers to the governor during elections, besides providing for methods of registration and voting designed to keep the control of the state in the hands of the radicals. It required that all elections should be held only at the county seat of each county, under restrictions which amounted to intimidation. A few paragraphs from a proclamation of Governor Davis, issued under this law, will suffice to illustrate its far-reaching character. They follow:

"All persons coming to vote shall deposit their ballots with the least possible delay, and, after this is done, they are forbidden under any pretext to remain about the polls or at the county seat (unless it is their residence) during the time of the election; but shall return to their homes and usual employments; and peace officers, state guards, or militia on duty at the polls shall see that this regulation is complied with.

"All persons are forbidden to shout, jeer at, or in any way insult or annoy voters or candidates for office during the registration and election, and peace officers, state guards and militia on duty in any county where such disturbances may be attempted are directed at once to arrest such persons and to hold them to be dealt with according to section 11 of the act . . . approved August 15, 1870.

"The governor, as provided by said act, hereby assumes command, for and during the election, of all peace officers in the state, including sheriffs and their deputies, and city and town police, or marshals and their deputies, and those officers are hereby directed to

place themselves under direction of the officer, designated by the governor in circular orders from these headquarters, and to aid him in enforcing these regulations, and the laws of this state and the United States governing elections."

It will be noted that these regulations prohibited all persons not residing at the county seat from visiting that place during the election, except to vote "with the least possible delay," after which they were required to depart to their homes and not to return until after the election was completed. The election lasted four days, so the governor's proclamation amounted to a prohibition of business being done by any citizen at the county seat for four days, for he was prohibited from remaining at that place "under any pretext." In addition to this all local government was destroyed during the four days of the election, the governor becoming absolute dictator of the state. There was no warrant even in the constitution of 1869 for the enactment by the legislature of a law bestowing such powers on the governor, and this measure was clearly in violation of the provision of the federal constitution guaranteeing republican government to the states.

The most extraordinary feature of this election law, however, was a provision that the first general election under it should not be held until the first Tuesday after the third Monday in November, 1872. The legislature which enacted this law was elected in November, 1869, to serve two years, so that the effect of the law was to lengthen the term of the existing legislature one year, without the slightest warrant under the constitution. This feature of the law cre-

ated such a storm of opposition, even among moderate Republicans, that a movement was started at the next session to repeal it. But the radicals successfully resisted this move and ousted the speaker of the house from his seat because he favored it.

An enabling act also was passed by the legislature giving extraordinary powers to the governor in connection with the dismissal from office of officials elected by the people, under the constitution, and filling by appointment all vacancies created in any way.

At the governor's recommendation a school system was provided for, which was patterned after the systems of some of the older states but entirely unsuited to Texas, and a dual system of taxation for the erection of schoolhouses was placed on the statute books, either by accident or design, thus providing that the people should pay taxes twice for the same purpose.

Two railroad acts passed by this legislature gave rise to much opposition and subsequently developed into a public scandal. One of these granted ten thousand dollars to the International Railway Company for each mile of railway it constructed in the state, and the other granted the Texas & Pacific Railroad Company state aid to the amount of six million dollars to construct its line from Longview to Dallas and continue it westward through the state. The constitution of 1869 prohibited the practice of granting lands to encourage railroad building, so the legislature resorted to the policy of issuing state bonds for this purpose. When the first payment of bonds to the International Railway Company became due, however, the comptroller refused to sign them, on the ground that the acts were

unconstitutional, and the supreme court sustained him. After three or four years of controversy this muddle was settled by granting the roads twenty sections of land for each mile constructed, the constitution of 1869 having in the meantime been superseded. In justice to Governor Davis, it should be said that he opposed the granting of subsidies to railroads, and that these measures were not in accordance with his recommendations.

But Governor Davis was personally responsible for the acts making him military dictator of the state, and his supporters in the legislature rode roughshod over all opposition in passing them. In the senate, where a group of moderate Republicans threatened to block their enactment, violence was resorted to and a number of senators were arrested and kept in jail while the bills were being passed. The governor insisted that these extraordinary measures were necessary to restore order in the state, declaring that "a slow civil war has been going on in the state ever since the surrender of the Confederate armies." This was vehemently denied, even by moderate Republicans, but the governor was not disturbed by such opposition and it is only fair to say that he believed he was performing his duty and taking the best means of establishing order.

There was lawlessness in the state, to be sure, for the conditions that followed the war were calculated to make some lawlessness inevitable. But it was not as general as the governor contended and doubtless believed. The truth is that some of the violent features of the reconstruction period in other states were notably absent in Texas. The Ku Klux Klan had been organized throughout most of the rest of the South, as an

agency to save the white population from absolute negro domination. But in Texas the danger of negro domination, while real, was never so great as in some of the states where negroes formed an important percentage and even a majority of the legislature. The Ku Klux Klan movement, therefore, was purely a voluntary and local affair in Texas. It had no connection with an interstate body and made its appearance only where conditions required that some check should be placed upon the pretensions of a certain class of negroes and in retaliation of the activities of the radicals in organizing the blacks into "loyal leagues," "union leagues" and even into armed companies. And even then the activities of the citizens who banded themselves together in this fashion were seldom marked by violence, but consisted chiefly of utilizing the superstitious nature of the negroes to keep them within bounds.

There were crimes of violence in Texas during the period immediately preceding Davis's administration, as there are crimes of violence today. They were more numerous, to be sure, because the conditions were such as to tend to increase such crimes. Negroes were the victims of such crimes more frequently than whites because the strong prejudices which the activities of the radicals themselves had done more to arouse than anybody else made clashes between white men and negroes inevitable. But the great bulk of the people of Texas were peaceful and law-abiding and went about their daily tasks in an orderly manner. The attitude of the moderate Republicans, and of such leaders as A. J. Hamilton and E. M. Pease, is sufficient evidence that there existed no conditions in Texas warranting the



RICHARD B. HUBBARD



John Ireland

establishment of such a despotic military dictatorship as Governor Davis insisted upon establishing.

But having provided such machinery it was inevitable that the governor should find occasion to use it. Within fifteen months after the enactment of the military laws he had placed four counties under martial law because of local disturbances, such as the county officials would have little difficulty in handling today, and had assessed large sums against those counties to defray the expenses. In one instance a military commission tried a white man on the charge of having killed a negro and, without giving him the benefit of trial by jury, sentenced him to five years in the penitentiary. Governor Davis, after reviewing the testimony in the latter case, released the prisoner. state police were a source of annoyance wherever they were stationed, especially the negro members of that body, and on more than one occasion they were responsible for starting trouble instead of allaying it. police and the other military forces of the state were under the direct command of James H. Davidson, the adjutant general, and his manner of handling them and the arrogance of some of his subordinates served to increase their unpopularity. The assessing of expenses against counties for the maintenance of martial law not only was resented, but it was widely believed that the expenses were padded. As a climax to the grievances of the people in this connection, Davidson, the adjutant general, appropriated thirty thousand dollars of public funds to his own use and absconded.

There was widespread criticism of all this, but the machine which had been built up by Davis's lieutenants

was well organized. Under the terms of a public printing law passed by the legislature, thirty-five newspapers, one in each judicial district, became official journals and were subsidized heavily by means of compulsory public advertising. These journals, of course, were all favorable to the administration and defended it at every turn. The legislature also created a system of patronage by multiplying the offices subject, either directly or indirectly, to the appointive power of the governor. It has been estimated that nearly ten thousand officeholders of various grades were tied to the administration in this way. In spite of this well-organized machine, however, before the Davis administration was six months old there were signs of a coming revolt.

Added to the other grievances was an unprecedented increase in taxes and of the public debt. It was estimated that to meet the appropriations made by the legislature of 1870 it would require revenue of one and a half million dollars annually, not including a bond issue of seven hundred and fifty thousand dollars authorized for frontier defense. Though the taxes were increased to the limit the legislature found it impossible to provide revenue sufficient to meet expenses. deficit, therefore, was certain in spite of high taxes and this exasperated the taxpayers of the state. How great the deficit became can be judged from the fact that in the spring of 1871 a bond issue of four hundred thousand dollars was authorized to wipe out existing deficiencies, and before the end of the year another issue, this time for two million dollars, was found necessary to meet additional deficiencies.

The first organized movement against the Davis administration made its appearance even before the legislature of 1870 adjourned. Under the leadership of A. J. Hamilton, E. M. Pease and J. W. Throckmorton, all of whom had filled the office of governor since the war, a conference was held at Austin in July, 1870, and it drafted a "Petition of the People of Texas to Congress to Guarantee to the People a Republican Form of Government." This petition recited a long list of usurpations and violations of the constitution which already had been perpetrated by the legislature, and called upon congress to enforce that provision of the federal constitution which guaranteed to the states a republican form of government. It was circulated among leaders of all political complexions, except the extreme radicals, and many outstanding Republicans, as well as Democrats, signed it. This move was productive of no immediate results, however.

On January 23, 1871, a Democratic party convention was held at Austin for the purpose of taking preliminary steps toward freeing the state of radical rule. It adopted a platform declaring that "the radical state government of Texas has forfeited all claims to the respect of mankind by its unconstitutional and oppressive enactments." This platform enumerated all of the measures of the Davis administration "to the end that the citizens of this state, and of the United States, may fully comprehend the grievances we are suffering from the wrongs and usurpations of said radical government." "We invite all good men, whatever may have been their past political preferences," it concluded, "to unite with the Democratic party in removing from place and

power those who now control the state government, in order to release the people from oppressive, ruinous and unequal taxation, to insure an honest administration of the laws, and an honest and economical expenditure of the public moneys, and to throw the ægis of justice and protection over the person and property of every individual whatsoever in the state of Texas."

Plans were inaugurated at this convention to establish a newspaper at Austin, thus giving the party a central organ, and as a result the Democratic Statesman was launched in July. Incidentally, the Statesman has been continuously published at Austin ever since. It is the second oldest newspaper in the state, the Galveston News being the oldest. The Statesman came into being just in time to participate in the first battle of the contest to redeem the state.

One circumstance which served to illustrate glaringly the reckless disregard for the constitution and the rights of the people which marked the administration's policies, and thus increased the discontent, was the fact that through juggling the new election law Texas was deprived of representation at the first session of the forty-second congress. The terms of the Texas representatives in the forty-first congress expired on March 3, 1871, and as no election had been held to name their successors Texas was without representation. was no excuse for this destruction of the rights of the people, except that the radicals wanted time to perfect plans to carry the election. The criticism of the administration on this score became general and in consequence the whole system of usurpation, of which it was part, was brought prominently before the people.

However, on May 2, 1871, a special election for congressmen was ordered to be held on the four days from October 3 to 6 following. Accordingly, the Democrats nominated a full congressional ticket and during the summer and fall waged a vigorous campaign in which all of the evils of radical rule were pictured at political gatherings throughout the state. Then on the very eve of the election, which the Davis administration was making every preparation to carry in the same way that the previous state election had been carried under military rule, the leaders who had initiated the petition to congress the year before called a taxpayers' convention to be held at Austin on September 22, 1871. E. M. Pease was the president of this convention and A. J. Hamilton was made chairman of a committee of twenty-one "to consider and report business for the conven-On this committee were men of both the Republican and Democratic parties, including J. W. Throckmorton, John Ireland and M. C. Hamilton. The presence of M. C. Hamilton in the convention was especially significant, for he had been one of the original leaders of the extreme radicals and at the time of the convention was one of the United States senators from Texas, to which office he had been elected by the radical legislature. The committee brought in a report indicting the Davis administration in the most scathing terms and enumerating the unconstitutional measures of the legislature.

"The violations of constitutions and disregard of law," declared the report, "have been very frequent and are very numerous; but frequent as they have been and numerous as they are, we have been unable to find a

single one, of either class, based on an honest desire to accomplish good to the people of the state, or to secure prosperity to the country. On the contrary, their apparent cause seems uniformly to spring from one grand purpose, viz.: To concentrate power in the hands of one man, and to emasculate the strength of the citizens of Texas as a free people.

"However hopeless such a design might have appeared, and however little feared by the reasoning and intelligent mind eighteen months ago, yet at this day, we must confess, the scheme has far progressed toward consummation, and the people stand stripped of many of the inalienable rights of freemen, while he who is now clothed with these lost rights of the people gloats on their humiliation and congratulates himself on the possession of kingly power."

Then followed a long list, embraced under twentyone separate heads, of violations of the constitution and usurpations of the people's rights. "Without enlarging," the report concluded, "we may say that the power, which in republican government is supposed to rest in the people, is fast departing from the people of Texas and concentrating itself in the hands of one man—the That the people of this state no longer executive. govern themselves, but are governed by E. J. Davis as completely as if there were no constitutions, state or While in form we have a republican government, in substance and in fact we have a despotism, which constantly becomes more and more absolute, and will certainly end in unqualified enslavement of the people unless some check is interposed."

The convention which adopted this scathing indictment adjourned on September 25, only a week before the congressional election. The people were aroused and, in spite of the fact that the election was held under conditions akin to military siege, in which citizens were compelled to pass between a double file of armed men to deposit their ballots, all of the Democratic candidates for congress were elected. The first skirmish had ended in victory for the people.

The election law provided that the legislature should be elected in November, 1872, and in due course the administration made preparations for this contest also. But the state constitution, under which radical government had been installed, provided clearly that the governor and other state officers should be chosen on the same days that the members of the legislature were voted on. If the members of the new legislature should be chosen for two years, as the law provided, an election for state officers would have to be held also, for Davis claimed that his term expired in April, 1874, which would be seven months prior to the next legislative election, in November, 1874. Davis was unwilling to face an election at the moment, when the people were so apparently unfriendly to his administration, so he cut the knot by issuing a proclamation decreeing that the members of the legislature chosen at the election in November, 1872, should hold office only one year, or from December 2, 1872, to December 2, 1873. In doing this he was forced to acknowledge that the legislature should have been elected in 1871, for the constitution provided that the term of legislators should be for two years. Through the operation of the radical

election law, therefore, Texas presented to the world the grotesque spectacle of electing members of the legislature in November, 1872, whose term of office began in December, 1871!

It was presidential year, and the Democrats, in the hope of defeating Grant for reelection, had nominated Horace Greeley, a moderate Republican. Throughout the North a reaction against the vindictive reconstruction program of the radicals in congress was in progress and it was believed that the Republicans could be overthrown in national affairs. The Democrats of Texas, therefore, were anxious to do their part, though there were some who resented the nomination of a Republican It was the first presidential election that candidate. Texas had had the opportunity to vote in since the war, and in consequence there was keen interest felt in it. On the other hand, Davis and his lieutenants were quite as anxious to carry Texas for Grant, a consideration which was made second only to the importance of maintaining a radical majority in the legislature. Another circumstance which gave added interest to the election was that a permanent capital for the state was The city of Austin, of course, was a to be chosen. candidate for this honor, but there were other ambitious The campaign, therefore, was a cities in the contest. warm one, and the radical preparations for insuring a "fair" election with the assistance of the military, were elaborate.

The election was held and it resulted in complete defeat for the radicals. Greeley carried Texas, receiving 66,455 votes to Grant's 47,226, though Grant, of course, was reelected. And both houses of the legisla-

ture were captured by the Democrats! The death-knell of radical rule had been sounded! Incidentally, the city of Austin received 63,455 out of the 111,362 votes cast, thus becoming the permanent capital of the state.

The new legislature, with Democratic majorities in both houses, met on January 14, 1873. Governor Davis sent it a message which was chiefly a defense of the unconstitutional laws the previous legislature had enacted, but the Democratic members were perfectly aware that the people had elected them to repeal those They went to work without delay and before the legislature adjourned they had destroyed the whole system created by the radicals. The state police force was abolished. The control of the state guard was taken out of the hands of the governor and his extraordinary powers invalidated. The objectionable features of the school laws, the public printing law and the laws regulating the assessment and collection of taxes were removed. The enabling act was repealed and the election and registration laws were remodeled. The practice of holding elections only at the county seats was done away with and precinct voting provided for. It was provided also that the election should be held on one day only instead of four. The state was reapportioned into senatorial and representative districts and, after a joint resolution had been passed declaring that the legislature should have been elected in 1871, it was provided that the next general election, for all state officers and the members of the legislature, should be held on the first Tuesday in December, 1873. Governor Davis acquiesced in these reforms and signed the bills providing for them, for the public clamor was so great that he dared

not altogether oppose the demand for a change. But he vetoed other desirable measures and, as the Democrats had only a small majority in the senate, it was not possible to pass them over his veto. Davis and his lieutenants were still firmly entrenched in all the departments of government except the legislature and after the session was over the Democrats of the legislature went back to their constituents prepared to begin the campaign for the election in December, which they were determined should forever end radical rule in Texas.

A call was issued in July for a Democratic convention to meet at Austin on September 3. It was urged that every county should send a full delegation, one vote being allowed for each one hundred votes cast by a county in the elections of 1871 and 1872. enthusiasm was created, for there was a general belief that the convention would mark the beginning of the final struggle with the radicals. In consequence there was a large attendance, the hall of representatives of the state capitol, which contained seven hundred chairs, being too small to accommodate all the delegates. Richard B. Hubbard presided over the convention's deliberations and John H. Reagan was chairman of the committee on platform and resolutions. The platform which was adopted congratulated the people on the achievements of the previous legislature, enumerating the acts by which the Davis military despotism had been shorn of much of its power.

"The Democratic party, when it comes into the possession of the government of the state," it declared, "will administer it in the interest and for the benefit

of the whole people, and not a party; and, however much we may have been provoked to hostile and retaliatory legislation by the outrages committed upon us by the radical legislature and state government, it will be a part of our mission to rise superior to our just resentments, and administer the government in such manner that every citizen, whatever his politics, religion, nationality, or color, shall feel that he is securely protected in his life, liberty, and property."

Then, in the precise words of the platform of 1871, the Democrats again appealed to "all good men, whatever may have been their past political preferences," to unite with them in removing the radicals from power.

The convention crowned its labors by nominating Richard Coke for governor and Richard B. Hubbard, its chairman, for lieutenant governor. The other candidates nominated included Stephen H. Darden for comptroller, A. J. Dorn for treasurer, J. J. Gross for commissioner of the land office, and O. L. Hollingsworth for superintendent of public instruction. With this ticket and on the platform outlined above the Democratic party went before the people.

The Republicans had held their convention at Dallas in August and had nominated Governor Davis for reelection. Their purpose in the campaign, however, was not only to retain Davis in power, but to regain the lost ground in the legislature. The Republican platform denounced the acts of the legislature and urged upon the people to elect a Republican legislature in its place.

"We trust," it declared, "that from this time forward the people will take steps to relieve themselves from the risk of vicious legislation, by electing senators and representatives, as well as all other state officers on account of their character and qualifications."

The campaign was one of the most vigorous waged in the history of Texas and nearly one hundred and thirty thousand votes were polled. It resulted in the defeat of Davis by more than two to one. Coke received 85,549 votes and Davis 42,633. The radicals were completely routed.

There was great rejoicing throughout the state, but Davis and his lieutenants decided to make a last stand. The constitutionality of the law under which the election was held was attacked in the courts on the ground that the polls should have been open four days instead of one. The date fixed for the meeting of the new legislature was January 13, 1874. On January 5 the supreme court handed down a decision declaring the election law unconstitutional, and on the day before the date fixed for the meeting of the legislature Governor Davis, in spite of the fact that he had signed the measure, issued a proclamation forbidding the newly elected members to meet. After citing the decision of the court, the proclamation declared:

"Whereas, Great public injury and further dangerous complications of public affairs are likely to result from any attempt on the part of those claiming to have been chosen as members of the legislature and other officers at said election, to assume the positions they claim, therefore, for these and other reasons which it is not necessary to incorporate herein, it is deemed advisable, and it is so ordered, that those who have been chosen

as legislators and other officers shall not attempt to assume the positions they claim unless by further action of adequate authority."

Most of the newly elected members of the legislature and the other officers-elect had already arrived at Austin the day this proclamation was issued, and no secret was made of the fact that no attention would be paid to it. It was openly declared that the legislature would meet and that Coke and Hubbard would be inaugurated. In the face of this situation, Davis appealed to President Grant for help. The national Republican party, however, was having its own troubles and Grant had no desire to add to them by creating another target for its enemies to shoot at. The people of several of the Northern states had shown signs of revolt, giving evidence of impatience with the course the radicals had been following since the war. It was being generally predicted that the Democrats would obtain a majority in the next congress, which prediction, incidentally, was abundantly fulfilled in the congressional election of 1874. Grant, therefore, telegraphed Davis that he could not interfere. "The act of the legislature of Texas providing for the recent election having received your approval," the president wired, "and both political parties having made nominations and having conducted a political campaign under its provisions, would it not be prudent, as well as right, to yield to the verdict of the people as expressed by their ballots?"

In spite of the obvious advisability of the course suggested by President Grant, Davis decided to attempt to prevent the legislature from meeting. He gathered a body of armed men, mostly negroes, about him on the first floor of the capitol, and it became known that guards would be placed at the entrance of the legislative halls the following morning, which was the day fixed for the meeting. On the night of January 12 the Democratic members of the newly elected legislature, constituting a majority of both houses, gathered at a place of rendezvous and, under cover of darkness, took possession of the second floor of the capitol. When the morning of January 13 dawned, therefore, Davis found that it was too late to station guards at the entrances of the legislative halls and the senate chamber, for the Democrats already were on the ground. Thereupon he issued an order to the Travis Rifles, the local militia company, to report to him at once for duty, fully armed and equipped. The Democrats checkmated this move, however, by having the sheriff of the county summon the members of the Travis Rifles to serve as a posse to keep the peace, and in this capacity they marched to the capitol. But, instead of reporting to the governor, they went to the second floor of the capitol and took positions at the head of the stairway, under orders to prevent any of the Davis faction, and especially any armed force, from ascending them.

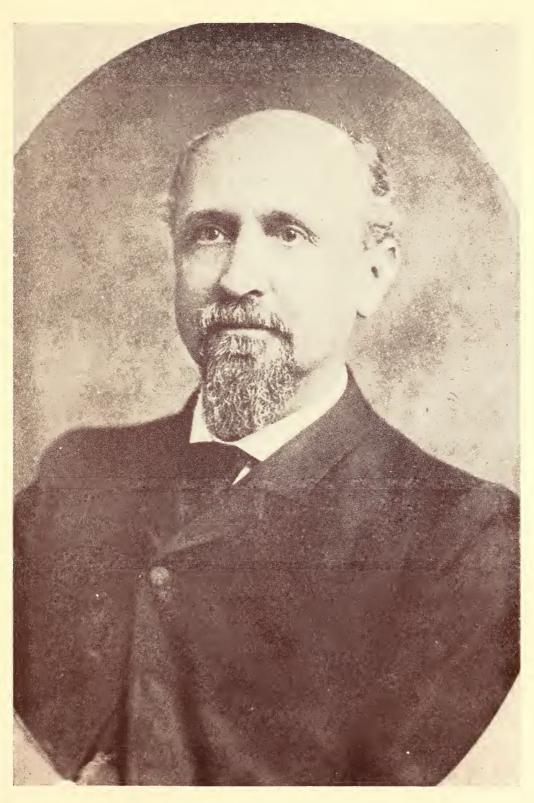
Governor Davis informed a joint committee from the new legislature, which called to notify him that the body was in session, that he would not recognize it. Meantime radical members of the old legislature met in the basement of the capitol and protested against the seating of the new. The situation became tense. The armed forces of the opposing parties faced each other in the capitol, the Davis forces occupying the lower floor and the Travis Rifles holding the second floor

against them. A clash seemed inevitable. Great excitement prevailed in the city of Austin, and there were encounters on the streets. A force of negroes, commanded by a white man, attached to the Davis party, attempted to arrest T. B. Wheeler, the mayor of the city, who sought to keep local military supplies from falling into the hands of either side, and only the mayor's coolness and appeals to the people prevented a general riot. Davis appealed again to President Grant and again he was refused help from the federal government. President Grant, however, ordered the officer in command of United States troops stationed in Texas to keep his eye on the situation and in the event of bloodshed to take charge of things and establish a provisional military government. A major of the United States army arrived at Austin and communicated this information to both sides, and immediately word was passed around among the Democrats to avoid trouble at any cost. This, more than anything else, had the effect of preventing bloodshed, for the reestablishment of military rule by the federal government would have been regarded as a calamity.

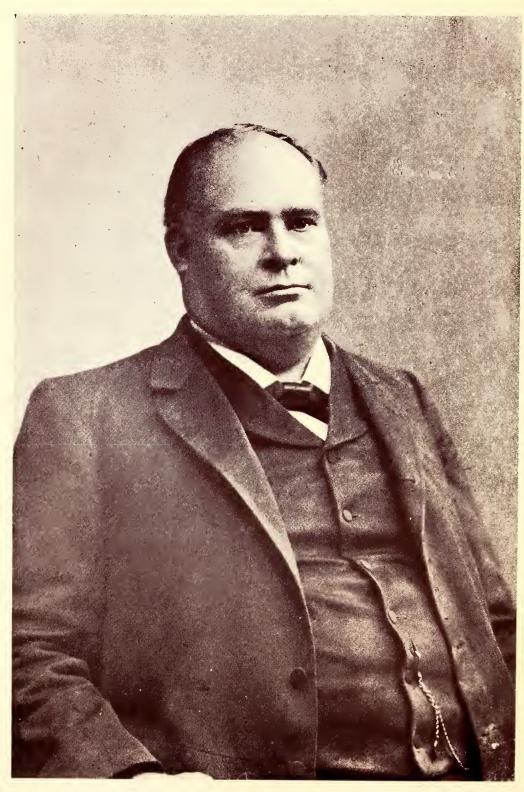
For four days this tense situation continued. Meantime, the Democratic legislature proceeded to perform its duties. At first the secretary of state refused to deliver the election returns, but he finally handed them over under protest. The legislature canvassed the returns and declared Coke and Hubbard elected, and on the night of January 15 Coke was inaugurated. Davis, however, continued to occupy the governor's office, refusing to recognize the inauguration. Finally, on January 17, the attorney general of the United States, act-

ing under the president's direction, wired Davis a third refusal of aid. "The president," he said, "is of the opinion that your right to the office of governor at this time is at least so doubtful that he does not feel warranted in furnishing United States troops." Davis then relented and Governor Coke took possession of his office. Radical rule was at an end.

"Today for the first time since she emerged from the ruin and disaster of the great Civil war," said Governor Coke in his inaugural address, "Texas sees the inauguration in her capitol of a government chosen by the free and untrammeled suffrage of her people, having their confidence and looking to them for support and accountability. Let the heart of the patriot throb with joy, for the old landmarks of constitutional representative government, so long lost, are this day restored, and the ancient liberties of the people of Texas reestablished."



Lawrence Sullivan Ross



James Stephen Hogg

## CHAPTER LXIII.

## TEXAS SINCE RECONSTRUCTION.

Although the inauguration of Governor Coke marked the beginning of the process of restoring selfgovernment to the people of Texas, it required nearly two years to wipe out all traces of the radical regime. The courts, for example, were still in the hands of the radicals, a circumstance which had made possible the attempt of Governor Davis to exclude the Democrats from office. The radical supreme court was eliminated in a short time, however, through the instrumentality of a constitutional amendment which had been adopted at the same time Coke was elected. This amendment provided for a new supreme court of five justices instead of three, and five Democrats were named to constitute the court, including O. M. Roberts, who was made chief justice. In many sections of the state the radical district judges were removed by the legislature through the process of "address," and other radical officeholders were replaced by Democrats as rapidly as possible. The chief legacy of radical rule, however, was the state constitution of 1869, which contained many objectionable features and the spirit of which was alien to that of the people of Texas. This was finally disposed of by holding a constitutional convention, which was authorized by a vote of the people in August, 1875. The convention held its sessions at Austin from September 6 to November 24, 1875, drafted an entirely new constitution and submitted it to the people. This constitution was ratified, February 15, 1876, by a vote of 136,606 to 56,652. At the same time Coke and Hubbard were reelected by a majority of more than one hundred thousand votes! Thus representative government was completely restored in Texas.

Meantime the reaction against radicalism had progressed to such a stage in the Northern states that it may be said that the nation became truly reunited in 1876. The end of the radical regime in congress had been reached in the election of 1874, for as a result of that election the Democrats obtained a majority of seventy in the house of representatives and the twothirds majority of the Republicans in the senate was reduced almost to the vanishing point. Most of the states of the Union, including Pennsylvania, Indiana and Ohio, chose Democratic officers that year, and even Massachusetts elected a Democratic governor! Then in the presidential election of 1876 the Democratic candidate for president, Samuel J. Tilden, received a majority of more than two hundred thousand of the popular vote. The election was contested and Tilden was counted out, a special commission awarding the electoral votes of Florida, Louisiana, Oregon and South Carolina to his opponent, Rutherford B. Hayes. the election showed that an overwhelming majority of the white people of the United States had voted the Democratic ticket. Tilden carried New York, New Jersey, Indiana, Delaware and Connecticut, besides such "border" states as Missouri, Kentucky, Tennessee and West Virginia. With six hundred and fifty thousand votes cast in Ohio, he lost the state by only seven thousand votes, and with seven hundred and fifty thousand cast in Pennsylvania, the Republican majority was only eighteen thousand. The Republican candidate was seated, but that did not change the verdict at the polls. The people of the country as a whole had emphatically repudiated the radical reconstruction policy. The nation was truly reunited. Texas began a new career as the largest state in the American Union and henceforth her destiny was to be linked inseparably with that of the United States of America.

The story of Texas since the overthrow of radical rule and the reestablishment of representative government is a record chiefly of the devolpment of the resources and industries of the state, the settling up of her unoccupied territory and the phenomenal growth of There has been no material her cities and towns. change in the form of government from that which was established immediately after reconstruction and the state constitution which was adopted in 1876 is still in force. There have been amendments to that constitution from time to time, to be sure, but the changes have not been of a fundamental character. From a political and governmental standpoint, therefore, the story of Texas has now been told. The events which have occurred since the adoption of the constitution of 1876 are too fresh in the memory of living men to form material for the historian. The present writer, in any event, must decline the task of recording them in detail, for to attempt it would entail a transition from history to reminiscence. Less than half a century has passed and the writer's remembered years, all of which have been spent in Texas, include the entire period.

Besides, much of the material which would have to be treated belongs more properly to the field of contemporary politics than to that of history. A bare outline of the governmental record, therefore, must suffice, and chief attention must be given to the growth and material development of the state.

Shortly after his inauguration for his second term, Governor Coke was elected to the United States senate by the legislature and Lieutenant-Governor Hubbard became governor. Hubbard served out the remainder of the term and his administration was marked by a vigorous enforcement of the laws. A heritage of the Civil war in many frontier states was a class of reckless outlaws who banded themselves together under some leader and committed all manner of daring crimes. The James boys of Missouri were the most famous of these, but they had many imitators and Texas had its quota of these lesser bandits. Governor Hubbard succeeded in breaking up such of these lawless bands as operated in Texas, offering rewards for their capture, and at the same time he put an end to the activities of a number of groups of daring land thieves who had been engaged in a wholesale traffic in forged titles. During the administrations of both Coke and Hubbard the finances of the state were in very bad condition, due largely to the excesses of radical rule and the prostration which had resulted from the war. Little progress toward solving this problem was made, however, until the administration of O. M. Roberts, who succeeded Hubbard as governor in 1879. Governor Roberts bravely put into effect a "pay-as-you-go" policy and, in the face of strong opposition from the legislature and much public criticism, compelled the state government in all its branches, including the public school system, to keep within the revenue of the state in expenditures. By the time he went out of office the finances of the state were on the road to full rehabilitation.

Two events of great importance of the period between the overthrow of radical rule and the close of Governor Roberts's administration were the opening of the Agricultural & Mechanical College and the founding of the University of Texas. The first named institution was the result of the policy of the federal government, inaugurated during the war, of making a grant of public lands to states agreeing to establish institutions for instruction in agriculture and the mechanical arts. The legislature of 1871 voted to accept such a grant for Texas and the federal government allotted one hundred and eighty thousand acres to the state. The college was located in Brazos county, near the town of Bryan, and opened its doors on October 4, 1876. Only six students were enrolled on the date of opening, but from that humble beginning it has grown to be one of the great institutions of its kind in the United States. The ambition to establish a university was a legacy from the republic, but, for one reason or another, definite action was postponed until just before secession. Then the war made another postponement necessary. On the advice of President Lamar the Texan congress, in 1839, had set aside a liberal appropriation of public land for the purpose of founding two universities, one for the eastern and the other for the western section of the republic. The legislature of 1858 had confirmed the grant of the

republic and had added a considerable amount of land to the proposed endowment, while providing for only one university. It was on the foundation thus laid that the University of Texas was finally established at Austin, a location, by the way, that would have been regarded as the extreme "west" in Lamar's day. Its original buildings were erected during Governor Roberts's administration and its first session began in 1883. It has since attained high standing among the state universities of the country.

An account of the educational institutions of the state does not come within the scope of the present work, but it should be said that great progress has been made toward providing Texas with adequate facilities for both higher and primary education. A system of normal schools for preparing young men and women to be teachers was begun in 1879 by the establishment of the Sam Houston Normal Institute at Huntsville. Today there are seven such schools, each serving efficiently the section of the state in which it is located. In 1903 there was founded at Denton the College of Industrial Arts, a school for girls, which has developed into one of the greatest institutions of its kind in the United States. And finally, at the present time (1924) there is being built at Lubbock, in the western part of the state, the Texas Technological College, a coeducational institution, which, in addition to the regular college course, will maintain a school of technology and textile arts. Great things are predicted for this new college, which was established in response to a general demand of the people of West Texas for adequate educational facilities, conveniently located.

addition to these state institutions, a number of splendid denominational colleges are located in Texas, one of them, Baylor University at Waco, dating back to the days of the republic. Rice Institute at Houston, an independent college, endowed by William Marsh Rice, who died in 1900, opened its doors to students in 1912, and is rapidly becoming an important center of liberal education.

It was during Governor Roberts's administration that the old state capitol, built shortly after annexation, was burned, and provision was made for the erection of the magnificent structure which is now one of the finest public buildings in America. The old capitol was completely destroyed by fire on the afternoon of November 9, 1881, and Governor Roberts immediately called a special session of the legislature for the purpose of providing temporary quarters for the state government and taking steps toward erecting a new capitol. A previous legislature had appropriated three million acres of public lands to build a new capitol and the fire only hastened action in the matter. mission created for the purpose made a contract with a corporation, composed of Chicago and British capitalists, agreeing to exchange three million acres of land in the Texas Panhandle for a completed capitol. result of this contract was the present capitol at Austin, the largest state building in the United States. second only to the national capitol at Washington in size, and is built of the famous red granite of Burnet county. The work of building it was continued during the two terms of Governor John Ireland, who succeeded Governor Roberts, and it was not completed until 1888.

On May 16 of that year it was formally dedicated. Governor Ireland's successor, Lawrence Sullivan Ross, popularly known as "Sul" Ross, being the first governor to occupy it. There was some public criticism of the alienation of such a large tract of land to a private corporation merely to provide a public building, but it is generally thought today that the deal was a favorable one to the state. Incidentally, much of this land has passed into the hands of prosperous farmers and such of it as still remains unsettled undoubtedly will be colonized in due course.

The pushing of the frontier ever westward was one of the notable results of the restoration of orderly government following reconstruction. The Texas Rangers came into being as a result of the frontier legislation of the Davis administration, and subsequent governors and legislators continued this body of efficient frontiersmen and made adequate provision for the protection of settlers in the exposed section of the state. During the war the frontier had receded considerably and much of the territory which had been settled during the period between annexation and secession had been abandoned because of danger from the Indians. ately after the war the process of reclaiming the lost ground was started and the four years of the administrations of Coke and Hubbard were marked by much progress in this respect. The cattle industry experienced a great revival, large herds being driven over trails to the Northern markets, and this created a demand for the unoccupied lands. During Governor Roberts's administration the policy of selling and leasing lands was inaugurated and with it the barbed-wire fence

began to make its appearance on the prairies. In the course of time the "free grass" of the west began to disappear. The farmer, too, moved westward and in consequence of this, and of the existence of landless cattlemen who still insisted upon "free grass," a fencecutting war broke out. It was claimed that large cattle corporations were fencing land to which they had no title, and that they were not even leaving openings for public roads. It was charged that the new system of fencing simply meant "free grass" for the few instead of "free grass" for all. The large private pastures tended to stop settlement and the very existence of the man who owned cattle but no land was threatened. Much bitterness was engendered and in many instances the wire fences were cut at every post for miles. Violent encounters became frequent and a condition of civil war seemed inevitable. This situation reached such a stage during the administration of Governor Ireland that he called a special session of the legislature in January, 1884, and stringent laws were passed making fence-cutting a felony, providing penalties for fencing public lands without authority, requiring that public roads should be left open and gates placed at every three miles and otherwise regulating the fencing of lands. This did not cure the situation altogether, but the practice of fence-cutting soon ceased.

It was with the inauguration of Governor Ross and the occupation of the new capitol building that the struggle for the regulation of the railroads in Texas came to a focus. The demand for such regulation was one of the measures of the Grange movement which appeared in many agricultural states immediately after the war. The Texas Grange had voiced such a demand as early as 1875 and when the Grange movement was superseded by the Farmers' Alliance, that organization took up the demand. As the result of this agitation the act creating the interstate commerce commission was passed in 1887, John H. Reagan, its author, being a Texan and a member of the Texas State Grange. During the same year, James Stephen Hogg, the attorney general of Texas, who had been elected on the same ticket with Governor Ross, conducted a series of successful prosecutions against the railroads which brought him prominently before the people in connection with the question of railroad regulation. In 1888 the demand for state legislation on the subject became widespread. The Grange demanded the creation of a state commission, similar to the interstate body; the Farmers' Alliance declared in favor of the establishment by the state of maximum freight and passenger rates "upon a basis that will allow no more than a reasonable income on the money actually invested in the road, and to defray the cost of repairs and operating the roads;" a "nonpartisan" convention, claiming to represent the "farmers, laborers and stock-raisers," adopted a resolution favoring public ownership of railroads. question was uppermost in the public mind.

The Democratic convention, which met at Dallas in August, 1888, therefore, adopted the following platform demand:

"We favor the enactment of such laws as shall restrict the freight charges of railway and express companies, so that they may only yield a fair interest on the money actually invested in them, and at the same time to prevent discrimination in charges against any points within the state."

The convention renominated Ross for governor and Hogg for attorney general. The campaign which followed was a warm one, and the "nonpartisan" ticket, which advocated public ownership of railroads, polled nearly one hundred thousand votes as compared with two hundred and fifty thousand polled by Ross. When the twenty-first legislature met in the new capitol in the spring of 1889, therefore, "the air was full of railroad legislation." Governor Ross favored the creation of a state railroad commission and a bill providing for such a body was introduced in the house. The chief argument made against it was that such a measure would be unconstitutional, inasmuch as the constitution gave to the legislature the exclusive power to regulate rates and that body could not delegate such power. companion measure a resolution submitting a constitutional amendment providing for a commission also was introduced. The bill creating a commission passed the house by a vote of 66 to 25 and the resolution providing for a constitutional amendment was adopted by the required two-thirds vote. In the senate, however, the commission bill was defeated, but the resolution was adopted. The resolution provided that the proposed constitutional amendment should be voted on at the next general election and this threw the whole question into the gubernatorial campaign.

The Democratic state convention which met at San Antonio in August, 1890, became the scene of a heated debate over the question of indorsing the proposed con-

stitutional amendment. Hogg was the leading candidate for governor and he insisted on such an indorsement. The committee on platform brought in majority and minority reports, the former favoring the amendment and the latter declaring that it was in no sense a party question, and that a vote for or against the amendment was not a test of party fealty. The minority report was tabled by a vote of 701 ayes to 159 noes, and, on a platform declaring for the amendment, Hogg was nominated for governor. Charles A. Culberson, also an advocate of the amendment, was nominated for attorney general, an office which had become second in importance only to that of governor, because the man filling it would very likely have to defend in the courts any regulatory legislation enacted.

The Republican platform declared against the amendment, but Hogg was overwhelmingly elected and the amendment adopted. As a result the twenty-second legislature, at its regular session in 1891, passed a bill carrying out the provisions of the amendment and creating a state railroad commission. The amendment provided for a commission of three members, appointed by the governor, and Governor Hogg, in selecting the personnel of the first commission, sought to name men of such high character and ability as would command respect for its decisions from the start. Accordingly, he induced John H. Reagan to resign his seat in the United States senate to accept the chairmanship of the commission, and as the other two commissioners he appointed Judge W. P. McLean and L. L. Foster. The new commission immediately entered upon its duties and set about revising the freight rates within the state. As soon as the new rates were promulgated, however, six suits were filed in the United States circuit court by the railroads, praying for injunctions restraining the commission from putting them into effect, on the ground that they were confiscatory. It also was contended that the law creating the commission was invalid under the federal constitution. The suits were ably defended in the courts by Attorney General Culberson, and the law finally was upheld by the United States supreme court, though a permanent injunction was allowed against the enforcement of the rates already promulgated.

Meantime, however, the whole question of railroad regulation became a dominant issue in politics. In addition to the creation of the commission, Governor Hogg advocated the enactment of a stock and bond law, for the control of the issuance of securities by the rail-Strong opposition to this proposition developed within the Democratic party, and coupled with this was a demand for another amendment to the constitution requiring that the railroad commissioners be elected by the people. A movement was started to prevent Governor Hogg's reelection, and George Clark, of Waco, was chosen by Hogg's opponents as their leader. It was proposed to nominate Clark for governor—on a platform demanding an elective commission, and opposing such measures as Hogg's stock and bond law. When the Democratic convention met at Houston, in August, 1892, the delegates got into a snarl over the election of a temporary chairman and as a result the gathering split into two parts. Two conventions were held instead of one. One set of delegates met in the Houston Car Stable and nominated Hogg for reelection. The other met at Turner Hall and nominated Clark. An idea of the points at issue may be had from a few paragraphs from the respective platforms adopted. The Clark adherents made the following declarations:

"We are opposed to all forms of 'one-man power' and have an abiding faith in the capacity of the people for governing themselves. We believe in the right of local self-government, untrammeled by dictation from any central authority. We condemn all attempts to interfere with this right, coming from any source, and we favor the election of all officers by the people themselves. Especially do we demand the right to elect our railroad commissioners, in order that such agency shall cease to be dominated for personal and political effect, and that it may impartially determine controversies between citizens and railroads, in such manner as may be prescribed by law.

"Railroad corporations and all other corporations being creatures of law are subject to state legislation and control. We favor the continuance of the present method of railway regulation by means of a commission clothed with such constitutional powers as may be requisite for the protection of the people against injustice or extortion, but we are opposed to the taking of private property for public use without just compensation. . . .

"The necessities of our people and the development of our industries and means of transportation demand that the introduction of money at a low rate of interest in the state should be fostered and encouraged. We condemn all legislation calculated to drive capital or immigration from us, and we extend a hearty welcome to all honest people who may choose to come and make their homes with us or to invest their money here, and promise them that their rights of person and property shall be guarded with the same jealous care as our own, under the protection of equal laws, justly administered. . . .

"We arraign the administration of Governor Hogg, because it has driven and is keeping capital from the state, because it has unsettled land titles and retarded immigration, because his administration has been undemocratic and despotic."

Declarations of the Hogg platform on the same subjects were as follows

"We pledge fealty and support of the Texas railroad commission law as it now exists, subject only to such changes as may become necessary to accomplish for it a greater degree of perfection. We favor an appointive commission unless the constitution shall be so changed as to permit the election of one of the commissioners every two years and making their tenure of office six years.

"We demand a law that will successfully prevent the issuance of fictitious and watered stocks and bonds by railway companies in this state, believing that great enterprises should be conducted upon commercial principles and not as gambling devices. . . .

"We deny that it is the purpose of the Democratic party of Texas to make unnecessary war upon the railroad companies and incorporated capital, or to unjustly or improperly invade their rights, attach their property, or deprive them of equal and exact justice before the law. We believe the railroads are entitled to just compensation for all services rendered, and that they should not be hampered by unnecessary and vexatious legislation.

"We deny the false and slanderous report at home and abroad to the effect that the Democratic party of Texas and its administration are hostile to immigration, legitimate corporate enterprises, or the investment of foreign capital in our state."

The reference to the "unsettling of land titles" in the Clark platform was in criticism of suits brought to recover lands claimed to have been illegally held by the railroad companies or transferred to other parties fraudulently in order to avoid forfeiture to the state. On this point the Hogg platform declared:

"We commend the action of the public officials seeking to recover lands unlawfully obtained by railroad companies from the state for sidings and switches, and pledge the people that so long as the Democratic party remains in power this course shall be continued until every acre is recovered by or restored to the state. At the same time we pledge that all innocent purchasers for value and actual settlers who may have purchased any of said lands from the railway companies or their assigns, shall have their titles validated and made good in so far as the state may have any claim thereto."

The campaign over these issues was one of the most heated ever waged in the state. The slogan of "Hogg and the Commission" was pitted against that of the Clark adherents, which voiced the demand, "Turn Texas Loose!" Both candidates were remarkable men and each ably defended the principles for which he

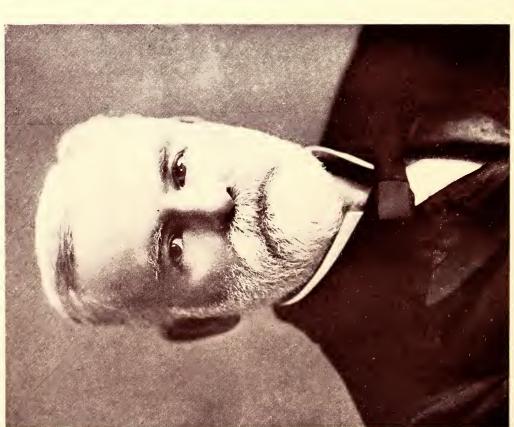


JOSEPH D. SAYERS



CHARLES A. CULBERSON





S. W. T. LANHAM

fought. Governor Hogg was reelected by a substantial majority, but at the first opportunity a constitutional amendment was adopted providing for the election of railroad commissioners by the people, one being chosen every two years for a term of six years.

The state railroad commission soon vindicated the faith of its supporters and performed great service in establishing equitable criteria for the fixing of freight rates. Through decisions of the federal courts, however, it has been shorn of much of its power in recent years, while that of the interstate commerce commission has been correspondingly enlarged. On the whole it may be said also that the legislation of Governor Hogg's two administrations has been beneficial to the railroads, and has served to place them on a sounder financial basis. The indebtedness per mile of the railroads of Texas has been greatly reduced in consequence.

The period of Governor Hogg's regime and that of his successor, Charles A. Culberson, also was that of anti-trust agitation throughout the country, and several measures directed toward the regulation of corporations and the prevention of restrictive combinations and monopolies were enacted in Texas.

An event which occurred in 1896, the year Governor Culberson was inaugurated, must be noticed, because it modified the boundary lines of Texas. This was a decision of the supreme court of the United States decreeing that Greer county, which had been regarded as being within the state, and had always been represented in the state government, was not a part of Texas, but was north of the boundary fixed in the treaty with Spain in 1819. That treaty declared Red river to be

the boundary, but Greer county was situated between two forks of that river. Texas had regarded the north fork as the boundary, but the federal government contended that the south fork was the boundary, and that Greer county was part of Indian Territory. The matter had been in litigation for several years and finally, in 1896, was decided against Texas.

The last vestige of such sectional feeling as remained as a heritage of the war between the states and of radical rule was swept away in 1898 when the United States went to war with Spain. That the United States had long been a reunited nation was amply demonstrated to the world during that war, and Texas played its full part in it. Four regiments of infantry and one of cavalry and one regiment of "immunes" were contributed to the army by the state, but in addition to this Col. Theodore Roosevelt's famous "Rough Riders" were organized at San Antonio. Roosevelt's regiment was not a Texas organization, to be sure, for it was recruited from all of the western cattle states. Texas cowboys and frontiersmen were well represented among its members and shared in the record it made during the war.

One of the Texas regiments, the Thirty-third United States Volunteers, commanded by Col. Luther R. Hare, a native Texan of the regular army, was especially active in the Philippine Islands, and Colonel Hare was promoted to brigadier general of the volunteers for gallantry. The regiment was in several battles and skirmishes and, after one of the most trying and severe marches of the war, a detachment of this regiment rescued Gilmore's band, which had been captured. Capt.

John A. Hulen, subsequently a brigadier general in the World War, distinguished himself in this rescue. A saddening event of the war for Texans was the death of Col. W. H. Mabry. Colonel Mabry commanded the First Texas Volunteer Infantry and landed in Cuba with his regiment on December 23, 1898. Shortly after his arrival he was stricken with malaria, which was complicated with pneumonia, and he died on January 4, 1899. His remains were sent to Austin, Texas, where they were interred with military honors. The services of the Texans during the war measured up with those of the soldiers of any other state in the Union.

Governor Culberson was elected to the United States senate at the end of his term in the executive office and served in that body for twenty-four years. There have been seven governors since the close of his administration—Joseph D. Sayers, who succeeded him and served until January, 1903; S. W. T. Lanham, who was governor from 1903 to 1907; Thomas Mitchell Campbell, from 1907 to 1911; Oscar Branch Colquitt, from 1911 to 1915; James E. Ferguson, from 1915 to 1917; William Pettus Hobby, from 1917 to 1921, and Pat Morris Neff, who began his first term in January, 1921, and is now (1924) serving his second term. Governor Ferguson was removed from office in 1917 by impeachment, and the lieutenant governor, Hobby, served out his second term. Governor Hobby then was elected for another term in 1918.

Three matters remain to be mentioned to bring this sketchy outline of the history of the state since reconstruction to a close. These are (1) the enactment of

the Terrell election law in 1905, (2) the prohibition election of 1911, and (3) the part Texas played in the World War.

The Terrell election law, so designated because it was introduced by Judge A. W. Terrell, a representative from Travis county, changed completely the method of selecting officials in Texas. It was enacted during the second administration of Governor Lanham. abolished the convention system of nominating candidates for office, except in the case of the weaker political parties, and substituted the direct primary system now in effect. In addition to this it enacted the present poll tax qualification for voting, requiring that in order to be entitled to vote the citizens must have paid a poll tax before the first day of February preceding the election, and that each voter must pay his own poll tax with his own money. It was predicted that great improvement of the public service would result from this new system, and that it would give every citizen the right to aspire to public office. Opinions differ as to whether it has achieved these results, and the writer does not hesitate to express his own. He does not believe it has improved the public service. Whether the primary system has been the cause of it or not, he believes the standard of public service has deteriorated As for the claim that it gives to in recent years. every citizen the right to aspire to public office, the cost of conducting a state campaign under the primary system has increased to such an extent that only a man of personal wealth, or who can command a large campaign fund from some other source, can hope to be elected to office. On the other hand, the old idea that

"the office should seek the man" has entirely disappeared from politics. However, all this is the writer's personal opinion. There probably is no ideal system of choosing public officials and many good men believe the direct primary system to be the best yet devised.

The prohibition election of 1911 came as the culmination of years of agitation which divided the Democratic party into two factions. Prohibition made its first appearance in Texas as an issue in 1887, when a proposed constitutional amendment prohibiting the manufacture and sale of intoxicating liquors in Texas was voted on by the people. The amendment was defeated by nearly one hundred thousand votes and for a few years the agitation died down. In the course of time, however, the advocates of prohibition increased, and by 1910 they were numerous enough to obtain the submission of another amendment. The election was held in 1911 and the amendment was defeated a second time, but by only six thousand votes. From that time forward prohibition was the dominant issue in Texas politics. It overshadowed all other questions and became the criterion in judging men for public office. The Democratic party practically became two parties the prohibitionists and the anti-prohibitionists. condition continued until the World War, when the legislature, at Governor Hobby's recommendation, created zones around all the army camps in Texas in which the sale of intoxicating liquors was prohibited. This closed up all the saloons in the state, for there were army camps at all of the cities that had not already abolished saloons by means of "local option." Subsequently the national prohibition amendment was ratified

by the Texas legislature and state prohibition was put in effect by the adoption of a constitutional amendment by a vote of the people.

One of the incidents leading up to America's entrance into the World War had a direct relation to Texas and was of peculiar interest to those acquainted with Texas history. On January 19, 1917, on the eve of the inauguration of unrestricted submarine warfare by Germany, the German foreign minister, Dr. Alfred Zimmermann, sent the following secret note to Von Eckhardt, Germany's minister at Mexico City:

"On the first of February we intend to begin submarine warfare unrestricted. In spite of this it is our intention to endeavor to keep neutral the United States of America.

"If this attempt is not successful, we propose an alliance on the following basis with Mexico:

"That we shall make war together and together make peace. We shall give general financia! support and it is understood that Mexico is to reconquer the lost territory in New Mexico, Texas and Arizona. The details are left to you for settlement.

"You are instructed to inform the President of Mexico of the above in the greatest confidence as soon as it is certain that there will be an outbreak of war with the United States, and suggest that the President of Mexico, on his own initiative, should communicate with Japan suggesting adherence at once to this plan; at the same time offer to mediate between Germany and Japan.

"Please call to the attention of the President of Mexico that the employment of ruthless submarine

warfare now promises to compel England to make peace in a few months."

American secret service agents on the Texas border intercepted this note and it was made public on February 28. It served to increase the feeling against Germany in the United States, but the suggestion it contained that Mexico could conquer Texas, in light of the knowledge that she had failed to reconquer the republic of Texas at a time when there were less than one hundred thousand people between the Sabine and the Rio Grande, caused much amusement. Zimmermann was severely criticized in Germany for suggesting such a foolish proposition, and Theodor Wolff, one of Germany's leading newspaper editors, in commenting on it, said: "The minister to Mexico was instructed to hold out the conquest of Texas, New Mexico and Arizona to Carranza. It would certainly have been interesting to see the face of the wily Mexican when this offer was made." Incidentally, when the note was published the Japanese premier immediately expressed indignation over the suggestion that Japan would so lightly desert the Allies. If such a suggestion should be received at the Japanese foreign office, he said, it would meet with "indignant and categorical refusal." No similar expression, however, ever emanated from Mexico.

Texas contributed 209,203 men to armed forces of the United States during the World War. When it is considered that the total population of the state, men, women and children, was less than that at the time of annexation, it serves to emphasize the greatness of Texas. In the actual fighting in France, Texan troops

proved themselves worthy of their heritage of inspiring history. Moreover, the United States government recognized the ideal character of the climate of Texas and the general healthful conditions prevailing by making the state one of the chief centers of training camps in the country. No state in the Union supported the government more heartily or with greater enthusiasm than If demonstration were needed, it was daily demonstrated during the whole period of American participation in the war that the people of the state that has been erected in the territory into which Moses Austin journeyed in 1820 are quite as American as those of any of the thirteen states of the original Union. As if symbolizing this fact, a native Texan, Col. E. M. House, became one of the outstanding diplomats of the war, being second only to President Wilson himself in representing the United States in the councils of the allied nations.

With the return of peace Texas has entered upon a new era. The glories of the past, which have been recounted in these pages, are the inspiration of the rising generation of Texans. To the young men and young women of the Lone Star state today is given the sacred charge of making the future worthy of the past.

## CHAPTER LXIV.

## A CENTURY OF DEVELOPMENT.

Texas, as everybody knows, is the largest state in the Union, having an area of 265,896 square miles, and comprising nearly eight per cent of the total area of the United States. But it is first in other things besides size. It is first in agriculture, in the production of cotton, in the production of beef cattle, in rural population, in railroad mileage, in the production of sulphur, in mileage of public highways, in complete petroleumrefining capacity, in petroleum refinery investments, and in some other lines as well. It is second in the number of pure-bred beef cattle, and in the production of quicksilver and of fuller's earth. It is third in the production of asphalt and of crude petroleum. 1922 a little better than twenty-one per cent of the total petroleum production of the United States was supplied by Texas. In population it ranks fifth among the states, the 1920 census showing 4,663,228 persons, of whom 3,918,165 were white. It is outranked in population only by New York, Pennsylvania, Illinois and Ohio. The first census after annexation—that of 1850—showed Texas as standing twenty-fifth in population among the thirty-six states which then made up the Union. By 1860 it had passed Vermont and Connecticut and had taken twenty-third place. tween 1860 and 1870 it moved up to nineteenth, passing Louisiana, Maine, South Carolina and Maryland. During the next ten years it made a big stride and passed Alabama, Georgia, North Carolina, Mississippi, Tennessee, Virginia, New Jersey and Wisconsin, taking eleventh place in 1880. By 1890 it had passed Iowa, Michigan, Kentucky and Indiana, and stood seventh, and between 1890 and 1900 it passed Massachusetts and attained sixth place. In 1910 it assumed its present position of fifth, after passing Missouri. But, even in spite of this steady growth since annexation, there were only eighteen persons to the square mile in Texas in 1920, as compared with two hundred and seventeen persons to the square mile in New York, one hundred and ninety-four in Pennsylvania, one hundred and fifteen in Illinois and one hundred and fourteen in Ohio. If Texas had one-fourth as many persons to the square mile as New York its population would exceed that of the Empire State by more than two and a half million people!

The wealth produced in the province of Texas, New Spain, during 1819, the year the boundary was fixed at the Sabine, was almost negligible. No figures are available, but it is safe to say that it did not aggregate one hundred thousand dollars. During the year 1919, one hundred years later, the state of Texas produced nearly two billion dollars of wealth! The crops of the state alone that year were valued at more than one billion dollars—the first time that figure was attained by the crops of any single state in the Union—and petroleum, livestock, livestock products, lumber, manufactures, building and the value added to imported goods by distribution brought the total up to nearly another billion dollars. That was a year of

high prices, to be sure, but it is nevertheless true that Texas produced at least twenty thousand times as much wealth during the year 1919 as it did in 1819. And that statement contains an epitome of one hundred years of economic growth in Texas.

The value of all crops harvested in Texas during 1919 was \$1,071,542,103, and the acreage of those crops was a little in excess of twenty-five million acres. Cotton and cottonseed, with less than half the acreage, contributed more than half of the total. The cotton acreage was eleven and a half million acres and the crop harvested was about two and a half million bales. The cotton was valued at \$514,113,961 and the cottonseed at \$82,323,048. This, however, was a short crop of cotton, for normally Texas produces between three and four million bales of cotton, and during the following year, 1920, the state's crop was considerably in excess of four million bales. The second item on the list was cereals, which reached a value of \$322,-571,641. Of this class the largest single crop was corn, of which there were one hundred and eight million bushels valued at \$146,309,341. Wheat was next to corn in this class, with 36,427,255 bushels valued at \$75,404,421. Ten years before only two and a half million bushels of wheat was produced in Texas. Hay and forage contributed \$73,324,319 to the total; vegetables, \$39,187,581, and fruits and nuts, \$14,952,135.

In addition to the crops, the value of which, as has been said, was over a billion dollars, there were domestic animals of all kinds in Texas in 1919 valued at five hundred and seventy-five million dollars. Of these the largest single class consisted of 4,693,008 beef cattle valued at \$242,549,992. Then there was a third class of products, designated as "livestock products," including milk, butter, cheese, eggs, honey, beeswax, wool and mohair, which had a total value of \$87,761,715.

From all of this it can be seen that the farms and ranches of Texas contribute the greater portion of its annual production of wealth. Next in order of importance are petroleum and petroleum products, then manufacturing and then building. The petroleum industry has grown up in the last quarter of a century and is now second in importance only to agriculture. The total production of petroleum in Texas in 1900 was less than one million barrels, whereas in 1922 it was in excess of one hundred and seventeen million barrels. The development of this industry has been by far the chief economic event of recent Texas history.

Manufacturing in Texas has reached considerable development, but is still in its infancy. There were 5,724 industrial establishments in Texas in 1919. They were capitalized at \$585,776,451 and employed 130,911 persons, to whom wages and salaries aggregating \$147,907,778 were paid. These establishments used raw materials valued at \$701,170,898, which were converted into finished products valued at \$999,995,796. This means that in 1919 the net production of the manufacturing establishments of Texas—the value added to raw materials—was \$298,824,898. The leading manufacturing industries, ranked according to the value added to raw materials by manufacture, are

petroleum-refining, lumber and timber production, car and general shop construction and repairs for steam railroads, slaughtering and meat packing, cottonseed oil and cake production, foundries and machine shops and flour and grist mills. However, because of the circumstance that the raw materials of certain industries are almost entirely produced in Texas, their economic importance should be judged by the total value of the products. On this basis the order of the leading industries is as Petroleum-refining, slaughtering and meatpacking, cottonseed oil and cake production, flour and grist mills and lumber and timber production. total production of these four industries in 1919 was in excess of five hundred million dollars, and they contributed nearly half of the value added to raw materials by manufacture.

The annual building of new structures of all kinds in Texas forms a considerable percentage of the wealth produced. Only a rough estimate of its extent can be made, but it is safe to say that it is in excess of two hundred million dollars. And finally the value added to products through wholesale and retail distribution and by transportation over the railroads of the state reaches a very large total. There are 16,180 miles of steam railroads in Texas, constituting 6.44 per cent of the total railroad mileage of the United States.

It will be seen from all this that the statement that Texas produced nearly two billion dollars of wealth during the year 1919 is amply borne out, and when it is considered that this means a per capita production of about four hundred dollars for the year—or about

two thousand dollars per family of five persons—something of its significance can be appreciated. Texas has attained a high degree of prosperity, though in many respects it still is an undeveloped state.

The 1920 census showed the "rural" population of Texas to be 3,150,539, or 67.6 per cent of the total population of the state. The census bureau classifies as "rural" all communities of less than twenty-five hundred people, so not all of the people so classified live on farms and ranches. The census showed the population of towns and villages of less than twentyfive hundred people in Texas to be 363,008, with 2,787,531 persons living in "other rural territory." This last figure gives an idea of the number of people in Texas who are directly dependent upon agriculture. There were 436,033 "farms" in Texas, according to the 1919 census, comprising a total of 114,020,021 acres, of which 31,227,503 acres were "improved" land. A "farm," as defined by the census bureau, is "all the land which is directly farmed by one person managing and conducting agricultural operations," and includes all tracts of three or more acres used for agricultural purposes and tracts of less than three acres which produced at least two hundred and fifty dollars' worth of farm products during the year. No distinction is made between "farms" and "ranches," and the 114,020,021 acres included in Texas farms must be understood as comprising all the land used in the production of livestock of all kinds as well as in the growing of crops. The one billion dollars' worth of crops produced in 1919 was grown on approximately twentyfive million acres of land. The rest of the total that was actually "used for agricultural purposes" was devoted to the production of livestock and livestock products, or was used as the sites of farm buildings.

While the census figures are thus seen to be only approximations, they do serve to illustrate the overwhelming importance of agriculture in Texas. More than half the people of the state are directly engaged in agriculture, most of the land is devoted to it, and considerably more than one-half of the wealth produced every year consists of the products of agriculture. Texas, therefore, is primarily an agricultural state.

Moreover, agriculture has been the chief occupation of the inhabitants of Texas from the earliest times. Some of the Indian tribes in Texas engaged in a primitive form of agriculture before the coming of the Spaniards, and economically the missions were agricultural and livestock enterprises. Corn and beans were the chief crops of the missions, but pumpkins, watermelons and other vegetables were raised and some sugar cane and cotton. However, the neglected condition into which agriculture had receded by the time the first Anglo-American settlers arrived on the Colorado and the Brazos is strikingly illustrated by the circumstance that there was a scarcity of seed corn at San Antonio in 1822, and the colonists had to send to Natchitoches for a supply. The first crop produced by Austin's colonists—that of 1822—was chiefly corn. It was planted in the most primitive fashion, for the colonists were entirely without agricultural implements, due to the failure of the Lively to arrive, and a severe drouth

nearly ruined the entire crop. In the river bottoms, however, the crop was a success and the corn harvested that fall provided them with their first bread in many months. An account of this is given in volume one of this work (pages 117 and 128). From that start, however, the present agricultural system of Texas developed.

Inasmuch as cotton is the backbone of Texas prosperity it may be said that Jared Groce, the first man to plant cotton on a commercial basis in the province, was the father of Texas agriculture. Certainly he was the founder of the cotton industry in Texas, for he not only established the first plantation cultivated by slaves, but in 1825 built the first cotton gin on the banks of the Brazos. James E. B. Austin, Stephen Austin's younger brother, built another gin the next year, and shortly after that Robert H. Williams built a gin in the region that is now Matagorda county. From that point forward the number of gins and the acreage of cotton increased from year to year. Stephen F. Austin reported to the Mexican government in 1833 that there were thirty cotton gins in the municipalities of Austin and Brazoria, and that the municipalities of Liberty and Nacogdoches were "very well provided with gins." He reported also that the cotton crop that year would amount to about seventy-five hundred bales. Cotton, therefore, had taken first place among Texas crops within ten years after the arrival of the Anglo-Americans.

The first cotton was exported to the interior of Mexico across the Rio Grande on the backs of mules. It was made up into bales of fifty and one hundred pounds



James E. Ferguson



OSCAR B. COLQUITT





and a mule load consisted of three hundred pounds of In 1831, however, Edwin Waller took a cotton. schooner load of cotton from the mouth of the Brazos to Matamoros and by the next year the shipment of cotton by water to New Orleans was established. Colonel Almonte reported to the Mexican government that five thousand bales were exported to New Orleans in 1832. At the same time Austin reported that "in the bay of Galveston there is a steamship, and a company is being formed in Austin and Brazoria for the purpose of bringing one to the mouth of the Brazos river." So it can be seen that the cotton industry was well established in Texas before the revolution of 1835. It has been estimated that the Texas cotton crop of 1834 sold for six hundred thousand dollars, the price per pound that year being exceedingly high. The prosperous condition of the cotton planters of Texas on the eve of the revolution was one of the chief reasons why the colonists showed such reluctance to engage in an armed conflict with the Mexican government. When Stephen Austin and his volunteers were awaiting reinforcements around San Antonio in the fall of 1835 a majority of the colonists were gathering their cotton and paying no attention to "politics."

In 1836 David B. Edward published his History of Texas; or the Emigrant's, Farmer's and Politician's Guide to the Character, Climate, Soil and Productions of That Country: Geographically Arranged From Personal Observation and Experience. It is a quaint old book and a storehouse of unusual information about early Texas. On the subject of Texas cotton he writes:

"Is it not a well-known fact that in New Orleans the merchant gives as much, if not from one to three cents more for the Texas cotton than for that of Louisiana? And can not the Texas farmer of the Gulf coast raise as much, if not some hundred pounds more of it to the acre than the planters can in any part of the United States?

"Let us examine and judge by what we have seen; remembering always that . . . they are not so subject to the heavy rains, which often occur during crop time in Louisiana. Is it a wonder then that the farmers of the rich, black sandy alluvial bottoms should boast of their four thousand pounds per acre, one year with another; while those who cultivate the stiff, black lime soil, and those who occupy that of a reddish complexion can vaunt of their three thousand five hundred pounds per acre in all ordinary seasons? And wherever the black uplands have been improved they have commonly brought their three thousand pounds per acre. then would not emphatically exclaim, this is a cottongrowing country? For, of a surety, its advantages for raising this article are superior to those of any part of the United States."

It is hardly necessary to remark that there is "some exaggeration" of the yield per acre reported in the above, but it serves to illustrate the importance which already had been assigned to Texas as cotton-growing country even before the establishment of the republic.

The part that cotton played in determining the destiny of Texas has been recounted in volume four of this work. It was the importance of Texas as a cotton-

growing region that attracted the attention of Great Britain and that made possible the diplomacy which resulted ultimately in annexation to the United States. In the memorandum which Anson Jones wrote for the British foreign minister's eyes in 1839, he said that Texas "has at least one hundred millions of acres of cotton land, and is capable, when her resources are developed—as they will be within the next quarter of a century—of producing enough of that great staple for the supply and consumption of the world." And when Jones returned to Texas from Washington, he told the people of Galveston, in an address he delivered on his arrival, that they had sent the best possible negotiator to England—"a ship loaded with cotton, the staple production of the country!" Subsequently William Kennedy reported to the British public that Texas was the coming cotton country. "All competent judges who have explored the country," he wrote, "agree in the opinion that, for apparent depth and richness, and capability of raising most of the commodities necessary for animal subsistence and enjoyment, the soil of Texas is not surpassed by that of any other country in the Western hemisphere. Among the productions which may be considered as naturally adapted to the soil, and which will form important articles of commerce, cotton is preeminent. . . . It may be asserted that the Texan planters possess decided advantages, in two important particulars, over their competitors in the United States —in the general superiority of the article produced and the excess in the amount of production. The average return on the acre is considerably greater in Texas than

in the States, and the expense of cultivation considerably less. This is owing not more to the greater richness of the soil than to the superior mildness of the climate."

Cotton by this time had already brought Texas into relations with Europe. "Texas cotton," remarks Kennedy, "has been for some time shipped direct to Liverpool in British bottoms, and its cultivation is steadily advancing."

Anson Jones, in writing of the influences that brought about annexation, gives first place to cotton. Referring to the attitude of Andrew Jackson, which was important in relation to annexation, he says: "In 1841 Mr. Van Buren went out of office, and up to that time not a word had been said by General Jackson about the 'necessity of annexation to the safety of the United States.' But, in 1843, England had realized the vast importance of Texas to her manufacturing and other interests. She was made to see that we had cotton lands enough to raise sufficient of this great staple for the supply of the world. Texas was then a rich jewel lying derelict by the way. She was without a friend who thought her of sufficient consequence to take her by the hand and assist her in her accumulated misfortunes. Guided by her interests and by her far-reaching policy, England had resolved to become such a friend. During two years she conferred important benefits upon the country, and in 1845, in conjunction with France, procured an unconditional acknowledgment of our independence from Mexico. This was the secret of the immense change which so suddenly took place throughout the United States on the subject of annexation. What a

short time before was either 'inadmissible, impolitic, or of no consequence,' all at once became 'necessary, imperatively necessary to the prosperity, safety, and to the very existence of the great American Union.' . . . Mr. Tyler was the first to become frightened, and sounded an alarm the chorus of which was taken up by General Jackson and others, and like the music of Tam O'Shanter, it grew constantly, from hour to hour, 'more fast and furious,' until the spell was only dissolved by the consummation of the measure in 1846. Seriously, the attitude of the United States government towards the Texas question, from 1836 to 1843, inclusive (seven years), was one of weak and blind indifference to an important matter; and from 1844 to 1846 (two years), one of ludicrous alarm and haste about the same."

It was cotton that attracted the interest of England, and it was England's interest that alarmed the United States and brought about the move toward annexation. There are no available statistics on the annual production of cotton in Texas during the republic, but in 1848 the crop amounted to 39,774 five-hundred-pound bales. After annexation the annual production increased rapidly. In 1851 it was 45,900 bales; 1852, 62,433 bales; 1853, 85,790 bales; 1854, 110,325 bales; 1855, 80,739 bales; 1856, 116,078 bales, and in 1857 the crop was estimated to be around 200,000 bales. Thus in ten years the annual production of cotton in Texas was increased fivefold. But this was more than doubled again during the next two years, for the census of 1860 placed the Texas crop at 421,463 bales!

This rapid development of cotton production and the consequent increase of the importance of slavery and of the number of slaves in the state decided the political destiny of Texas. Cotton became the basis of its economic system and of its prosperity and consequently the interests of the state became identical with those of the other cotton-growing states. Cotton, therefore, was the economic factor which determined the attitude of the people of Texas on the question of secession.

It was cotton also that formed the backbone of the financial strength of Texas during the war between the There are no statistics on the annual production during the war, but enough is known to say that all the cotton it was possible to produce with the available labor and in the existing circumstances was raised during those four years. Large quantities of cotton were exported through Mexico and good prices were obtained. The fact that Texas was practically free from the conditions prevailing in other Southern states, which were converted into battlefields, made it possible to continue the growing of cotton throughout the war, and the situation of Texas on the border of Mexico made the marketing of the crop much easier than in the other states. Because of cotton the people of Texas enjoyed conditions which, when compared with those of other Confederate states, may be said to have been prosperous.

But the prostration brought about by the war and by the abolition of slavery is reflected in the cotton production statistics of the years immediately following the close of the conflict. The crop of 1865 was not half the size of that of 1860 and it was not until 1873—the

year that Texas was redeemed from radical rule—that the figure of 1860 was attained again. The abolition of slavery radically changed the whole system of agriculture in Texas, particularly as it related to the production of cotton. The system of "cropping" on shares and the tenant system had their birth in the chaotic conditions which prevailed immediately after the war. Some adjustment was necessary, and the growing of cotton is not adapted to wage labor. A contract wage system was tried out in Texas to some extent, as it was in most of the cotton-growing states, but without success, and the pernicious interference of Northern theorists of the Freedman's Bureau complicated the whole Gradually, however, a new system came situation. into being. The large plantation disappeared and the former slaves became "croppers" and "tenants" on small farms. The most important producer of cotton became the farmowner, operating his own farm, with the assistance of his family and such hired labor as he might require, and the former "planter" gradually evolved into either a "farmer" or a landlord. Gradually also white tenants began to increase, and the more intelligent and industrious of the former slaves acquired a little land of their own and became farmowners. The process of adjustment took time, however, and during six or seven years immediately following the war a condition bordering on chaos prevailed in the cotton industry. The crop of 1865 was estimated to be 188,810 bales and for the following seven years the annual production was as follows: 1866, 191,720 bales; 1867, 117,810; 1868, 148,083; 1869, 246,846; 1870, 350,628; 1871,

293,450; 1872, 343,450. In 1873, for the first time since 1860, the crop exceeded four hundred thousand bales, the estimate for that year being 487,771 bales. During the next seven years production in Texas showed a steady increase, and by 1880 Texas had taken its place permanently as the chief cotton-producing state in the Union. Since then that place has been maintained and today Texas annually produces more than one-fourth of the cotton grown in the United States. The largest crop in the state's history was in 1912, when more than four million eight hundred thousand bales of cotton was produced. This was considerably more than a bale of cotton for every man, woman and child in the state.

It must not be supposed, however, that the attainment of pre-war production in 1873 marked the rehabilitation of the farmers' prosperity. Quite the contrary was true. While cotton was almost the only "money crop" which Texas farmers, in common with the farmers of other Southern states, could count on, its production almost to the exclusion of other crops kept the supply so plentiful that it was not profitable. The panic of 1873 affected the farmers quite as much as other classes, but aside from this the farmers had been in distress for some time. At a meeting of the Texas State Grange in 1874, the head of that organization, W. W. Lang, declared that the planters of the state generally were in debt. "Cotton-planting for several years," he said, "has been attended with actual loss of money. The effort of the Southern agriculturists to produce cotton to the exclusion of all other crops has brought distress upon the country. It is a sad condition. The question then

comes to the planter with terrible earnestness: What shall I do? How can I rid myself of the galling slavery of debt? One of the primary purposes of the order of Patrons of Husbandry was to bring the farmers to a cash basis—to buy for cash and to sell for cash. will be your duty to inaugurate some system which will tend to aid the farmer to bring about this happy condition, and if you succeed in breaking up the great cotton monopoly in our agricultural system by diversifying our pursuits and filling our storehouses with bread and provender for man and beast, you will have accomplished a great blessing for our country. Our tillers of the soil have to unlearn many habits of planting under the system of slave labor; they have to forget they ever were planters and learn to be independent farmers." These words were spoken in the midst of depressed conditions in all industries, but they described a situation which has not been cured altogether to this day. In spite of forty years of preaching of the gospel of "diversification" the "one-crop" farmer survives.

However, much progress has been made during those forty years, not only in the matter of diversification, but in better methods of production and in improving the grades of cotton produced. Very recently the desirability of planting better varieties of cottonseed, and of adapting the variety to the soil and climate of each section of the state, has come to be widely recognized, and progress in this direction may be expected in the future. Since 1892 the boll weevil has become the chief enemy of the cotton farmer in Texas. Much effort has been expended, both by the state and federal authori-

ties, toward discovering methods of eradicating this pest, but without success. Hope of eradicating it has been abandoned and for some time chief attention has been given to methods of controlling it and limiting the damage to the cotton crop from this cause. Good progress has been made in this respect, but the boll weevil has had the effect of either permanently reducing the average yield per acre or increasing the cost of production per acre, and to some extent of doing both.

Cotton is grown in nearly every section of Texas. The chief cotton-growing area may be described, in the words of President W. B. Bizzell, of the Texas Agricultural College, as lying "within a triangle bounded by Gainesville, Texarkana and San Antonio."

"The black land counties of north central and north Texas," says Dr. Bizzell, in his admirable work, Rural Texas, "are the largest cotton producers of the state, although counties of unusual yields are rather well distributed over the cotton areas of Texas. Williamson and Ellis are the largest cotton-producing counties. The former yielded 154,355 bales and the latter 127,378 bales in 1920. Milam county was a close third in that year with a yield of 122,309 bales. Other counties of unusually high production are Bell, with an annual yield of 94,667 bales; Hill, with 85,612 bales, and Navarro, with 89,187 bales for the year 1920. Forty-one counties in Texas in 1921 each produced over 25,000 bales of cotton."

The most significant development in the cottongrowing industry in Texas has been the increase of acreage and the opening up of new cotton areas in West Texas and the Panhandle, beyond the boll weevil territory. Fully twenty-five per cent of the cotton crop of Texas is now produced in the section of the state west of Fort Worth. During the past three or four years several hundred thousand acres of virgin land in that section, which had never been under cultivation before, has been planted in cotton. In many of the counties of that section experiments are being made under expert supervision to determine the best varieties of seed for the soil and climate. Greatly increased acreage and production of cotton in the section may be looked for in the not distant future.

Without a doubt cotton will remain for many years to come the chief commodity produced in Texas and the chief item of the state's annual production of wealth. Indeed, it would be difficult to imagine how this condition could be changed at any time in the future. The direction which permanent economic progress for the people of Texas must take in the future, therefore, must be based on a recognition of this circumstance. Improvement of the grades of cotton produced, increased yield per acre and per person, and improvement of the methods of marketing the crop, are all so much to be desired and would result with such certainty in permanent and far-reaching economic advantage to the people of the state that no effort could be regarded as too great which would assure them. That ought to be obvious, though it is not sufficiently recognized by the people of Texas. Moreover, it ought to be equally obvious that the greatest permanent development in manufacturing in Texas must result from a recognition of the

supremacy of cotton among Texas products for all time. Although Texas has been the leading cotton state for more than forty years, the manufacture of cotton goods within the state is still an almost insignificant industry. More than five hundred million dollars' worth of raw material—cotton lint—was produced in Texas during the year 1919, and only about nine million dollars' worth, or less than two per cent of it, was manufactured into finished products within the state. More than ninety-eight per cent of the cotton grown in Texas in 1919 was shipped to other sections, mostly outside of the United States, to be manufactured into finished products, and some of these products were shipped back to supply the needs of the people of Texas.

A recognition that this situation points the natural direction which normal economic development should take in Texas in the immediate future has recently become widespread and the air is filled with talk of organizing cotton mills. During the present year a number of such enterprises, large and small, have been launched, the most important being a project which is now in process of organization at Fort Worth. creation of the Texas Technological College, which is being built at Lubbock, is another evidence of a recognition of this situation, for this institution will have a department devoted to the textile arts. Texas is an empire within itself and it would be a hardy prophet who would attempt to chart its future. But, in view of the absolute certainty that cotton is destined to remain its chief product for many years to come, it would seem that normal economic progress would involve the development of an immense cotton-manufacturing industry within the state in the course of time.

The next most important crop, taking the state as a whole, is corn. Cotton is grown on 79.5 per cent of the farms in Texas and corn on 78.3 per cent of them. Corn is produced in all sections of the state and has formed an important part of the annual agricultural wealth of Texas from the earliest times. In 1869 twenty-three million bushels of corn was produced in the state and in 1919 the production was one hundred and eight million bushels, which gives an idea of the steady increase in production from year to year. Corn, like cotton, will always remain a staple product of Texas.

Three other crops which, while not produced generally throughout the state, are nevertheless of very great importance in certain sections are wheat, the grain sorghums and rice. The chief wheat-producing areas are in north and northwest Texas, the latest development of this crop being in the Panhandle and Plains country. Some wheat was produced in Texas in colonial times and immediately after the war between the states there was a considerable increase in the acreage and the production of wheat. The greatest increase in production, however, was brought about during the decade from 1909 to 1919, the demand created by the World war acting as a stimulus. The Panhandle and Plains country has become important in relation to this crop during the past twenty years, and there are a number of counties in that section now producing more than five hundred thousand bushels of wheat annually, which only a few years ago did not produce a single bushel. West

Texas produces annually about half of all the grain sorghum produced in the United States, the crop of 1920 exceeding sixty million bushels of milo, kaffir and In connection with the production of these grains a cattle-feeding industry is developing in that section which seems destined to grow to considerable importance. Nine counties in southeast Texas produced more than five million bushels of rice in 1919, but the usual annual crop is much larger than that. fifths of the crop is produced in three counties—Jefferson, Matagorda and Wharton. The other counties which produced more than two hundred thousand bushels each in 1919 were Chambers, Colorado, Orange, Liberty, Jackson and Harris. Other gulf coast counties give some attention to the production of rice and as demand warrants it there will be further extension of this industry. The growing of rice on a commercial basis in Texas is of comparatively recent origin, beginning in the vicinity of Beaumont about 1890 and spreading to adjoining counties. The rice-growing area of Texas has produced as much as ten million bushels in a single year and it is capable of even greater production than that. The cleaning and polishing of rice, incidentally, has become an important industry in that section, fourteen rice mills being in operation in 1919, turning out a total product valued at nearly eighteen million dollars.

Texas produced 5,838,879 bushels of sweet potatoes in 1919, two million seven hundred thousand bushels of peanuts, 124,493 tons of sugar cane, four million six hundred thousand bushels of peaches, one million

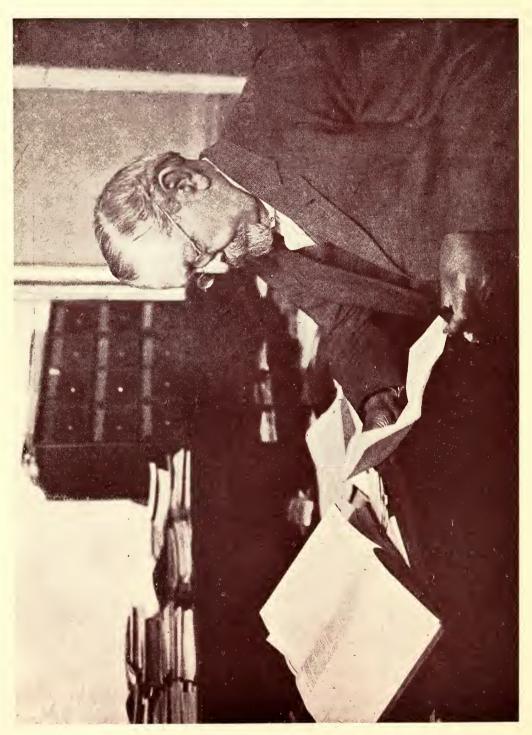
four hundred thousand bushels of other orchard fruits, more than six million quarts of berries, two and a half million pounds of grapes, about a million pounds of figs and more than sixteen million pounds of pecans. As has already been noted, Texas produces more than eighty-seven million dollars' worth of "livestock products." To which statement it should be added that on January 1, 1920, there were 2,225,558 head of swine in the state, valued at more than thirty million dollars, and that there were a million horses and nearly a million mules. The raising of purebred hogs is becoming an increasingly important industry.

Nothing could more strikingly illustrate the marvelous character of Texas, its vast expanse and the consequent variations of its soil and climate, than the recent development of a wonderful citrus fruit region in the lower Rio Grande valley, where oranges, grapefruit and lemons are being grown successfully. lower Rio Grande valley today," says Dr. W. B. Bizzell, president of the Texas Agricultural & Mechanical College, "has more than a million citrus fruit trees on approximately ten thousand acres of irrigated land. This industry is gaining steadily in importance every More than two hundred and twenty-five thousand trees, according to the estimates of county agents and the Rio Grande Valley Citrus Fruit Exchange, are being planted annually. It is estimated that fifty carloads of citrus fruit, exclusive of large express shipments, were exported from this section in 1921." The shipments from that region since 1921 have shown enormous, almost unbelievable increases, so rapidly is

this new industry developing, and citrus fruits will soon take first place among the perishable crops of the state. More than half of the citrus trees in the valley are grapefruit and the rest are oranges, lemons, tangerines and kumquats. It can be said with a degree of confidence that the Rio Grande valley is destined to rival California and Florida in the production of choice citrus fruits, and that in the not distant future.



Col. E. M. House



LAST OF THE OLD GUARD

William P. McLean, Sr., of Fort Worth, Only Surviving Delegate to the Constitutional Convention of 1875, and Member of the First Railroad Commission

## CHAPTER LXV.

## THE ROMANCE OF CATTLE.

Texas is the leading cattle-producing state in the Union. But it is more than that. Cattle-raising, as it has been known in the western section of the United States for more than half a century, with its picturesque cowboys of marvelous skill, originated in Texas. Cattle have been produced for food since prehistoric times, of course, and there was a regularly established meat supply in the United States long before the colonization of Texas. But until Texas was opened up, the raising of cattle was a prosaic business, very much like other kinds of food production, even on the American frontier. It was in the peculiar environment of early Texas, with its vast expanse of unsettled land and its great herds of "wild" cattle, that the cattle business of the West had its birth, and it was out of that environment that the picturesque aspects of the industry developed. The American cowboy, while an offshoot of the Mexican vaquero, and a distant relative of the South American gaucho, is a distinctive type, and as such he first appeared in Texas. Moreover, the western ranges, as far north as the Canadian border, were first stocked with cattle from Texas, and the blood of the Texas "longhorn" still flows in the veins of many of the better types of beef cattle throughout the West.

The first cattle in Texas were brought by the Span-

iards. There were probably a few cattle with the expedition which established the Mission San Francisco de los Tejas in 1690, but, as that enterprise was abandoned shortly after its establishment, it is hardly possible that any cattle were left in the country. expedition under Ramón, however, which planted the first permanent settlements in Texas in 1716, brought into the region about "one thousand head of livestock," consisting of "cattle, sheep and goats." These cattle undoubtedly were Spanish longhorns, and it is fair to assume that they were driven by skilled Mexican vaqueros, for both the longhorn and the vaquero were common in Mexico by that time. The lasso and the branding iron had been tools of the vaquero's trade in Mexico for nearly two centuries when the first Spanish settlements were established in Texas. Cortés, who brought the first cattle and horses to Mexico from Spain, also introduced the first branding irons used on the American continent. As the cattle multiplied and ranchos with large herds became common, the Mexican herders, or vaqueros, acquired great skill in handling them and they developed many of the methods which were subsequently learned from them by the American cowboy, and to which the latter added such improvements as experience suggested. Cattle-raising became an important industry among the Spanish settlers of Texas during the eighteenth century, and Gil Ybarbo, who founded Nacogdoches, was only one of a number of stockmen whose herds grazed in the surrounding country. The vaquero and the "longhorn" were commonplace elements of colonial life throughout the Spanish period.

It has been surmised by some writers that many cattle were left in East Texas by the Spaniards when they abandoned that section and that in this way the "wild" cattle of a later time originated. The preponderance of evidence is against this view, and it seems hardly probable that there were many cattle in the province of Texas when Stephen Austin's first settlers arrived along the banks of the Colorado and the Brazos. "wild" cattle, as shall be seen in due course, were of later origin, and their habitat was in the region south of a line drawn from San Antonio to the coast, most of which was outside the boundaries of the original province of Texas. The circumstance that the little band that waited for Austin's return from the Mexican capital during 1822 and 1823 was forced to the extremity of killing "wild" horses for food is not in keeping with the view that there were "wild" cattle in the region. The truth seems to have been that such cattle as were left in the territory east of San Antonio had been wiped out during the Anglo-American raids between 1810 and 1820, and the depredations of the Indians had greatly reduced the number of cattle around San Antonio. The boast of the Comanches that San Antonio was their rancho applied, no doubt, with equal force to the period prior to 1820 as to that of a later date. However, while the number of cattle had been reduced, the business of cattle-raising still existed and its customs were well established. It is significant that when Stephen Austin drew up a code of civil and criminal regulations to be observed by his colonists, including in it all subjects he thought necessary, the political chief at San Antonio added only two articles to it, and both of these applied to the customs of cattleraising. One regulated the method of disposing of "strays" that might be taken up by colonists, and the other made provision for the registering of brands. This latter article read as follows:

"Each person will choose his own mark or brand, and enter it on record in the office of the alcalde of the district, who may receive twenty-five cents therefor; and a person who has thus recorded his mark or brand shall have preference thereto over any other; and should another settle near him with a similar mark or brand, the alcalde may compel him to alter it."

The fact that Austin had not thought to provide any such regulation is quite as significant as that the political chief should suggest it. It is plain, on the one hand, that the colonists had not yet adopted the practice of branding cattle, and on the other that the practice had been so long established among the Spanish settlers that the political chief regarded it as of prime importance to provide legal regulation of brands. When Austin promulgated this regulation in May, 1824, Anglo-Americans received their first introduction to a custom which was destined to become characteristic of the cattle business in the western section of the United States. It was the first important lesson in connection with cattle-raising that the Americans learned from the Mexicans.

The first cattle brought in by the Anglo-Americans were chiefly milch cows. The Kuykendalls drove several head of cows to the Colorado river, from Natchitoches in 1821 and shortly afterwards William Morton brought milch cows into the region which is now Fort

Bend county. In 1823 Randal Jones went to Louisiana and purchased sixty head of cattle and drove them, without losing a single one, to his place on the banks of the Brazos. In the course of time cattle became plentiful among the colonists. Because of the provision of the law which allowed a larger tract of land to settlers engaged in stock-raising, all of the colonists agreed to embark in this industry, and besides necessity required that they should raise some cattle for beef. Then when the state colonization law was passed and other empresarios undertook to settle colonies, Martin de Leon, a Mexican stockman, obtained a grant under its provisions for the purpose of establishing a ranch His contract called for the settlement of in Texas. one hundred and fifty families in the region of Victoria, which town he founded, and his "families" consisted chiefly of his vaqueros. Smithwick says that De Leon "had a large stock of both horses and cattle, and between the Comanches, who stole his horses, and the Kronks (as the Karankawas were called), who killed his cattle, he had a troublous time of it." An amusing account of a "battle" between De Leon's vaqueros and the Indians, in which a jackass was utilized as the carriage of a swivel gun, will be found in volume one of this work. (See pages 190 and 191, Vol. 1).

In 1833 Almonte reported to the Mexican government that there were twenty-five thousand head of cattle in the department of the Brazos and fifty thousand head in the department of Nacogdoches. Cattle, he said, were driven for sale to Natchitoches. Five thousand head, he reported, were exported that year from the department of Nacogdoches. Austin, about the

same time, reported to the government that the raising of cattle had increased with such rapidity that it would be difficult to form a calculation of their number. The prices for which they sold, he said, would give an idea of their abundance, fat beeves being worth from eight to ten dollars each.

The number of cattle in Texas was greatly reduced during the revolution, an enormous amount being necessary to supply the Texan and Mexican armies with food, and this situation continued during the early days of the republic, when volunteers were still arriving from the United States, and the provisioning of the army was a big problem. In evacuating the country, Filisola attempted to drive across the Rio Grande all the cattle owned by Mexicans in the region between the Nueces and that stream, but in this he was only partially successful. It was the cattle left between the Nueces and the Rio Grande and in the region between San Antonio and Laredo by the fleeing Mexicans that formed the nucleus of the "wild" cattle of a later date. the first acts of the government of the republic of Texas was to extend the boundary of Texas to the Rio Grande, thus taking in this whole region; and all cattle left in it, as well as all other unbranded cattle at large, were declared to be public property. In 1836 and 1837, General Rusk, who was then commander in chief of the Texan army, faced with the necessity of feeding his men as best he might, adopted the policy of sending detachments into the region between the settlements and the Rio Grande to drive up cattle to be slaughtered. After the army was disbanded many of the discharged soldiers who had formerly performed this service, continued the practice of driving cattle from this section on their own account, selling them at Goliad and other places. A considerable trade of this kind was carried on during the three years between the beginning of 1838 and the end of 1840. It was in this way that central Texas and what was then called the western section of the state obtained a supply of cattle for breeding purposes. Goliad was the first place in Texas where pens were built for cattle and was the first "stocker" market in the republic.

For five or six years after this trade had ceased the region between the Nueces and the Rio Grande was practically a "no man's land." The Mexicans remained south of the Rio Grande and, while the republic of Texas asserted jurisdiction over the territory beyond the Nueces, no attempt was made to establish the authority thus claimed. The cattle, therefore, roamed over this vast region, multiplying from year to year, and growing wilder all the time. A few Mexicans claimed nominal ownership of some of these cattle and small herds were marketed at Matamoros, but there was very little attempt to brand calves from year to year and in the course of time the unbranded cattle in the region far outnumbered the branded. By the close of the Mexican war, when the authority of the state of Texas over the territory was firmly established, "wild" cattle had become so numerous as almost to have reached the point of saturation. It was in this region and in this environment that the cattle business of Texas, as it developed during the thirty years between 1850 and 1880, was born. This section became the area of the first big cattle ranches and it was in capturing and herding "wild" cattle that the American cowboy learned his trade from the Mexican vaquero.

An interesting description of the conditions under which the cattle business came into being and in which the cowboy developed is to be found in a recent work by a man who herded wild cattle in this region for Ben Slaughter shortly after the Civil war. The work referred to is Fifty Years on the Old Frontier, by James M. Cook, and it was issued by the Yale University Press in 1923. It is an absorbingly interesting record of personal experiences and presents a vivid picture of Texas and the West during the period in which the cattle business reached its highest development. Cook writes of conditions as they existed about 1870, but it is doubtful whether they had changed much during the previous twenty-five years. The "wild" cattle were the same, and the methods of capturing and handling them had been long established. Cook's description, therefore, can be taken as representative of an earlier date quite as truly as of the time he served his apprenticeship as a cowboy.

"In writing of these wild cattle," says Cook, "I realize that it is a difficult thing to make a large majority even of present-day cattlemen, those who have handled thousands of cattle during the past thirty years, understand what the words 'wild cattle' really meant in southern Texas at the time of which I write. Buffalo or deer could be no wilder. These cattle would not graze on open ground in the daytime, but would seek the densest thickets or lie with their heads on the ground like deer, listening and sniffing, on the lookout for danger of any sort, and ready for a mad rush through

the jungles to a place of safety. . . . These cattle were wild creatures which could not only flee from a human being like other wild animals, but could fight, and would do so as promptly as any grizzly bear I ever saw."

"The Americans," he continues, "who first undertook to handle these cattle for profit found that they had the task, not only of securing a market for them, but of getting Americans who could do a Mexican vaquero's work. . . . This was the time when the real American cowboy, of whom so much has been said and written, was created. Their instructors in the art of cowboy work were Mexicans. Soon there was formed a nucleus of cowboys, added to rapidly as the years rolled by."

Cook's account of his first experience in capturing "wild" cattle gives an idea of how it was done, and also of the hard apprenticeship the early Texas cowboy served. "When we were all ready," he writes, "we entered a pasture, rounded up fifty or seventy-five head of cattle, and drove them to camp. These cattle were not what would have been called gentle in any part of the United States save western Texas. They had been separated from the wild herds, and were 'gentle' to just the extent of having become accustomed to the sight of a man on horseback, so that they could be controlled to a certain extent by riders. They all belonged to the Spanish longhorn breed. It required but little to frighten them into a rage that knew no bounds when they were brought to bay. Longworth (the foreman) told me that this was to be our decoy herd. What that meant I did not then know. . . . Early in the morning of the next day . . . Longworth and his crew,

consisting of ten Mexicans and myself, started on a cow hunt. We took our saddle horses with us, together with the bunch of cattle. . . . We used pack mules and ponies for carrying our provisions and cooking utensils. . . . We went about five miles from the home ranch and camped near an old corral. The corrals in that country were all made alike. A trench some three feet deep was dug in the ground. Strong posts about ten feet long were then placed on end, closely together, in these trenches, and the ground tramped firmly about them. They were then lashed together about five feet above the ground with long strips of green cowhide. The gate posts were very strong, and so were the bar poles used on them. These bar poles were always lashed to the fenceposts with ropes when the corrals contained any wild stock. Strongly built wings were run out from the gate, in order to aid the riders when penning stock. Often these wings were built two hundred yards or more in length. . . .

"The following morning about sunrise we left the corral, taking with us the decoy herd, Longworth leading the way through the thick growth of chaparral and mesquite. After traveling a mile or more he led the herd into a dense clump of brush and motioned us to stop driving it. Then, telling two men to stay with the cattle, he rode off, signaling the other men and myself to follow him. I fell into line behind all the other riders, thinking that the best place to watch the performance. We rode in single file for probably a couple of miles.

"Suddenly I heard a crash ahead, and in less than two seconds every rider in advance of me was riding as if

the devil were after him. My horse knew the work, and plunged after the riders ahead. . . . I gave my horse the reins, trailing the ones ahead by the crashing of limbs and dead brush. I was kept pretty busy dodging the limbs which were large enough to knock me from the saddle and warding the smaller limbs and brush from my face with my arm. . . . All at once I came in sight of one of my Mexican co-laborers. His horse was standing still. The man put up his hand for me to stop, and I did so willingly. He pointed into the brush ahead, and I caught a glimpse of some cattle A few minutes later I heard voices singing a peculiar melody without words. The sounds of these voices indicated that the singers were scattered in the form of a circle about the cattle. In a few moments some of the cattle came toward me, and I recognized a few of them as belonging to the herd which we had brought from our camp. In a few seconds more I saw that we had some wild ones, too. They whirled back when they saw me, only to find a rider wherever they might turn. The decoy cattle were fairly quiet, simply milling around through the thicket, and the wild ones were soon thoroughly mingled with them.

"Every man now began to ride very carefully and slowly, riding in circles around and around them, all except myself singing the melody known as the 'Texas Lullaby.' For all I know, I may have tackled that singing trick with wild cattle for the first time right there, for I was about as excited as the wild cattle were.

"After we had ridden around the cattle for an hour or more, I saw Longworth ride out of sight of the herd, dismount, and tighten the cinch on his saddle. He then

returned to the herd, and one by one the other riders followed his example. Our horses, having had a badly needed breathing spell, were now in shape for another run. After a few moments Longworth rode away into the chaparral, singing as he went. The Mexicans closed in on the cattle, starting to drive them after him, pointing the herd in the direction of his voice when the brush was too thick for him to be seen. I brought up the rear of the herd. We all kept quite a little distance from the cattle, and each man tried to make no sudden moves or any sounds that would start a stampede. At last Longworth led the herd into the wings of the corral, and the wild ones followed the decoys in. The heavy bar poles were soon lashed. We had caught some wild cattle, and I had enjoyed a most thrilling experience."

"The caporal (foreman), in leading a string of riders out to circle into the decoy herd any wild cattle he could find," continues Cook, "would not only keep a sharp lookout for a glimpse of cattle, but he must also be listening for the breaking of brush or the sound of running hoofs. He would keep an eye on the ground for fresh tracks of any large bunch of cattle which he thought he could follow up, until the cattle themselves could be seen or heard. To go 'away around' one of these bunches of cattle after locating them, and then to circle them into a thicket containing our decoy herd, meant that the rider must not consider his future prospects as very bright. It was a case of trusting in Providence and riding as fast as horseflesh could carry one, regardless of all obstacles. It was a clear case of

'go' from the second the cattle saw, heard, or smelled a human being.

"Not all cow hunts terminated in the manner of my first one. Many times during my experience, hunting cattle by the decoy method, we not only failed to make a catch, but also lost the decoys. Some rider, not being able to tell the exact spot where the decoy herd was located, and becoming confused by the many turns the wild cattle had made him take, would dash suddenly right into the decoys at the heels of a bunch of fleeing wild cattle. Then, in less than two seconds, there would be a stampede—which simply meant 'The devil take the hindmost.'

"The only thing that a rider could do in such conditions was to single out an animal and, if possible, catch it with his rope. Failing because of thick timber or bothersome brush, to get his rope on an animal, he had just one chance left: to spur his horse alongside the fleeing beast, catch it by the tail with his hand, and, taking a turn around the saddle-horn, dash suddenly ahead, causing the steer to turn a somersault. The horse then came to a sudden stop, and the rider jumped off and, with one of the short 'tie ropes' which he always carried tucked under his belt, 'hog-tied' the bull, cow, or whatever age or sex of cow brute he had thrown. This had to be done quickly, before the animal could recover from the shock of the fall, or trouble would come to the 'cow waddie' who had caused it. would not be uppermost in the animal's mind at such a time. The animals did not mind running from a man ten or twenty miles, but, when brought to bay by this treatment, their rage would be such that a man would

have to take great and sudden care if he valued his life. It would be horns versus pistol should a strong animal regain its feet before its pursuer could tie it down or, failing, be unable to get back into his saddle. Tying down cattle caught in this manner was a part of the Texas cowboy's trade; and, like a lot of other work in this world, it required practice and plenty of it.

"When animals were thus tied down, they were left until we could go to the home pasture and get some more 'gentle' ones to be used as decoys. We then drove this bunch of cattle to the place where the wild ones were If they had been left for several hours, tied down. their legs would be so benumbed and stiffened that they could not run fast. The tie-rope was then loosened and the animal allowed to get up among the decoy cattle. Sometimes when regaining their feet they would charge at the nearest live object and keep right on through the bunch of cattle and line of riders. It would then be necessary to rope and throw them again. An animal from the decoys would next be caught and thrown and the two dragged together and tied to each other, by a short rope around their necks, with knots that would not slip. This was called 'necking' animals. Sometimes we brought old work oxen from the ranch, to be used for bringing these tied animals to the corral. . . .

"The captured wild ones gave us plenty of trouble when we started in to train them to be controlled by herders. When we had as large a bunch gathered as we dared try to hold with only a few herders, we drove them to one of the large pastures owned by Mr. Slaughter and turned them into it. The fences around these

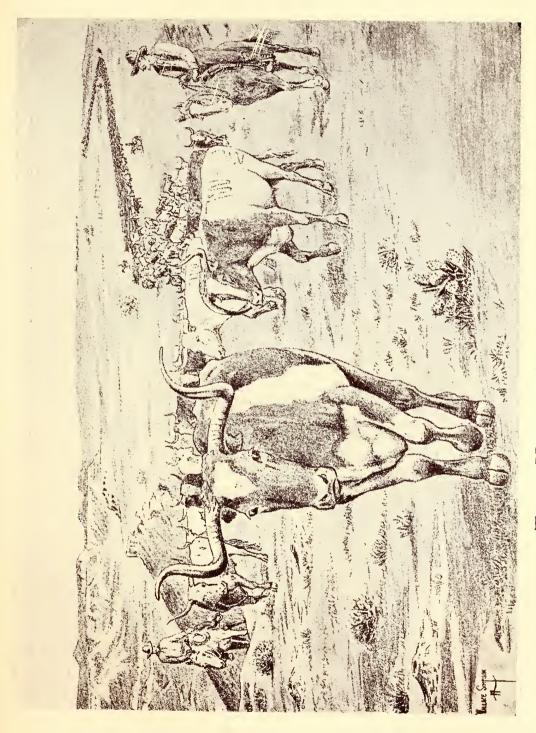
pastures were made high and strong, heavy poles being used in their construction.

"The day following my first cow hunt, Longworth and the Mexicans went into the corral and cut out part of our decoy cattle. The rest were left with the wild ones. The corral was divided into two or three pens, and these cattle were driven into one of them. They were left there to become used to corrals and also to get hungry, so that, when taken out to graze, they would care fully as much about food as about regaining their freedom. The first thought of the decoys left with the wild ones, when taken from the corral, was for something to eat and drink. This helped considerably in holding the wild ones with them. Some individual members in each bunch of wild cattle would usually make a dash for liberty the moment they were released from the corral. These would have to be caught and tied down for a while to steady their nerves. Then each of them would be 'necked' to a gentle one, to be led for a time. This occurred when we turned our first bunch out. . .

"We caught cattle in other ways than by the decoy system. Sometimes we would ride out into the thickets without decoys, jump a bunch of wild cattle, and then, every man for himself, try to catch and tie them. This was fine training for the bump of location, for not only had one to find one's way back to camp after a catch or a failure, but whoever tied down an animal had also to lead a decoy herd or a gentle work ox back to the spot in order to get the captured animal. For a person born without the 'coyote sense' which would take him back to the meal sack when hungry, that country was a mighty poor place to live in. . . .

"There were other methods used in catching wild cattle, when they became scarce in our immediate vicinity or had become so smart or 'up to trap' that a decoy herd would not hold them. One method employed was to hunt them on moonlight nights. This was done in the following manner, when the moon was full:

"We would remain in camp during the day, until about sundown. Then we would all ride to the edge of some one of the little bits of prairie about us. We would generally go a couple of miles or so from camp. Keeping ourselves and our horses hidden in the thick brush, we would wait for the moon to rise. Then it would not be long before we heard a cow low, a calf bawl, or a bull bellow. It was their feeding-time. Sometimes we heard the breaking of brush as they filed out rapidly into the open. Our horses could both see and hear the cattle farther than we riders, and they were trained for this especial work. I think they enjoyed the excitement of the chase. They would seem to know when the cattle were getting close, and at such times they would grow restless and fairly tremble with excitement. All riders, with saddle-girths tightened and ropes in shape for a quick throw, now slipped into their saddles. The moment the caporal thought the cattle were out into the prairie far enough for us to make a quick dash before they could rush back into the dense chaparral, he would give the signal; and, like an arrow from a bow, every rider was off after anything in the shape of a cow brute which he could locate on the prairie.



TRAIL HERD OF TEXAS LONGHORNS
(From a drawing by Wallace Simpson, the Cowboy Artist)

A PRIZE-WINNING HEREFORD BULL

"It was a breakneck game, but, like football, good sport for those who liked it. Sometimes a man made a catch with his rope just as an animal dashed into the timber. It was the custom to tie one end of the rope to the saddle-horn. When a rider had the noose end around a big animal's horns, neck, or body, and the animal rushed around one side of a big tree while rider and horse went on the opposite side, each going at full speed, something had to happen. Either the rope snapped or there was a collision about half the ropelength from the tree. Sometimes a horse was gored to death in these mixups, and a rider had to scramble for dear life.

"When pursuing a single animal, it was the custom for a rider to keep up an incessant imitation of a lowing cow. This was done so that, unless too greatly scattered, we could keep in touch with one another. By this means one of us was occasionally able to aid some other rider, in case he had any spare time after tying, or losing, whatever he had started after."

The methods of dealing with "wild" cattle described by Cook had been perfected by the Mexican vaqueros during the previous thirty or forty years. They were well established customs by the time of annexation, but even at a much later date most of the men employed by the cattlemen were Mexicans. The American cowboy learned his trade in the way Cook learned it, by working side by side with the Mexican vaqueros. From 1838 onward an increasing number of Anglo-Americans adopted the trade and there were already quite a few skilled cowboys when Texas was annexed to the United States.

At the time of annexation there was practically no market for cattle as beef. Some cattle were driven overland to Louisiana and a small number were shipped by steamer from Galveston and Matagorda bay to New The prices these brought, however, hardly justified the expense of shipping them. Cattle were plentiful in all of the Southern states and there was a normal supply in the Eastern states. In 1846 there were assessed for taxation in Texas 382,873 head of cattle, which may be taken as an extremely conservative estimate of the number of branded cattle in the state, and this does not take into account the "wild," unbranded cattle. The ratio of branded cattle to the population was about two hundred and seventy head to every one hundred persons. As a normal meat supply is estimated at eighty head to every one hundred persons, it can be seen that there was an enormous surplus of cattle in Texas and no market for them outside the state. The only commercial value that cattle possessed was in their hides, but even in this respect the market was limited.

An incident which serves to illustrate how plentiful and cheap cattle were about this time also supplies the true version of the origin of a word which now occupies a permanent place in the English language. In 1845 Samuel A. Maverick, a lawyer and real estate man who had settled at San Antonio in 1835, and had taken an active part in the revolution, sought to collect a debt that was owed him by a man at Decrow's Point on Matagorda bay. The bill amounted to \$1,200 and, being without other means, the man paid the debt in cattle, transferring to Maverick four hundred head at

three dollars a head. Maverick did not want the cattle, but, inasmuch as there was no choice in the matter, the man having nothing else of value, he accepted them. He left them in charge of a negro family and returned to San Antonio. The cattle remained on the coast until 1853, when they were removed to Conquista, about fifty miles below San Antonio. In the meantime the branding of the calves had been neglected to such an extent that after seven years the herd still consisted of four hundred head. Three years later Maverick sold the entire herd for six dollars a head. It still consisted of four hundred head. Most of the calves had gone unbranded during the ten years the herd was Maverick's property and in the meantime the matter had become Inasmuch as Maverick a joke among the cattlemen. did not take the trouble to brand his calves, they became the property of the first man who put his own brand on them. Maverick's neighbors began to regard any unbranded calf or yearling as a "Maverick" and in this way the term "maverick" found its way into the language. The New Standard Dictionary defines the word "maverick" as follows: "An unbranded animal, particularly a calf: named from Samuel Maverick, a Texas cattle-raiser, who refrained from branding his stock." It is not precise to call Maverick a cattle-raiser, for he never owned any cattle except the four hundred head he accepted in payment of a debt, as related above.

The incident illustrates how cheap cattle were in the days of early statehood. But meantime they continued to increase. In 1855 taxes were paid on 1,363,688 head of cattle in Texas, and by 1860 the number had grown to 3,786,443 head. The population of Texas

in 1860, including slaves, was 604,215. There were more than six times as many cattle as people in the state, or a ratio of six hundred cattle to every one hundred persons, instead of the normal ratio of eighty cattle to every one hundred persons. However, the situation in the country as a whole had changed. The ratio of cattle to people in the United States as a whole in 1860, including all the cattle in Texas, was estimated at eighty-one head of cattle to every one hundred persons. This means there was a shortage somewhere. The Southern states had a normal supply of cattle, and the same was true of what was then called "the West"meaning Ohio and the adjoining states. The shortage was in New England and the "middle" states. In New England there was a shortage of nearly a million head, and the middle states were more than a million and a half short. A better market was opening up for Texas cattle, though it was a long way off and transportation was expensive. The fact that Maverick obtained six dollars a head for cattle for which he had paid three dollars a head ten years before illustrates how the demand had picked up. By 1860 the price was even a little better, but the cost of transportation kept it from going beyond a certain point. Stephen Austin regarded eight and ten dollars a head for fat beeves as an extremely low price in 1833, and even the increased prices of 1860 were below those figures as a rule.

But the business did begin to improve and the outlook became brighter. With the North and East suffering from a meat shortage, and Texas literally teeming with cattle, sooner or later a way would be found to get Texas cattle to the Northern markets. It was in this situation that men first began to discuss the possibility of driving cattle to the nearest railroad that connected with a central market. Before this problem was solved, however, the war between the states broke out and the market for Texas cattle was shut off altogether.

Those who are interested in the "what-might-havebeens" of history will find an engaging subject for speculation in the question of what would have happened had the war between the states been postponed for twenty Suppose the Democratic party had refused to follow Douglas in abrogating the Missouri Compromise and thus avoided the pitfall of supplying occasion for the agitation which resulted in the rise of the Republican party. And suppose the status quo with respect to slavery could have been maintained until 1880 what would have happened? New England and the Northern states were crying out for beef. Texas had beef to spare—six times as many cows as people. peace had continued would not the way have been opened up to bring the two together? Is it not reasonable to suppose that the stocking of the Western country, clear up to Canada, would have started five or six years earlier than it did, and that the Western cattle industry would have been well developed long before 1880? In that event what would have been the attitude of the leaders of this new industry on the questions that brought about the war between the states? The cattle business has never made use of negro labor. would have been no place for slave labor in it if it had developed before the abolition of slavery. The cattleman, therefore, would have had no interest in the institution of slavery, but he would have had a big interest in the Northern market for beef cattle. What would have been the effect of such a situation in Texas? Cotton, to be sure, would still have been the chief interest of most of the people, but would not the existence of such an important interest as the cattle industry, and of the hardy class of men engaged in it, have had a big influence on the course of events? It is an interesting point, to say the least.

But the war was not postponed for twenty years; it broke over the country in the spring of 1861 and continued unabated for four years. During the first year of the war cattle were driven to the Mississippi river to supply the Confederate armies and for a time it looked as if a market had been found for the Texas surplus. But the fall of Vicksburg and the capture of New Orleans soon cut off this outlet. Texas, therefore, was bottled up and the solution of the problem of marketing its cattle had to await the close of the war.

How many cattle there were in Texas in 1865 can not be estimated. Taxes were paid on 2,741,358 head of branded cattle, but it is more than probable that the unbranded and "wild" cattle were so numerous as to bring this figure up to one considerably greater. It is hardly probable that the total number of cattle in Texas was reduced by one million head during the four years of the war. On the contrary it is even likely that there was an increase. But, whether there was a decrease or an increase in Texas, it is certain that there was a still further decrease in the United States as a whole. The shortage of beef in New England and the Northern states was even more acute at the close of the war than it had been in 1860, and meantime the railroads had

been building toward the Southwest. With a meat scarcity in the country as a whole, Texas was "cattle poor" and the extent of a man's poverty was reckoned by the number of cattle he owned. There was a limited market for Texas cattle, to be sure, but transportation charges were so great that prices were very low. Chicago was already being spoken of everywhere as the big cattle market, for the meat-packing industry had reached the highest development there. On Christmas day, 1865, an event took place which marked a milestone in the cattle and packing industries, for on that day the Union stockyards were opened for business at Chicago! It was destined ultimately to mean much to the Texas cattleman, but for the moment Chicago was far away. There was a limited access even to this market, to be sure, for immediately after the war a trade route was opened up by way of the Gulf of Mexico, New Orleans and Cairo to Chicago. The cattle were loaded on steamers on the Texas coast and taken to New Orleans; from New Orleans they were shipped by steamboat to Cairo, and thence by rail to Chicago. A modification of this route was to drive cattle to Red river and send them to New Orleans by steamboat instead of taking the gulf route. But both of these routes were expensive and offered little future for the development of the cattle industry.

It was in this situation that men began to talk about another possible route. The railroads had been built into Kansas and were moving west. Why wouldn't it be possible to drive cattle from Texas to the nearest railroad point in Kansas? Cattle had been driven north for long distances just before the outbreak of the Civil

Stocker cattle had been driven to California, Nevada, Utah and Colorado, but the demand for such cattle had been small and little interest had been taken in these drives. Now these drives were recalled and the possibility of driving cattle to the railroad in Kansas began to be considered. The question involved many It was whether a herd of cattle could be driven safely through the Indian country north of Red river, to points which were six or seven hundred miles distant from South Texas, the herd being kept intact all the way; whether good grazing and adequate water could be insured; whether, after going through all kinds of weather and swimming creeks and rivers, the cattle could ultimately be brought to the end of the journey in such condition as to be marketable; and finally whether the market would be such that the price received would pay a profit on the trip. Some said it could be done and some said it couldn't. Finally somebody actually did it and soon stories of successful "drives," of safe trails, and of enormous profits made were being repeated all over the cattle section of Texas. It was in this way that the "cattle drives," which rejuvenated the cattle industry and extended it over the western section of the United States, commenced. Emerson Hough celebrated this phase of the history of the cattle business in his novel, North of Thirty-Six, and it has thus been made familiar to a great host of readers throughout the United States.

About the time of the first drives to the railroads another factor entered into the development of the industry which served to make the drives more profitable. It was discovered that Texas cattle could be fattened

on the nutritious grasses of the northern plains and that they could withstand the rigor of the northern winters. It is related that a government freighter, on his way to Camp Douglas, in Utah territory, made the discovery accidentally in 1864. He was overtaken on the Laramie plains by an unusually severe snow-storm, and he turned his cattle adrift, thinking, as a matter of course, they would die of cold and starvation. When spring came, however, the cattle were discovered not only to have survived, but to have grown fat during the winter. The dried grasses on the highlands, from which the wind had blown the snow, had provided them with abundant forage. It is probable that this was not the only instance which disclosed the nourishing character of these grasses. In any event, it was this circumstance which caused the cattle industry of the West to develop along lines which the wild buffalo had followed before the coming of the white man. Texas had been the breeding ground of the buffalo from the earliest times, and the northern prairies had been its feeding ground. in the course of time, Texas became the breeding ground for the cattle industry and the northern prairies the fattening ground.

The years immediately following the close of the war between the states, therefore, witnessed the opening up of a market for Texas cattle and soon many herds were being driven north, either to the railroads or to fattening grounds. The difficulties which these early trail-drivers experienced and the obstacles they overcame have been vividly described in Emerson Hough's novel. The recollections of men who participated in these drives prove that Hough did not exaggerate them.

Hostile Indians and organized bands of robbers made the early drives very dangerous, and the trail-driver was compelled to be a brave fighter from the start. The crossing of rivers with a large herd remained a hazardous task to the last and stampedes, which might occur at any time along the way, caused by the most trivial of unforeseen circumstances, were frequent and extremely costly.

A number of "trails" were followed in driving cattle from Texas to the country "north of thirty-six." The writer pretends to no first-hand knowledge of the various routes, but an account of some of them published in the Southwestern Historical Quarterly for April, 1916, will be of interest. It is from a study of the history of the cattle industry in the southwest by Clara M. Love. "It would probably be impossible to find a complete account of all the trails used by drovers," she writes, "and it would be unprofitable, but there are several trails over which such multitudes of bovines trod their weary way, either to the slaughter pen or the northern pastures for fattening, that mention must be made of them.

"A famous trail over which cattle were driven from 1864 to 1885 began at the gulf coast of Texas, passing northward west of San Antonio; thence to the Red river at Doan's store, in Wilbarger county, Texas. Here it divided into two trails, one leading northward into what is now Beaver county, thence west to the Colorado ranges. The other trail led northward through the Fort Sill reservation, now in Oklahoma. It crossed the Washita river at Anadarko, Oklahoma, trending northeasterly; crossing Canadian river, it led on through Fort

Reno and Kingfisher, thence northward along the route of the railroad which now passes through Caldwell and Washita, to Abilene, Kansas."

Readers of Hough's novel will recall that it was to Abilene, Kansas, that the Del Sol herd was driven. Hough also introduces the "Chisholm trail," named after Jesse Chisholm, who pioneered it. Miss Love has the following to say of the Chisholm trail:

"For a long time there had been a trail through Texas. It reached from the Red river in Cooke county to the southern part of the state. Chisholm forded the Red river at the mouth of Mud creek and followed the creek to its source. Then he proceeded northward to Wild Horse creek, west of Signal mountains, and crossed the Washita at Elm spring. He went due north to the Canadian river, left it and struck Kingfisher valley. He touched the head of Black Bear and Bluff creek, then struck the south fork of the Arkansas, which was crossed at Sewell's ranch. Near Caldwell the course was a little east of north. The Arkansas was crossed near Washita, where the famous 'First and Last Chance' saloon, with its signboard facing both ways, attracted the cowboys. Then he turned northeastward, He crossed the divide between striking Newton. Arkansas and Smoky Hill to the prairies south of Abilene. This trail, including its southern extension, was about six hundred miles long. It was from two hundred to four hundred yards wide. By corrosion it became lower than the adjacent fields. Weary animals had often died on the way, and their bleaching bones furnished a grewsome decoration of the path. Here and there a broken down wagon appeared along the way,

and occasionally a mound rose up to remind the traveler that cowboys were mortal. A writer said that the wealth of an empire had passed over the trail, leaving its marks for decades to come.

"The Kansas trail was originated by Joseph G. McCoy. When he established the station at Abilene, Kansas, he dispatched lonely riders across the prairies to persuade the drovers of every herd which could be found to drive them to Abilene. However, they were not easily persuaded. A group of Californians driving about three thousand head were first to break the northern end of the trail. They went northeast, crossing the Arkansas near the present city of Wichita. In 1868, seventy-five thousand cattle, and in 1869, one hundred and sixty thousand cattle traversed this trail.

"The Fort Scott and Gulf railroad opened a shipping point at Baxter Springs, in southeastern Kansas. The trail leading to it was known as the 'Old Shawnee Trail.' It left the Red river near Snivel's Bend, about forty miles east of the starting point of the Chisholm trail, with which it ran nearly parallel for about one hundred miles. It was joined by a cross trail connecting with the Chisholm trail at Elm spring. It trended eastward on the north side of the Shawnee hills, crossed the Canadian near the Sac agency, then the north Canadian near the Fox agency. From this it passed through the Creek reservation, fording the Arkansas west of Forts Davis and Gibson. It also was worn bare as a city street, and bore the same grewsome decorations worn by other trails. From the Shawnee country it reached Baxter Springs by an eastward path.

"The West Shawnee trail lay between the Chisholm

and the Shawnee trails. It branched off the Shawnee trail near the Canadian river, trending nearly due north till it reached the Arkansas, which it followed into Kansas. It went up the White Water valley, then north across the Cottonwood, along the Neosho and Clark's creek valleys, ending at Junction City, twenty-five miles east of Abilene.

"In later years the Chisholm trail gave off a western shoot which left it near Elm spring. Continuing past Fort Reno into western Kansas, it struck Dodge City.

"The Goodnight trail, often called the Goodnight-Chisholm trail, was the route used as a drive into New Mexico for cattle of west central Texas. Cattle were gathered about Fort Concho (now San Angelo), from which place the drive led west for about ninety miles, across the Staked Plains to Horsehead crossing on the Pecos river, about one hundred miles below Pope's Well. It thus crossed a sandy waste. The lack of water constituted the most serious obstacle on the way, which was a thirty or forty-hour journey. Beeves made the trip in less time, but a mixed herd required a longer period. If a herd started about two p. m., by the next afternoon the animals would be frantic for water. The work of the cowboys was not to goad them on, but to hold them back. The stronger animals forced themselves ahead, the exhausted ones straggling far behind. A few miles north of the Pecos river is an alkali pond into which the thirsty creatures would plunge, unless prevented, and drink, causing death. From Horsehead crossing the drive followed the Pecos, entering New Mexico near Pope's Well. There it divided; one branch struck west along the Delaware river for El Paso, on the Rio

Grande, and thence on to Arizona; the other struck off at the mouth of the Peñasco and proceeded west up that stream and across the divide near Fulerosa, whence a general southwest course was made for Las Cruces, on the Rio Grande. The main Arizona trail led through Arizona Pass. The great drive followed the Pecos nearly to the thirty-fifth parallel, thence across the divide to the Canadian river, twenty miles above La Cinta, then east to the Canadian, due north, entering Colorado either through Trinchora Pass, or by north-easterly divergence through Clifton, across the Ratón mountains.

"The Dawson trail follows the path traversed by John C. Dawson in 1859. He came out of Indian territory into Kansas on the ninety-sixth meridian and drove north about thirty-five miles above the confluence of Walnut creek and the Arkansas river. Then he crossed the Little Arkansas at or near where Sedgwick City now is. This route followed the Arkansas, generally on the north side, to Pueblo. From Pueblo he went up the east bank of Fontaine Qui Brouille creek to the present Little Buttes, where it turned off east to the head of Squirrel creek, then northwest across the divide and down Cherry creek to its mouth, where Denver has since become a city."

Over these and other similar trails Texas cattle were driven in hundreds of thousands every year, from 1865 until the railroads were built into the cattle region of Texas in the early eighties. Ike T. Pryor, of San Antonio, who embarked in the cattle business in the region south of that place in 1871, and who participated

in these drives, estimates that fully ten million cattle were sent out of Texas in this way.

"Fifty-three years ago," says Colonel Pryor, "I came to Texas to cast my lot and future with those who were struggling for existence under the most primitive as well as most dangerous conditions and surroundings. A large percentage of the population, especially in West Texas, at that time lived out of doors or in unpretentious houses. I cast my lot with the men of the plains and prairies who were accustomed to hardships and toil, where nearly every man carried a gun and was more or less a law unto himself. Most of us witnessed many a man die with his boots on. Notwithstanding these surroundings and adversities, these pioneers made good in every sense of the word and are leaving a heritage in words and deeds that in time will brighten the pages of Texas history as no other class of citizens can hope to do. . . .

"The estimated number of cattle that passed up the cattle trail from 1870 to 1890—twenty years—is somewhere around ten million head. It is safe to estimate one-half million a year, because many years there were almost a million head driven up the trail.

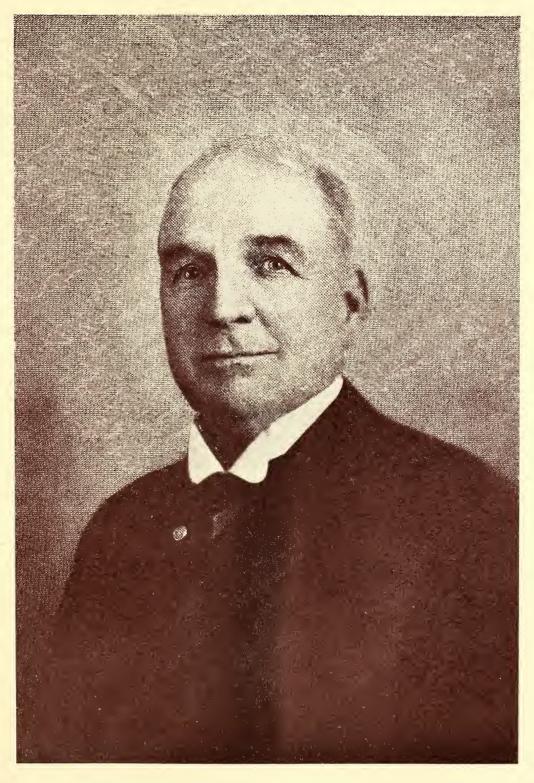
"This half million cattle each year were driven in about two hundred herds of twenty-five hundred head each. It took about twelve men, mess wagon and team, and six horses for each man (or seventy-two saddle horses) to complete a trail outfit to drive twenty-five hundred head of cattle.

"These cattle would travel on an average of fifteen miles or more per day, or four hundred and fifty to five hundred miles a month. Five hundred dollars was a fair estimate of the cash it required to drive a herd of cattle four hundred and fifty to five hundred miles within thirty days. This herd could be driven twelve hundred to fifteen hundred miles in three months for fifteen hundred dollars, or sixty cents per head. This was the way of doing things in the old pioneer days.

"The new modern system via railroads, instead of costing fifteen hundred dollars to move a herd of twenty-five hundred head of cattle twelve hundred to fifteen hundred miles, would cost today from twenty to twenty-five thousand dollars, or around ten dollars a head to ship cattle from the San Antonio section to Wyoming or Montana.

"Think of the vast army it took to handle these drives during the years mentioned. Each year an average of five hundred thousand cattle were moved in two hundred herds. It took twenty-four hundred men to drive these herds and fourteen thousand four hundred saddle horses. . . . The ten million cattle that were moved in twenty years from Texas to the northwest were driven in four thousand herds of twenty-five hundred each. It took forty-eight thousand men to drive all these cattle, unless a man repeated his trip from year to year. It took a total of two hundred and eightyeight thousand saddle horses and quite all these horses remained in the northwest. When driving a herd of cattle to the northwestern states or territories it was the custom to sell the horses after the cattle were sold and delivered; therefore few horses ever returned, while nearly all the men would return and repeat the trip the next year.

"I mention these facts to show the magnitude the



IKE T. PRYOR
A Cattleman of the Trail Days



A PRIZE-WINNING HEREFORD COW

trail business reached before the driving of herds ceased in 1890. This was about the last year of much trail activity, because in 1884 the price began to drop on Texas cattle, both in Texas and in the northwestern states. The large number driven a few years previous to those states and territories, when added to their increase, began to tell on the trade and each year, from 1884, for the next ten years, cattle declined in price almost the full extent of the growth of the animal. In other words the decline in price for ten years was about seven per cent each year. After that cattle were stationary in value for many years. To illustrate—in 1884 stock cattle found ready sale at twenty-five dollars per head, counting everything but calves. In 1893 this class of cattle had declined in South Texas to six dollars per head.

"In 1884 I purchased and put on the trail, destined to the northwestern states, fifteen herds of one, two and three-year-old steers for which I paid twelve, sixteen and twenty dollars respectively. There were approximately three thousand cattle in each herd, or a total of forty-five thousand head. I remember buying some of these one and two-year-old steers for twelve and sixteen dollars out of the Searight & Carrothers herd in Zavala county, and offered to take the entire herd of ten thousand to twelve thousand head at twenty-five dollars per head. They refused this offer. Nine years later, in 1893, I purchased this same herd for six dollars per head and they were driven thirty miles and loaded on the cars at Uvalde, and no calves counted, with a guarantee of twenty-five hundred three and four-yearold steers in the purchase.

"The general decline in price from 1884 was more rapid than the rising prices from 1870. It took four-teen years, or from 1870 to 1884, for stock cattle to increase in price from five dollars to twenty-five dollars per head. It took only nine years for them to decline from twenty-five dollars to six dollars per head."

It can be seen from all this that the cattle business began to boom and expand in 1870, and that this expansion continued for fourteen years. It was during this period that the cattle business spread over the entire unsettled territory of West Texas and the Panhandle, and throughout the vast public domain of the northwestern states and territories. During the same period the meat-packing business expanded also and the meat supply of the country was organized on a national scale. Federal army posts were established along the western frontier of Texas immediately after the war and were maintained for several years in order to keep the Indians in check. But as the cattle industry became increasingly profitable and the demand for animals to stock the northwestern ranges continued to grow, the Texas cattleman moved west, in spite of the Indians. be said that this movement to the west in search of grass led to the subduing of the Indians and finally to their removal to reservations at least a decade earlier than would have been the case had it not been for the development of the cattle industry. Early in the seventies Shad brothers located a ranch in Wichita county, and they were followed quickly by Dan Waggoner and S. In 1876 some cattle were moved into Burk Burnett. the Panhandle and in November, 1877, Charles Goodnight entered that region with a herd of twenty-two

hundred cattle and established himself at the head of Red river. In the course of time the whole of West Texas and the Panhandle was stocked and by 1880 there were 225,857 head of cattle in the Panhandle alone.

Just about the time the cattle drives were getting well started, there came to Texas a young hardware salesman with a vision. This man was John W. Gates, and he brought with him samples of a newfangled thing called "barbed wire." He proposed to induce the Texas cattlemen to use this wire for fences. Gates arrived at San Antonio in 1871, and he proceeded immediately to tell the cattlemen of the advantages of barbed wire as fence material. When he showed the wire to some of them, however, it caused great amusement. In fact, the cattlemen laughed loudly in the young man's face. It was a great joke that anybody should think that the funnylooking wire could restrain a bunch of Texas longhorns. It might be all right for gentle milch cows in the East, but a small herd of longhorns would make short work of it, they told him. Gates took the chaffing goodnaturedly, but it aroused his sporting blood, and so he decided to show them. He proceeded to build a barbed wire fence around one of the plazas at San Antonio and then challenged the cattlemen to bring on a bunch of longhorns that could get out of it. Accordingly twenty-five of the wildest South Texas cattle that could be found were brought forward and driven into Gates's A lot of folks gathered to see the fun, for practically everybody but Gates expected the cattle to get out with very little trouble. However, it didn't turn out that way. The cattle tried to get out, all right,

but they didn't make any progress. During a whole afternoon those wild steers were kept safely enclosed on the plaza and finally the cattlemen were convinced. Thus it was that the future millionaire and plunger, while a twenty-five dollar a week hardware salesman, opened up a market for barbed wire in Texas. During the next ten years barbed wire fences increased with great rapidity and "free" grass began to disappear. The increasing price of cattle in time caused overstocking and there was demand for every inch of grazing land The bonus lands of the railroads within the state. were either purchased or leased by stockmen and finally, during the administration of Governor Roberts, the policy of selling and leasing school and other public lands was inaugurated. So it was that the "ranch," as distinguished from the open range, came into being, and in due course "ranching" became the dominant method of raising cattle.

But there was much friction during the period of transition. In the days of the open range, when unbranded cattle and calves might be found anywhere, the cowboy was paid a specified sum for every maverick he branded with his boss's brand. It was this practice that gave rise to the term "rustler." A "rustler" was a cowboy who "rustled" for mavericks. The barbed wire fences made "rustling" unnecessary, for the cattleman's herd was enclosed, and all the cattle within his fences, whether branded or unbranded, were his property. The cattlemen who owned or leased land, therefore, agreed among themselves to discontinue the practice of paying "rustlers." However, there were cattlemen with smaller herds who did not own nor

lease any land. As long as any "free grass" country at all remained, these men kept up the practices of the open range. Among other things they continued to pay rustlers for the branding of mavericks. In such a situation there were bound to be conflicts. The "openrange" men were against the barbed wire fences as a matter of course, and the farmers, or "nesters," who had moved along the watercourses into the western country, were also against them. There was a bond of interest, therefore, between the "rustlers" and the "nesters." It was in this situation that the struggles known as the "wire-cutting war" and the "rustlers' war" arose. That lawless individuals should be found among the "rustlers" was almost inevitable. In any event the branding of mavericks owned by the larger cattlemen, and even the changing and mutilation of brands, became common. The word "rustler" soon came to be regarded as a synonym for cattle thief. The ranchmen began to make war on the rustlers in protection of their property, and many of the latter were killed. Both the rustlers and "nesters" started the practice of cutting the barbed wire fences of the ranchmen, compelling them to employ fence riders to guard the fences. Fence riders were frequently shot from ambush and the fences cut for miles. A condition of civil war resulted and finally the state government was forced to take a hand to insure order. The fence-cutting legislation of Governor Ireland's administration ultimately cured this situation.

Long before the state government took action, however, the cattlemen themselves found it necessary to organize for their mutual protection. The capture and prosecution of cattle thieves by the state authorities were very infrequent, and cattlemen began to realize that unless they policed the cattle country themselves they would be at the mercy of the numerous desperate characters who pilfered from their herds. Accordingly, on February 15, 1877, forty-five cattlemen of the northwestern section of the state met at the town of Graham and formed an association, which they called the Stock Raisers' Association of Northwestern Texas. This was the beginning of the Cattle Raisers' Association of Its chief object was to protect its members against thieves and to this end it employed its own detectives and rangers. A similar organization was launched in South Texas soon after this, and in 1893 the two were consolidated into the Cattle Raisers' Meantime, in the Panhandle another Association. organization was formed to protect the cattlemen of that section and of adjoining states. It was known as the Southwestern Cattle Raisers' Association. merged with the Texas Cattle Raisers' Association in 1921 into the Texas and Southwestern Cattle Raisers' Association, the present organization. The specific objects which brought these organizations into being have been replaced by others as conditions have changed. The Texas and Southwestern Cattle Raisers' Association now devotes its energies to promoting the mutual economic welfare of its members, giving chief attention to such questions as freight rates, the tariff, and improved facilities for the financing and marketing of cattle.

The boom period of the cattle industry was not one of plain sailing for the Texas cattleman. The pro-

ducers of cattle in other states, such as Illinois, very naturally resented the intrusion of the Texas longhorns from the first, and when it was found that the longhorns frequently spread "Texas fever," the cause of which was then unknown, an outcry was raised against them. There were quarantines and other discriminations against all Texas cattle in several states for a time. When the western states began to introduce other breeds of cattle, this prejudice against the longhorn spread to the northwest. In time it was discovered that the fever was caused by ticks, and the custom of dipping was finally substituted for quarantine. The federal government took a hand in this and established sanitary regulations. When the Texas cattlemen came to appreciate the situation they adopted a policy of cooperation with the federal authorities. State legislation was provided and the process of ridding Texas of the fever tick was begun. This process has been going on for years, and today only a small section of the state, chiefly in Southeast Texas, is infested by ticks. It is only a question of time until the entire state will be free of these parasites.

Hand in hand with the progress of tick eradication has gone the process of eliminating the longhorn. This was begun by introducing high-grade bulls among the herds and sending the longhorn bulls to slaughter. By a system of crossing a gradual improvement of the stock was brought about and in the course of time new breeds were introduced. In 1886 the State Fair was established at Dallas, and the following year the Fat Stock Show was organized at Fort Worth. From humble beginnings these annual exhibitions have grown to be

two of the leading livestock shows in the country. Their influence in awakening the cattlemen of the state to the importance of improving their stock could hardly be exaggerated. The three leading breeds of cattle in Texas today are the Herefords, the Shorthorns, including Polled Durhams, and the Aberdeen-Angus. There also is a growing interest in Brahma cattle. The Texas longhorn has almost completely disappeared, but many of the better grades of the breeds mentioned above contain a strain of longhorn blood. The late Frank S. Hastings, for many years manager of the Swenson ranch at Stamford, Texas, and a leading breeder of Herefords, pays tribute to the longhorn in his interesting book, A Ranchman's Recollections. "I am sure," he says, "that the wonderful vitality of the primitive longhorn, backed by self-reliance and the hustling qualities of the Hereford, blended with the old Spanish blood, has served as a kind of iron basis for the wellbred bovine stocks in Texas today. This vital seed, as represented by its modern beef type, transplanted to the north, stands the rigors of winter better than native cattle. . . . Cortés may have treated the Mexican race badly, but he gave to America, or, more exactly speaking, to the Texas prairies, a heritage of vital cow brutes which has done almost as much as pure breeding for the American cattle industry. . . . We owe the primitive cow a debt. She had much to do with making possible the record that well-bred Texas cattle are registering in the markets, as regards both prices and poundage."

The final and inevitable stage of the development of the cattle industry in Texas was to establish a packing center within the borders of the state. The evolution of the cattle and packing industry has been practically a single process, and each step forward in the one has affected the other. The devising of methods of shipping fresh meat long distances without danger of spoiling was early attempted by the packers, and with each improvement in this respect it became possible to bring the market closer to the cattleman. As early as 1869 Philip D. Armour sent P. C. Cole to Texas to look around for a slaughtering point, but Cole reported that it was too early to go to Texas. He recommended Kansas City as the logical point at that time. Accordingly the next year Armour located a packing house at Kansas City. From the beginning the packing industry spread out into the western cattle country. South Omaha, East St. Louis, St. Joseph, Sioux City and South St. Paul became packing centers in the order named, and finally, in 1902, the Armour and Swift companies entered Texas, establishing large plants at Fort Worth. Fort Worth is now one of the leading livestock markets in the United States and is rapidly growing in importance. As many beeves are slaughtered at Fort Worth each year as were driven north annually during the trail days.

The cattle industry in Texas, in common with that of the whole western United States, has suffered considerably during the recent past from adverse economic conditions. The high cost of transportation, taken together with South American competition, has brought the cattleman face to face with problems which still remain to be solved. "If it were not for the duty exacted at our ports of entry on cattle and beef," says Col. Ike T. Pryor, "there would be little or no sale for

cattle in our market centers because of the fact that South America is well (and I might say over) stocked The cheap water transportation rate on with cattle. refrigerated beef from those countries to our seaports, without any duty on its import, would soon supply all of our seaboard cities with all the beef they could consume, thus taking away from the cattle producer just that much of the demand. When we consider that at least one-third of the population of the United States can be reached with that imported meat by this cheap route, as well as cheap supply, we realize the benefit arising from the tariff to the cattle industry of the United States. The United States can and will raise all the cattle we can consume provided we are furnished with necessary capital and proper protection from foreign countries. Otherwise our industry will be destroyed, with the result that foreign countries will be supplying us, and in the end at exorbitant prices and great profits to themselves."

What Colonel Pryor says here about the cattle industry applies with equal force to another industry which has existed in Texas from the earliest times, side by side with the cattle industry. This is sheep and goat raising. Texas produced more than four-fifths of the mohair grown in the United States, and about half the goats of the country are in Texas. The 1920 census also showed Texas to be in first place among the states in the number of sheep within its borders. About fifteen million pounds of wool and more than five million pounds of mohair were produced in Texas in 1919. This industry has suffered also from high transportation charges and foreign competition. It has been

this situation in the cattle and sheep industries, as well as a similar situation in other Texas industries, which led to the organization a few years ago of the Southern Tariff Association, of which John Henry Kirby has been the leading spirit. It was largely through the efforts of this organization and the untiring zeal of Mr. Kirby, supported by the various industrial organizations, that such protection for these industries as exists today was obtained.

If the "romance of cattle" is not to terminate in a national tragedy—the American people becoming entirely dependent upon a foreign meat supply—it will be because the people will become fully aroused to the importance of permanently solving such economic problems as the cattlemen are now facing.



## CHAPTER LXVI.

## THE WONDER OF PETROLEUM.

THE story of petroleum in Texas is unlike that of any other oil-producing state in the Union. In other states, like Pennsylvania, Ohio, West Virginia, California, Illinois, Oklahoma and Kansas, the story has been one of steady progress from small beginnings. Pennsylvania, Ohio, West Virginia and Illinois there was a steady increase in production from year to year until the peak was reached, to be followed by a steady decline. California and Oklahoma have not yet reached the peak of production, and in each of these states there has been a steady increase. Thirty years ago most oil men would have said that there was not much chance of Texas ever becoming an important producer of petroleum. Twenty years ago some of them would have predicted that it would soon be the leading producer, for in 1905 only one state in the Union produced more oil than Texas. Fifteen years ago the knowing ones would have said that Texas was rapidly petering out as an oil state, for in 1910 California, Oklahoma, Illinois, West Virginia and Ohio each produced more petroleum than Texas. There had been a steady decline for five years and not half as much oil was produced in the state in 1910 as in 1902. And yet only two states in the Union, California and Oklahoma, have produced more petroleum to date than Texas. sylvania has been producing petroleum for sixty-five

years, and yet the total production in Texas to date is greater than the total production of Pennsylvania for that entire period. About eight hundred and sixty million barrels of oil had been produced in Texas up to January 1, 1924, but more than two-thirds of this total, or something over six hundred million barrels, has been produced since 1917. And yet, as has been said, Texas was in second place among the oil-producing states twenty years ago, and the first producing well in Texas was completed during the winter of 1866-67! All of which bears out the statement that the story of petroleum in Texas is an unusual one. It is a story of surprises and sensations.

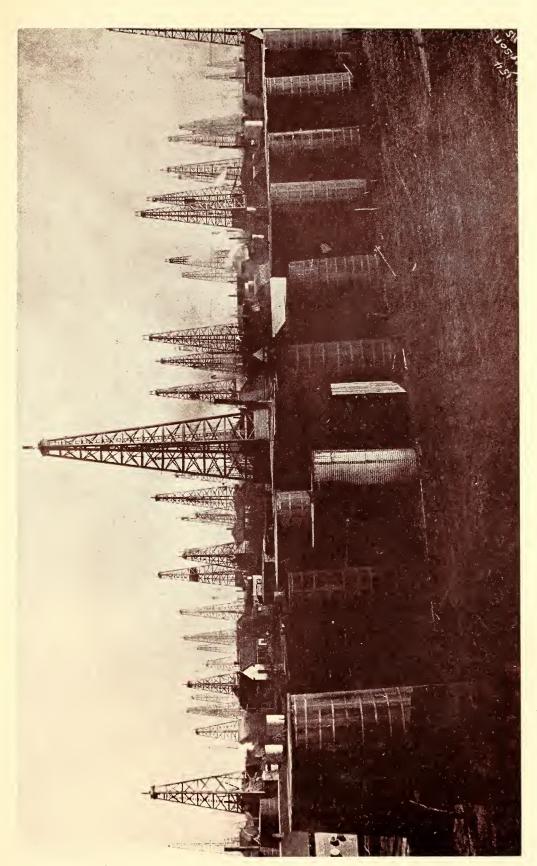
The news of the first oil well in the United States spread over the country—and reached Texas—at a time when war between the North and South was widely regarded as inevitable. It was amazing news. On August 28, 1859, a man named E. L. Drake had drilled a hole in the ground in Venango county, Pennsylvania, and, at a depth of about seventy feet, had found oil in such quantity that forty barrels were being pumped from it in a day! And the oil was selling at fifty cents a gallon! Nothing of the kind had ever been heard of before. This news was followed by stories of other "wells," and finally, in 1861, the astounding story went over the country that "gushers" along Oil creek in Pennsylvania were spouting two thousand barrels of oil a day!

A floating scum of oil on the water of a creek had led to these discoveries. People had seen just such scum on Texas streams and traces of oil and gas had been observed around certain springs in the state. A notable instance, which was remarked upon, was that of Oil Springs in Nacogdoches county, about twelve miles southeast of the town of Nacogdoches. There might be oil beneath the surface there. There might be oil in other sections of Texas. Such was the talk caused by the amazing news from Pennsylvania. the violent controversy over the question of slavery overshadowed everything else and then, in April, 1861, the war between the states broke out and the talk of oil was forgotten in the struggle that followed. After the war, however, the talk was revived, and in the latter part of 1866 a well was sunk at Oil Springs, in Nacogdoches county. It produced oil. At a depth of one hundred feet a small quantity of high-grade lubricating oil was found. There was much excitement and other wells were sunk, but it was soon found that the small amount of oil produced did not justify the expense of sinking the wells. The fancy price of fifty cents a gallon had long been a memory, for two thousand barrel gushers were no longer a novelty in the Pennsylvania fields. So no very important development resulted and soon interest in the Nacogdoches project died down.

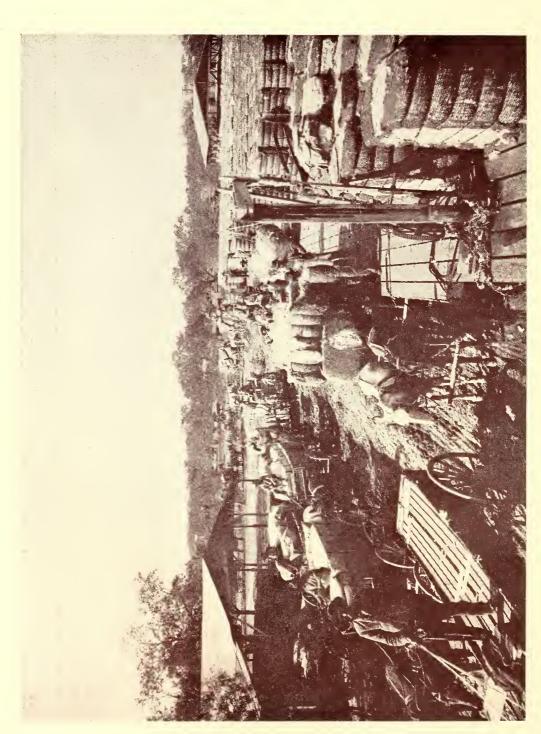
Twenty years passed away before another attempt to find oil in Texas was made, and even then it was only a revival of interest in the question of developing the Nacogdoches field. In 1887 a considerable development was started and during the next three years about ninety wells were put down on two tracts of one thousand acres each in Nacogdoches county. Oil was found at depths ranging from one hundred to two hundred feet, and wells were brought in producing from one to six barrels a day. A pipe-line four and a half miles long, the first to be laid in Texas, was constructed from

this field to the town of Nacogdoches, by a company known as the Petroleum Prospecting Company. The production of this field, however, was small, and was not very profitable. In 1889 Texas was listed for the first time as an oil-producing state, but its annual production was placed at "less than five hundred barrels." Pennsylvania that year produced nearly twenty million barrels and Ohio more than twelve million, so that the Texas production was insignificant. The state remained in this class until 1896, which was the first year a thousand barrels of oil was produced in Texas. The increased production, however, came from an entirely new field, the discovery of which marked the real beginning of the Texas oil industry.

The new field was at Corsicana. In 1895 the municipal authorities of that town drilled a well for water, and at a depth of 1,027 feet a showing of oil was found. The sand containing the showing was cased off and the well was drilled on to 2,470 feet, where flowing Some oil seeped to the surface water was obtained. around the casing and immediately there was great excitement among the people. Under the leadership of Maj. Alexander Beaton, the citizens of Corsicana organized a company for the purpose of drilling a test well near the town. The well was drilled and production amounting to two and a half barrels a day was obtained. From this beginning there was rapid devel-In 1896 a well was brought in that made twenty-two barrels daily, the largest producer in Texas up to that time, and by the close of 1899 a total of six hundred and forty-two wells had been drilled in the Corsicana field. Of these wells, five hundred and eleven produced oil, thirteen produced gas, and the re-



BURKBURNETT DURING OIL BOOM (Showing Forest of Derricks in the Town)



A COTTON YARD AT AUSTIN, TEXAS

mainder were dry holes. It was the Corsicana field that put Texas on the oil map in 1896 as producing more than one thousand barrels of oil annually. Its production that year was 1,450 barrels. In 1897 it jumped to 65,975 barrels and in 1898 it produced 544,620 barrels! In the latter year J. S. Cullinan, who had been bred in the Pennsylvania oil fields, and who was attracted to Texas by the news of the discovery well, erected a refinery at Corsicana, the first to be built in Texas, and thus the oil history of the state was set under way. At the time Cullinan built his first refinery there was a total of only sixty-two producing wells in the field, having an average daily production of fourteen barrels of light oil per well, or considerably less than one thousand barrels a day for the entire field.

In the spring of 1900 two new fields were opened up near Corsicana, one being five miles east of the town, and the other at Powell, about eight miles east, and following this there was extensive development in various directions from Corsicana. The peak of production was reached during 1900, a total of 829,560 barrels being produced that year. Compared with other oil-producing states, Texas was not yet important, but the attention of the oil world had been attracted and prospectors from the older fields were now on the ground. This was the situation when the nineteenth century closed. Before two weeks of the twentieth century had passed, Texas gave to petroleum history its greatest sensation. That sensation was Spindletop!

On the morning of January 10, 1901, a well being drilled by Capt. Anthony F. Lucas on a mound about four miles south of Beaumont "blew in" with such terrific force as to shatter the derrick, and sent a stream

of petroleum gushing two hundred feet in the air! For nine days the well ran wild, no preparation having been made to control such a monster, and at the rate of from seventy-five thousand to one hundred thousand barrels a day the oil inundated the surrounding country. was like a wildcatter's nightmare! Old-time oil men who read the first reports of it in the newspapers laughed at the story. It was preposterous! Oil spouting two hundred feet in the air? Impossible! One hundred thousand barrels a day? Bunk!!! But it was neither impossible nor bunk. And when it dawned upon the oil world that the unprecedented story of the Spindletop well was true there was a rush to the Beaumont district. The roar of the release of the first well on Spindletop, says Isaac F. Marcosson in his recent book, The Black Golconda, "like that historic Revolutionary shot at Lexington, was heard round the world. . . . It annexed Texas, today a vast producing empire, to the oil map."

A feverish drilling campaign and an orgy of specu-Twelve hundred wells, from one lation followed. thousand to one thousand and sixty feet in depth, were drilled on the two hundred acre tract comprising the Spindletop dome during the next four years. The first year three and a half million barrels of oil was produced, the second year the production reached the enormous total of seventeen and a half million barrels, the third year it dropped to eight and a half million barrels, and finally, in 1904, the production was slightly below that of the first year. But in four years more than thirtythree million barrels of petroleum was taken from that two hundred acre tract, not counting about one and a half million barrels which went to waste. However, it should be said in passing that the gross value of this huge amount of oil was not quite eleven million dollars!

The chief contribution the Spindletop sensation made to the development of Texas was that it fixed the attention of the oil world on the coastal region of the state, led to the opening of other fields and brought into being the oil companies which today form the backbone of the industry in Texas. In 1905 the production of the Beaumont field was less than half of that of 1901, the year the Lucas well was brought in. But development of other fields had been so rapid in the meantime that the production of the entire state in 1905 was greater than any previous year. Each year, for five years after the opening of Spindletop, a new field in the coastal region was brought in. First Sour Lake and Saratoga, then Batson, Matagorda, and finally Humble were opened in rapid succession. In 1905 the Humble field, about sixteen miles north of the city of Houston, produced fifteen and a half million barrels, a record which, up to that time, had been surpassed only by the biggest year of Spindletop.

By this time Texas was well launched in the oil business, for, with the opening up of Spindletop and the extension of production in the coastal region, the other branches of the industry, which had started with Cullinan's refinery at Corsicana in 1898, developed rapidly. Cullinan and his partner, the late Walter B. Sharp, made a contract for a supply of oil with ex-Governor James S. Hogg and James W. Swayne, who owned producing wells on Spindletop, and out of that the Texas Company developed. In like manner the Gulf, the Humble and the Magnolia companies, which, with the Texas, constitute the dominant group in the state today, came into

being during this period. In discussing the consequences of Spindletop, Marcosson says that the field "mobilized a group of men who made Texas oil history." "They included," he continues, "not only Cullinan and Sharp, but also W. S. Farish, R. L. Blaffer, John Markham, Jr., Edward Simms, Underwood Nazro, F. A. Leovy, Walter Fondren, R. S. Sterling and Howard H. Hughes. Each of these individuals, and I have listed only a few, became conspicuously identified in oil production in a big way. . . . It is a striking fact that the four major companies of Texas—the Gulf, Texas, Humble and Magnolia, some of them with international ramifications—all had their inceptions at Spindletop."

It is not the writer's purpose to deal with the development of these or other individual companies in Texas, but to give a résumé of the development of the industry as a whole. Having been firmly established as part of the national industry of producing and refining petroleum, the Texas oil industry declined in importance, compared with other producing states, after the peak of production in the coastal region was reached in 1905. Texas production in 1906 was reduced from 28,136,189 barrels of the previous year to 12,567,897 barrels. In 1907 it fell off about two hundred thousand barrels more, and in 1908 it declined still another million barrels. In 1909 it decreased still further, the production that year being 9,534,467 barrels, and in 1910 it dropped to the smallest production in nine years, the total for the state being only 8,899,266 barrels. such a rate of decline, if it continued, only a few years would have been required to bring the Texas industry to a position of comparative unimportance. No new producing areas of great moment were discovered during

this period of decline, and it is absolutely necessary that new production should be found to maintain anything like a standard in the oil business.

It should be remarked, in this connection, that an understanding of this fact, and an appreciation of all that it means, are essential to a full comprehension of the development of the petroleum industry in Texas. There is probably no other business which requires so constantly such a large amount of liquid, working capital as does the oil business. The search for new production, by the drilling of new wells in what are considered to be proven fields and by discovering new fields, involving a risk of great amounts of capital, must go on all the time. There is little choice about the matter, for the capital already tied up in the industry would be imperiled constantly if new production were not obtainable. The big oil company must make a choice of risks, and frequently it is compelled to take both risks at the same time.

A few facts about the Texas industry will serve to illustrate this point. Much has already been said in this narrative about the enormous production of certain fields and about wells running into thousands of barrels a day each. And yet, up to January 1, 1924, the total production of Texas since the earliest times was about twenty-seven thousand barrels for each well drilled! Approximately 867,000,000 barrels of petroleum had been produced in Texas up to that date, and it was necessary to drill approximately thirty-two thousand wells to obtain that production. During the four years from 1919 to 1922, inclusive, a total of 5,829 dry holes were drilled in Texas! And about three-fourths of those dry holes were drilled in regions which were re-

garded as proven oil fields. According to the official figures of the United States Geological Survey, the average daily production of the 13,300 producing oil wells in Texas, on December 31, 1921, was only 23.3 barrels. These facts give one an altogether different idea of the character of the oil industry from that which is usually held by the average man.

Recently a writer in the Bulletin of the American Association of Petroleum Geologists made an interesting calculation which has a direct bearing on the development of the oil industry in Texas. He estimated that the cost of drilling twenty-three thousand wells in the United States during the year 1922, when added to other costs of producing the 550,000,000 barrels of oil that was brought to the surface that year, was fifty-nine million dollars in excess of the value of the oil.

"There were approximately twenty-three thousand wells drilled in the United States during the year 1922," he writes. "Accurate figures as to the cost of these can not be obtained. One company operating exclusively in Oklahoma, with average drilling conditions, drilled, scattered over different parts of that state, twenty-four wells in 1922, costing a total of \$552,232, or \$23,022 per well. In these wells, it drilled a total of 67,844 feet of hole, or an average of 2,827 feet per well, and at an average cost of \$8.14 per foot. This included labor, fuel and water, casing, rigs, etc.

"Oklahoma operators drilled by far the greatest number of wells in 1922. In some states the drilling was at a less depth, and less costly, but in others, such as California and Texas, the costs were much greater. It is probably a fair assumption that in using costs in Oklahoma as an average there will be no exaggeration

in the results, and by doing so and using the average of the one typical company cited above, we have the following figures: Total number of wells drilled in the United States in 1922, estimated, 23,000; total number of feet drilled in these wells, estimated, 65,021,000; total cost of drilling, estimated, \$529,270,000; cost of lease equipment, expenditures, etc., estimated, \$50,-000,000; cost of lifting 550,000,000 barrels at 30 cents, estimated, \$16,500,000; lease bonuses paid, etc., estimated, \$100,000,000; lease rentals paid to landowners, estimated, \$15,000,000; value of one-eighth royalty to landowners, estimated average price for oil produced at \$1.35 per barrel, \$92,562,000; overhead charges on all field work and equipment of five per cent, estimated, \$30,941,000; this gives a total cost of the 550,000,000 barrels of crude oil produced in the United States in 1922, estimated, \$834,273,000.

"An average of all markets in the various fields brings the total value of the oil produced in the United States in 1922 to approximately \$775,000,000, which amount the producer would receive for this oil that cost him \$834,273,000, estimated as above, and the net result is a deficit in the producing end of the oil business for the year 1922 of over \$59,000,000. These figures are probably not exaggerated, although they are necessarily estimates. They apply strictly to the production end of the business. Some companies and individuals have made a profit from the production of oil in 1922, but many others have lost money. The cost of the barrel of oil produced is the average of the entire cost of all operations and the things incident thereto."

This is no new situation in the oil industry. The necessity of obtaining new production, even to keep from

going backward, has been a condition of doing business since the industry's inception. It is in the light of this fact that the steady decline of production in Texas during the five years from the beginning of 1906 to the close of 1910 must be regarded in order that one may appreciate its significance. That five-year period was a time of increased prices. In no year of the period was the price of petroleum less than twice the price per barrel that prevailed in 1905. It was a time of steady expansion and increased production in the United States as a whole. In 1907 the production of the United States was one hundred and sixty-six million barrels as compared with one hundred and thirty-four million in 1905. In 1908 it jumped to one hundred and seventy-eight million, in 1909 to one hundred and eighty-three million, and in 1910, the year Texas dropped down below nine million barrels, the United States as a whole for the first time passed the two hundred million mark for a single year, the production being more than two hundred and nine million. of which means that it was a period of increased demand for petroleum and petroleum products. The automobile was getting popular and unheard-of amounts of gasoline were necessary to supply the demand, and there was a corresponding increase in the demand for all other petroleum products. And yet during this five-year period of increased prices, of expansion and increased production and of increased demand for petroleum products in the country as a whole, the Texas oil industry declined.

It was not because the effort was not made to increase production in Texas. Many dry holes were drilled in different sections of the state, including the proven fields, in an effort to find more oil, and much capital was expended. But down to the close of 1910 production declined steadily. With the industry expanding at such a rate in other sections of the country, it is no wonder that knowing oil men began to say that Texas was petering out as an oil-producing state.

Up to 1910 practically all the oil produced in the state came from the coastal region and the Corsicana and adjacent fields. In 1901 a showing of oil was found in Béxar county, but there was no immediate development, and in 1904 the first oil was found in North Texas, when shallow sands were discovered in the Petrolia field in Clay county. In 1907 a few small wells were developed near Jacksboro in Jack county, directly south of Clay county. There was plenty of oil to the west of Clay, in Wichita county, but this had not yet been discovered. Practically all the development during the period was in extending the fields of the coastal region. The Dayton field in Chambers county was opened in 1905, the Piedras Pintas field in Duval county was discovered in 1907, the Markham field in Matagorda county, in 1908, and finally on June 2, 1908, the first oil in the Goose Creek field, twenty-five miles east of Houston, was brought to the surface. All of these fields were in the coastal region.

In 1910 a field, which produced oil for several years and then petered out, was opened up in Marion county, and two hundred and fifty thousand barrels of the production of that year was from this new field. Then, in 1911, workmen drilling for water on the ranch of W. T. Waggoner, millionaire cattleman, in the western part of Wichita county, discovered oil instead. This was the beginning of the Electra field, it being so named in

honor of Waggoner's daughter. It produced eight hundred and ninety-nine thousand barrels of oil during 1911, and thus checked the decline of the state's production, which had been constant for five years. Without the production of the Electra field and that of the Marion field, which was brought in the previous year, there would have been a falling off of about eight hundred thousand barrels. Instead there was an increase, the first in five years. The Electra field was rapidly developed and there was other development in Wichita county during 1912, which brought the county's production for that year to 4,227,104 barrels and put the state's total for the year up to 11,735,057. This placed Wichita county on the map as an oil producer, for no other field in the state produced half as much oil that year as the Wichita-Electra field. From that point there has been a steady increase in production in Texas, due chiefly to the opening up of new fields outside the limits of the coastal region.

In 1913 the Orange county field was opened up for the first time, though its big production was not to come until several years later, and in the same year there was a new discovery in Northwest Texas, the Moran field in Shackelford county. In 1915 there were a number of new developments, the most notable of which was that of the Thrall field in Williamson county. Other new fields were the Strawn in Palo Pinto county, the Vernon field on the Waggoner ranch in Wilbarger county, the Somerset and the Alta Vista fields in Béxar county, the Mill Creek field in Washington county and Damon Mound in Brazoria county. None of these, however, were large producers.

In May, 1916, a twenty-barrel well was completed

southeast of Santa Anna in Coleman county, and in the same month a small amount of oil was discovered at a depth of 2,740 feet on the W. L. Carey farm, one mile south of Caddo in Stephens county. In October of that year oil was found in considerable quantities at 3,150 feet on the Parks ranch, seven miles southeast of Breckenridge. The Caddo pool's most notable boom came two years later, when the Texas Company's Sandidge well was brought in with an initial flow of one thousand barrels a day. A minor discovery of 1916 was at Tracy in Milam county, where in drilling for water small quantities of oil were found at from three hundred to four hundred feet. This field has since been extended to the Rockdale-Minerva district, where wells of much greater depth are producing from eight to fifteen barrels of high grade oil daily.

This brings the record of new fields down to the beginning of 1917. Meantime there had been great increases in production in some of the fields in the coastal region. In 1914 the production of the Sour Lake field jumped from an annual production of something over a million barrels to the enormous total of 5,209,208 barrels, and in 1915 the Humble field jumped from 2,799,458 barrels, which it produced the previous year, to 11,061,802 barrels. The Wichita county fields continued to show a high level of production, their total in 1916 being 7,837,386 barrels. But even yet the total production of the state was below that of ten years before. The production of the whole of Texas in 1916 was 27,644,605 barrels, as compared with 28,136,189 barrels in 1905. But Texas was about to give the oil world another sensation—or rather several of them for it was in 1917 and 1918 that the Ranger and Burkburnett fields were discovered and that Goose Creek jumped from a production of 397,391 barrels to more than seven million barrels!

The story of the discovery of the Ranger field is a story of the faith of one man in his own judgment. W. K. Gordon was sent to Texas to survey the route of a railroad, and while engaged in this work discovered coal in Palo Pinto county, which was subsequently developed by the Texas & Pacific Coal Company. But he also became convinced that there was oil in the region just over the Palo Pinto county line, in Eastland county, near the town of Ranger. He urged the Texas & Pacific company to lease a large acreage in the region and, having obtained the company's consent, started a leasing campaign among the farmers. His activities caused talk, of course, and this gave the people of the town of Ranger an idea. If the Texas & Pacific company was going to drill for oil, why not have the test made near the town? Accordingly representatives of the citizens of Ranger proposed to Gordon to give the company eighteen thousand acres if it would agree to put down some test wells. Gordon accepted the offer and the first well was begun on the farm of J. H. McClesky, about a mile from the town. When the well had reached a depth of about thirty-two hundred feet, the New York owners of the company ordered Gordon to stop drilling and abandon the project. They had concluded that if no oil had been found at that depth there probably was no oil to be had there, and the best thing to do was to pocket their loss and forget it. But Gordon was so thoroughly convinced that there was still a chance to obtain oil that he disregarded the order to stop drilling and continued on his own responsibility. Two hundred feet further down oil was found and an eighteen-hundred-barrel well was the result. This was in April, 1917. In 1918 the Ranger field produced 3,784,434 barrels of oil, and during the next year the production of Eastland county was more than twenty-two million barrels. At the same time development spread into the adjoining county of Stephens, and toward Breckenridge, and the production there in 1918 was more than ten million barrels. In 1919 the Stephens county production increased to 23,852,050 barrels and in 1920 to 31,037,710 barrels.

The Burkburnett field, which was discovered in 1918, was the result of a woman's "hunch." S. L. Fowler owned a farm near the town of Burkburnett which had proved rather unprofitable. He talked about selling it, but his wife always opposed the sale. One day he came home and announced that he had found a buyer, and that he was determined to sell. Whereupon his wife begged him not to go through with the deal without drilling at least one well for oil. She said that money could be raised for this purpose by organizing a company among their friends. Fowler agreed and the task of raising the money was begun. It was a tedious task, for nobody was willing to risk much money in this way, and there was not very great faith in Mrs. Fowler's "hunch." The shares in the syndicate were peddled about in small amounts, but by constant solicitation enough was raised to keep the drill going. The project was ridiculed in a good-natured way, and some wag dubbed the well "Fowler's Folly." It turned out to be a very profitable brand of folly, however, for, when the well came in, its flush production was sixteen hundred barrels a day, and the folks who put up the money to finance it received one hundred and twenty dollars for

every dollar they invested. The Fowler well started a frenzied oil rush to Burkburnett. Soon wells were going down not only on every farm in the neighborhood, but in every backyard in Burkburnett itself. The town became a forest of oil derricks, for the first of these wells drilled produced oil and it developed that the town was directly over a pool of petroleum. Within a year's time the Burkburnett field was producing one hundred and twenty thousand barrels of oil a day.

It was the discovery of the Ranger and Burkburnett fields that started the fever for speculation in oil immediately after the close of the World War and that gave an army of fake promoters the opportunity to fleece the public out of hundreds of millions of dollars. tivity of the fake promoters must not in any way be confused with that of legitimate oil companies. The fake promoter seizes upon whatever is uppermost in the public mind at the moment and the excitement caused by the Ranger, Burkburnett and similar discoveries directed people's attention toward oil. The time was auspicious for such an epidemic of folly on the part of the public, for a reaction from the economy practiced during the war was inevitable. It was a time of extravagance and reckless spending, and a great number of people were owners of Liberty bonds, which they had purchased from motives of patriotism, and which supplied them with funds for speculation. If the oil discoveries had not been made, it is more than probable that the fake promoters would have found some other way to take advantage of the situation. The activities of the fake promoters gave both Texas and the oil industry some unsavory advertising which was wholly undeserved. The promoters, for the most part, were old hands at the game. Very few of them were Texans or in any way identified with the legitimate oil industry. When the excitement passed, the activities of the promoters ceased. A few were caught in the mesh of the federal government's net and sent to prison, but most of them soon turned their attention to other industries. Oil was no longer in the public eye and the federal government's prosecutions made oil rather difficult as bait for the unwary.

It is not within the province of this work to continue in detail the story of the expansion of the oil-producing territory of Texas. The development which followed the discoveries of 1917 and 1918 put Texas in third place among the oil-producing states of the Union. Since then the most important new discoveries have been the Mexia field in Limestone county, which was discovered in 1921 by Col. E. H. Humphreys, and the deep oil in the Powell field, which was discovered in the spring of 1923. This last named field reached a daily production of three hundred and sixty thousand barrels, which is the record for any one field in the United States. In 1919 the production of the state of Texas increased to 85,-312,000 barrels, as compared with 38,750,031 barrels the previous year. In 1920 the state's production was 96,868,000 barrels; in 1921 it increased to 111,969,-575; in 1922 it reached 117,106,545 barrels, and for 1923 it was 128,415,000 barrels. Only two other states in the Union—California and Oklahoma—have produced more oil than Texas since 1919. What this means may be judged from the fact that these three states together produced 333,400,000 barrels of oil in 1921, whereas the total production of the United States that year was 472,183,000 barrels. Among the other oilproducing states there was not one that produced as much as forty million barrels of oil that year, and there was only one that produced more than eleven million barrels. Texas, therefore, is one of the few great oil-producing areas of the world, for the only other area comparable to Texas, California and Oklahoma, is Mexico. These four areas taken together produced nearly seventy per cent of the world's oil in 1922, and Texas contributed more than one-seventh of the world's production that year. Thirty years ago less than five hundred barrels of oil a year was produced in Texas!

Hand in hand with this immense development of production in Texas has gone the development of the refining end of the industry. Beginning with that modest refinery which Cullinan built at Corsicana in 1898, there has been steady progress, until today, twenty-six years later, Texas stands in first place among the states of the Union in complete refining capacity and in refin-Considerably more than one billion ing investments. gallons of gasoline is turned out of Texas refineries annually. Besides this, more than two billion gallons of gas and fuel oils is produced, more than five hundred million gallons of kerosene, nearly three hundred million gallons of lubricants, more than fifty million pounds of wax, more than ninety thousand tons of oil coke and more than four hundred thousand tons of asphalt! Jefferson county, Texas, in which Spindletop is located, has become the biggest oil-refining center in the world.

There are approximately 7,700 miles of pipe line in Texas, most of which is owned by the Gulf Pipe Line Company, the Humble Pipe Line Company, the Texas Pipe Line Company, the Sun Pipe Line Company, the

Sinclair Pipe Line Company, the Humphreys Pure Oil Pipe Line Company and the Prairie Pipe Line Company.

The economic importance of the development of the oil industry in Texas, however, is not to be judged by the amount and value of its products alone. During the past twenty-five years it has been almost the chief factor in the immense growth of the state. There are many cities and towns in Texas which owe their growth and present size and wealth chiefly to oil. It would be impossible to estimate the increased values of different kinds which have been brought into being as a direct result of the development of the oil industry, but it is a mild statement to say that those values will aggregate considerably more than the total value of all the oil that has been produced in the state since the first well was sunk. An idea of this can be had by considering the taxable values in the state. Thirty-seven counties, out of a total of two hundred and fifty-seven counties in the state, are classed as oil-producing or oil-manufacturing In 1922 those thirty-seven counties paid counties. 48.27 per cent of all property taxes, and the remaining two hundred and twenty counties paid 51.73 per cent. The development of the oil industry, to be sure, did not create all of this difference in taxable values. But there can not be the slightest doubt that, taking the thirtyseven counties as a whole, the determining cause of the greater amount of taxable values within their borders, as compared with the other two hundred and twenty counties in the state, has been the oil industry. A single illustration will suffice to make clear how this process has worked. In 1917, before oil was discovered in the Ranger field, the assessed valuation of all property in

Eastland county was eleven million dollars. In 1920 the assessed valuation of all property in Eastland county was fifty-eight million dollars. The values of the county were multiplied by more than five in three years!

One feature of the Texas oil industry which is notable is that it is not "Standard Oil." Very much the greater proportion of the oil business in Texas from any standpoint - producing, manufacturing, transporting and marketing—is done by companies in no way connected with the Standard. This is not said in disparagement of the Standard Oil Company, for the writer fully appreciates the importance of large accumulations of capital in the development of the industries of the country and recognizes the important part played by the Standard Oil Company in the development of the petroleum industry in the United States. But Texas produced its own big companies, and while in a few instances certain of these companies have become identified with the Standard, it is still true that by far the greater part of Texas oil is produced, transported, refined and marketed by companies having no such connection and a great portion of it by comparatively small companies.

The mention of the Standard Oil company brings to mind a feature of the development of the oil industry in Texas which should be noted in passing. During one period of its history the industry was compelled to face a degree of prejudice on the part of the public which was unwarranted by the fact and which placed many difficulties in the path of the men who were developing it. A detailed account of this phase of the story does not come within the province of this work. But the writer may be permitted to say in passing that much of this prejudice was due to a lack of knowledge on the part of

the public with respect to the true character of the industry, and with the dissemination of information much of this prejudice has disappeared. Some of it still remains, however, and the activity of the fake promoter has served to increase it in certain directions. There has also become apparent of late a tendency to burden the industry with taxation, in addition to the ordinary and special taxes which it pays. It seems to be the honest belief of some very good men that the industry can stand almost any degree of taxation without injury either to it or to the public. Obviously, this could not be true of any industry, and certainly it is not true of the oil industry. Like every other business, it should pay its just share of the taxes. But when any industry, especially one with such wide ramifications as that of prospecting for, producing, refining, transporting and marketing a necessity like petroleum, is overtaxed an additional cost of doing business is thus created which must serve to introduce an alien economic factor in the conduct of the profitable operation. The petroleum industry has been the chief influence in increasing the prosperity of Texas during the past quarter of a century and, aside from this influence, it is in itself an important factor in the prosperity of the people at all times. By far the greater portion of the wealth which it produces annually is distributed in Texas and goes to affect the prosperity of every other line of endeavor. It distributes in wages alone considerably more than one hundred million dollars a year, and half as much again is distributed in other Taking 1922 as a typical recent year it will be found that during that year it paid \$113,943,000 in wages, \$4,103,500 in lease rentals, \$24,752,500 in lease bonuses, \$16,000,000 in royalties, and, in addition to its

ad valorem taxes, it paid \$3,754,000 in special taxes. And 1922 was not a very profitable year for the industry as a whole.

All of this is said in passing, but it was necessary to say it in presenting an impartial account of the development and present standing of the oil industry in Texas. Texas is bound to be an important producer of petroleum for many years to come. Whether its development in the future will be comparable with its past is, of course, problematical. How long it will continue to maintain its present position cannot even be guessed. The time must come, however, when the task of maintaining production by the discovery of new sources of supply will become more costly, for the percentage of dry holes must some day be much greater than it has been to date. The large investment of capital in the existing industry insures that development, in the face of such rising costs, will continue to a maximum degree. There may still be Spindletops, Rangers, Burkburnetts, Mexias and Powells undiscovered in Texas, for the science of geology has not yet progressed to the point where it can assert or deny such possibilities. On those possibilities much capital must be gambled in the years to come. If it were not certain that the search will continue and that the capital will be available it would then be inevitable that the Texas oil industry would reach its peak in due course and enter its period of decline. But the peak is not yet in sight.

## CHAPTER LXVII.

## SOME OTHER INDUSTRIES.

Cotton, petroleum and livestock overshadow all other commodities in the story of the economic development of Texas, but other industries have contributed their share. Next to these three leaders comes lumber and, affecting all of them, because of the direct relation of adequate transportation to all economic progress, the railroads have an important place in the story. In the total value of finished products the cottonseed oil mills and the flour mills are next in order to the oil refineries and packing houses. But both of these are adjuncts of agriculture and the great bulk of the value of their products is in the raw materials produced on the farm. The cottonseed oil mills turned out products valued at \$125,192,000 in 1919 and the products of the flour mills and grist mills the same year were valued at \$102,112,000. But only \$18,440,000 of the former amount and only \$9,665,000 of the latter represented value added by manufacture. Nearly six-sevenths in the one case and more than nine-tenths in the other represented the value of the raw material, and all of this value was included in the billion dollar crops of that year. Lumber, on the other hand, was second only to petroleum-refining in value added by manufacture, and it was first among the manufacturing industries in the number of men employed and the number of establishments in the state.

In addition to petroleum there are other mining

industries in the state, but they do not approach petroleum in importance. A bulletin of the census bureau for 1919 says: "The mining industry second in importance in Texas in 1919 was the production of sulphur in Brazoria and Matagorda counties. Texas ranked first in the United States in this mining industry, statistics for which are not presented, in order to avoid disclosure of individual operations. The industry third in importance was the mining of coal, four counties in central northern Texas and two in southern Texas reporting production of subbituminous coal, and twelve counties in eastern and central Texas reporting the production of lignite. Other industries of minor importance in the state, but in which Texas ranked high among the producing states, were quicksilver and fuller's earth, in each of which Texas ranked second; and asphalt, in which it ranked third."

Among the manufacturing industries more than fifty-nine per cent of the total value of the manufactured products of the state and more than forty-one per cent of the value added by manufacture were contributed in 1919 by the oil refineries, the packing houses, the cottonseed oil mills, the flour mills and grist mills and the lumber mills. The other manufacturing industries of the state include a long list of varied character. The census bureau gives the following industries and the total value of their products: Cars and general shop construction and repairs by steam-railroad companies, \$41,487,000; foundry and machine shop products, \$20,524,000; bread and other bakery products, \$20,-154,000; printing and publishing, newspapers and periodicals, \$19,999,000; shipbuilding, wooden, in-

cluding boat-building, \$19,246,000; rice, cleaning and polishing, \$17,901,000; food preparations, not elsewhere specified, \$17,389,000; cotton goods, \$13,920,-000; confectionery and ice cream, \$13,309,000; printing and publishing, book and job, \$12,234,000; ice, manufactured, \$9,811,000; lumber, planing mill products, not including planing mills connected with sawmills, \$9,792,000; bags, other than paper, not including bags made in textile mills, \$7,910,000; coffee, roasting grinding, \$7,851,000; saddlery and harness, \$7,818,000; butter, \$7,161,000; clothing, men's, \$6,568,000; mineral and soda waters, \$6,360,000; wood-preserving, \$6,265,000; automobile-repairing, \$5,302,000; cement, \$4,743,000; furniture, \$4,394,-000; copper, tin and sheet-iron work, \$4,207,000; brick and tile, terra-cotta and fire-clay products, \$4,167,000; gas, illuminating and heating, \$3,614,-000; boxes, wooden packing, except cigar boxes, \$3,428,000; turpentine and rosin, \$3,301,000; structural iron work, not made in steel works or rolling mills, \$3,246,000; mattresses and spring beds, not elsewhere specified, \$2,910,000; cooperage, \$2,205,000; marble and stone work, \$2,159,000; liquors, malt, \$2,143,000; peanuts, grading, roasting, cleaning and shelling, \$2,055,000; automobile bodies and parts, \$1,881,000; tobacco and cigars, \$1,679,000; fertilizers, \$1,593,-000; coffins, burial cases and undertakers' goods, \$1,470,000; brass and bronze products, \$1,467,000; patent medicines and compounds, \$1,455,000; chemicals, \$1,394,000; awnings, tents and sails, \$1,308,000; pickles, preserves and sauces, \$1,297,000; brooms, from broom corn, \$1,247,000; wall plaster and composition flooring, \$1,098,000; paints, \$1,019,000; salt, \$1,016,000; cars and general shop construction and repairs by electric-railroad companies, \$925,000; lime, \$798,000; vinegar, \$782,000; druggists' preparations, \$771,000; clothing, women's, \$703,000; oil, not elsewhere specified, \$652,000; optical goods, \$649,000; canning and preserving, fruits and vegetables, \$617,000; artificial stone products, \$573,000; rubber tires, tubes and rubber goods, not elsewhere specified, \$568,000; and trunks and valises, \$503,000.

This includes all lines of manufacturing the annual products of which total five hundred thousand dollars a year or more. Besides these there are about three hundred and fifty small manufacturing establishments of various kinds, the total products of each kind being less than five hundred thousand dollars a year, which, taken together, turned out goods valued at more than seventy million dollars in 1919.

It should be said in passing that one product which is unique, and over which Texas enjoys a monopoly, is helium, a non-combustible gas which is extracted from the natural gas of the Petrolia field in a United States government plant at Fort Worth. This gas is used to inflate dirigible airships and has made this form of aerial transportation absolutely safe against accidents caused by gas catching fire.

The story of the lumber industry in Texas may be summed up in a sentence as follows: In 1870 about one hundred million board feet of lumber was cut in the state, and Texas stood in twenty-third place among the lumber-producing states; in 1907 the total amount cut was more than two billion, two hundred million

feet, and the state's position was third; and in 1920 about one billion, three hundred million feet were cut and the state's position was eighth. The industry was in its infancy just after the Civil war, it reached its peak in 1907, and today its production is about one billion, three hundred million feet annually. During three years besides 1907 the production was in excess of two billion feet—1909, 1913 and 1916. It has not been much more than one and a half billion feet during any year since 1917. Another way of expressing the growth of the industry would be to say that in 1850 the total value of the lumber produced in Texas was \$466,012, that in 1860 it was \$1,735,454, and that in 1920 it was \$45,312,080.

When Moses Austin journeyed to San Antonio in 1820 there were approximately eighteen million acres of virgin forest in eastern Texas, twelve million acres of which were of pine and the remainder of hardwood and mixed stands of hardwood and pine. Today there are less than two million acres of virgin pine still standing and much of the hardwood area also has been depleted.

Dr. W. B. Bizzell, president of the Texas Agricultural & Mechanical College, describes the chief forest area of Texas as follows:

"The most important forest area is confined to the eastern part of the state. The forest resources decrease rapidly from about the ninety-seventh meridian westward. East Texas may be divided conveniently into three distinct forest areas, as follows: (1) The loblolly pine region, (2) the long-leaf pine district, and (3) the short-leaf pine region. . . .

"The loblolly pine region occupies probably six thousand or seven thousand square miles between the long-leaf district and the treeless grass-covered portion of the coast prairie which extends inland from twenty-five to fifty miles from the gulf. East and west the loblolly pine extends from the Sabine nearly to the Brazos, occupying the interior portions of the coastal prairie and changing on the north to the long-leaf and short-leaf pine, as the coastal prairie passes into the drier and more porous soils farther inland. Scattered trees or groups of loblolly pines are found as far south and west as Brazoria county and small units of this species are located in Fayette and Bastrop counties where they are growing under quite different conditions.

"The southern portion of the loblolly pine region consists of alternating belts of open prairie and timber land. Near the gulf the timber is entirely lacking and only an expanse of poorly drained sea marsh and grass prairie exists. Farther inland patches of timber begin to appear along the streams or on natural elevations of sandy, porous soils. These patches become larger farther north, forming the loblolly and hardwood type which has been largely cut over and broken up into farms.

"The long-leaf pine region occupies some five thousand square miles of the east Texas timber belt. It lies north of the loblolly pine country and extends from the Sabine to the Trinity river, where the loblolly and short-leaf pine regions meet to form its western boundary. This region includes the center of the lumber and turpentine industries of the state. The altitude is above that of the loblolly pine, ranging from one hundred to three hundred feet, and the country is rougher and bet-

ter drained. Sandy ridges and deep, open-textured soils are characteristic. Long-leaf pine is able to thrust its tap-root deep into the soil and in a measure is independent of dry surface conditions. Often one finds loblolly pines and hardwoods in the draws and bottoms of the long-leaf region.

"The area included within the short-leaf section covers all the northeastern counties of Texas as far south as the long-leaf and loblolly pine regions and as far west as a line drawn from the western part of Red River county through Franklin, Wood, Smith, Henderson, and Anderson counties to the Trinity river, continuing southward along this river and meeting the loblolly region in Madison county. It is the largest of the yellow pine subdivisions, being twenty-five thousand square miles or more in area, and is well developed agriculturally. The great virgin short-leaf pine forests have been practically cut over and small mills with a few larger ones are now operating in second growth timber, which has attained merchantable size since the first cuttings were made.

"In addition to the pine forests, east Texas has extensive hardwood areas. The rivers and larger creeks have worn broad channels, rich in alluvial deposits. These bottom lands intersect the uplands of the shortleaf, long-leaf, and loblolly pine regions and along the larger rivers are frequently five miles or more in width. Some of these bottom lands have been cleared for cultivation. However, they were once, and in most east Texas counties are still, covered with hardwood forests. Nearly all of the species common to the Atlantic states are found in this forest type."

The region covered in this description includes the

bulk of that which originally contained timber suitable for the manufacture of lumber. The commercial manufacture of lumber began in Texas in the early years of the colonial period, but it did not reach great proportions until after the Civil war, chiefly because of the lack of transportation facilities. In 1834 Colonel Almonte reported to the Mexican government that there were "a number of saw-mills" in the departments of the Brazos and Nacogdoches. Stephen Austin, in a similar report, makes specific mention of one such mill. "In Gonzales," Austin reported, "there is a water-power mill on the Guadalupe river for sawing lumber . . ., which is of much importance, since this mill supplies the towns of Gonzales and Goliad and the city of Béxar (San Antonio) with boards." Austin also reported "two steam saw-mills" in the municipalities of Austin and Brazoria. During the period of the republic such mills increased, but their output was limited and even during the early days of statehood the development of the industry was not very great.

An idea of the limited market for lumber under the republic may be gleaned from a passage in Kennedy's Texas, published in 1841, which pointed out that demand for fuel for steamboats would give value to the timber along the rivers. "The quantities of wood required for steamboat fuel," wrote Kennedy, "will impart a high value to the timbered lands bordering the navigable rivers. The best kinds of wood for steamboat consumption are oak, beech, and ash. Cottonwood gives a lively fire, but is too quick in combustion. Hickory, which is the best domestic fuel, is useless for steamboats. It is necessary to split steamboat wood fine, and keep it

until perfectly dry. The price of wood is governed by many circumstances, but the clear average gain from an acre of woodland on the western rivers has been estimated at one hundred and fifty dollars." Kennedy also remarks that "the pine woods of the southeast afford an ample supply of first rate timber." There was indeed an "ample" supply, so ample in fact that timbered land in most sections of Texas was regarded as almost worthless. The forests remained an "undeveloped resource" until some years after the Civil war.

In 1870 the total production of lumber in the state was a little over one hundred million feet and the best timber lands of the eastern part of Texas were then practically valueless. There was no market for them, for the demand for lumber had not reached great proportions and the railroads had not yet penetrated the forests of that section. An incident that will illustrate this lack of demand is related by John Henry Kirby, whose early recognition of the value of Texas forests and whose tireless efforts in developing the lumber industry of the Southwest made him one of the outstanding figures in the history of the American industry. A sewing-machine agent passed through the eastern section of Texas during this early period and Kirby's father traded a tract of pine timber for a sewing-machine. About a year later the agent returned and requested the elder Kirby to take the timber land back and give him a cow instead. He had made many attempts to sell the timber during the interval without success. He preferred the cow because he could sell that without much trouble. Subsequently, of course, this tract became very valuable. Many similar stories showing how little value was placed upon the Texas timber lands during the period following the Civil war could be cited.

Between 1870 and 1880 the production of lumber in Texas increased at a little more rapid rate than the population, showing net progress in the industry. The production in the latter year was 328,968,000 feet. From that point forward the increase in production continued to be more rapid than the increase in population until the late nineties. The production in 1890 was 839,724,000 feet, and the state stood in seventh place among the lumber-producing states, a higher place than it now occupies. In 1899 the production was 1,230,-904,000 feet, which compares favorably with the annual production today. Since 1904 the annual production has been as follows: 1904, 1,406,473,000 feet; 1905, 920,000,000 feet; 1906, 1,741,473,000 feet; 1907, 2,229,590,000 feet; 1908, 1,524,008,000 feet; 1909, 2,099,130,000 feet; 1910, 1,884,134,000 feet; 1911, 1,681,080,000 feet; 1912, 1,902,201,000 feet; 1913, 2,081,471,000 feet; 1914, 1,554,005,000 feet; 1915, 1,750,000,000 feet; 1916, 2,100,000,000 feet; 1917, 1,735,000,000 feet; 1918, 1,350,000,000 feet; 1919, 1,379,774,000 feet; 1920, 1,328,800,000 feet; 1921, 1,502,333,000 feet, and 1922, 1,542,708,-000 feet. Most of this lumber was of pine. In 1913, for example, when 2,081,471,000 feet of lumber was produced in the state, only fifty-seven million feet of it was not pine. The production of hardwood, however, is increasing. The hardwood forests of the state were neglected until recently, due to the fact that an ample supply was found in other localities. Today, however, the hardwood forests of Texas comprise the last big

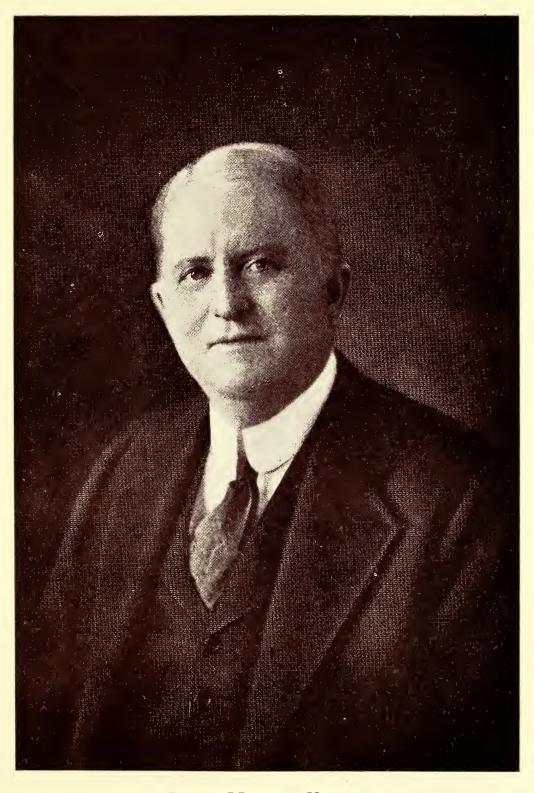
stand of hardwoods available for large manufacturing plants. The hardwood lumber produced in the state in 1920 was as follows: Oak, 27,074,000 feet; gum, 18,033,000 feet; cottonwood, 1,588,000 feet; tupelo, 1,307,000 feet; ash, 1,279,000 feet; hickory, 1,204,-000 feet; cypress, 1,130,000 feet; beech, 225,000 feet; elm, 167,000 feet; walnut, 39,000 feet; sycamore, 36,000 feet; basswood, 32,000 feet. Other hardwood of minor species added 307,000 feet to the total production of the year.

According to an estimate made by the Southern Pine Association in 1919, there was still standing in Texas that year approximately twenty-seven billion feet of pine, of which about twelve billion feet was long-leaf pine and fifteen billion feet short-leaf. At the present rate of production of pine lumber in Texas this would mean that there is enough still standing to take care of the demands of the trade for the next twenty years. However, the increase of population will increase the demand, so that the present supply may be exhausted before the end of twenty years unless an ample supply of second growth timber reaches a merchantable stage in the meantime.

The necessity of protecting the second growth of timber and of reforesting in Texas has been recognized by leaders of the lumber industry for several years, but public men have been slow to appreciate the importance of this matter. A start has been made, however. In 1915 the office of state forester was created and placed under the jurisdiction of the Agricultural & Mechanical College, and since then there has been some further legislation to increase the effectiveness of the work of

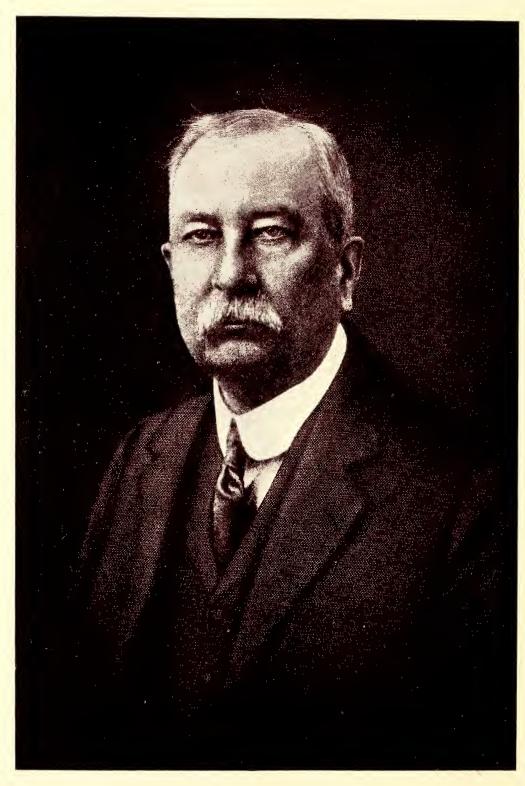
this office. In connection with this question, President Bizzell of the Agricultural & Mechanical College says:

"In view of the rapid depletion of timber resources, the forest problems of the state warrant serious attention on the part of Texas citizens. In the three forest regions of the east Texas timber belt, forests should be renewed on over four million acres of cut-over land now devastated and largely non-productive. The office of state forester . . . has done what it could along this line. Annual grass and forest fires in the cut-over areas have been and are the greatest obstacle in securing another growth of trees. Investigation has shown that fires not only destroy over ninety-two per cent of the seedling trees, but also retard the growth of such young trees as manage to keep alive in spite of annual burnings. A campaign of education and fire suppression inaugurated by the state forester has made conditions favorable to reforestation of vast areas in this cut-over land, which has such a low agricultural value that the public will be best served by having it produce another crop of lumber trees. Most of the second growth pine lumber is in the short-leaf pine region of northeast Texas and is owned by thousands of farmers. It follows, therefore, that the timber supplies of the future will depend to a marked degree on the proper handling of these forests. The farmers of Texas are vitally concerned with the forestry problem, both as the largest consumer of lumber and other wood material and as the owner of vast areas of young timber now approaching merchantable size. Everything possible should be done to encourage the proper management of farm forests, for this practice will be profitable to the farmer



JOHN HENRY KIRBY

Leader of the Lumber Industry and President of the Southern Tariff Association



B. F. YOAKUM
A Texas Railroad Builder

himself and will lessen the intensity of the approaching period of timber scarcity, which will be at hand in another decade when the bulk of the remaining virgin timber has been cut. . . .

"A survey of the forestry situation indicates that both public and private action is called for at the earliest possible date to insure the proper management of the remaining forest areas, to secure without delay the renewal of lumber forests on non-agricultural cut-over areas in east Texas, to stimulate the planting of trees for shelter and the production of posts and other wood material by land owners in the treeless sections of the state, and, in general, to bring about the highest production of those areas which, from the standpoint of public welfare, should be devoted to timber production."

The importance of this whole question could hardly be exaggerated, but it can not be said that the people of Texas as a whole have any keen appreciation of it as yet. The support of the office of state forester has been almost niggardly so far. Legislators can hardly be blamed for this, for even the leaders who are most alive to the situation are a little reticent about asking for adequate appropriations because of the apathy of the great bulk of the people and the active opposition of a certain percentage of them to spending public money for such a purpose. A great deal remains to be done in educating the public on this question, and meantime the timber supply grows less with each passing year.

It has been noted that the lack of transportation facilities held back development of the lumber industry until some years after the Civil war. This may be said of most Texas industries and of the general development

of the state. It has been since the building of the railroads that the most rapid progress in all lines has been experienced and even today, with Texas occupying first place among the states in railroad mileage, there are vast areas still undeveloped because of inadequate transportation facilities.

Prior to the building of the railroads the only organized transportation in Texas was that of "waggoning" and "freighting." Cattle and horses could be driven long distances to market, but other products had to be transported in carts and wagons. The business of freighting began in early colonial days and reached considerable proportions during the period of the republic and early statehood. Regular routes were traversed by ox-teams periodically, the average time required for a single trip from most parts of the state to Galveston on the coast, or to Jefferson, the "head of navigation" in Northeast Texas, was from two to three months. The "wagoners" or "freighters," as the drivers of these ox-teams came to be called, formed a picturesque class in early Texas. Dr. Bizzell quotes J. De Cordova, whose book on the resources of Texas was published in 1852, as follows: "This wagon business is a great His wagon is the home of the institution in Texas. driver; his oxen feed on the grass; he eats and sleeps at home. He penetrates the most remote part of the state, for a consideration, if he can get loaded; if not, he loads himself. He is free as air, and cares for nobody. These men form a class by themselves, but, with their useful branch of industry, are destined to fade away (like the old bargemen of the Mississippi river) when the snort of the iron horse shall awaken the solitude of the prairies."

The "snort of the iron horse" had not yet been heard in Texas when those words were written, but the very year that De Cordova's book was published (1852) work was begun on the first railroad. There had been talk of railroad building ever since the organization of the republic, and a number of ambitious schemes were projected and several charters granted to companies to build railroads. But it was not until 1852 that the Buffalo Bayou, Brazos & Colorado railroad was commenced under the supervision of Gen. Sidney Sher-This road was begun at Harrisburg and it required three years to complete thirty-two miles of track, and to connect Harrisburg with Richmond. reached Stafford's Point in 1853, Walker's in 1854, and Richmond in 1855. The second locomotive west of the Mississippi river was operated on this road. Crossing the Brazos on a temporary bridge, the building of the road to the Colorado was continued and it reached that stream at Eagle Lake in 1859. It was built to Alleyton in 1860, but it was not until after the close of the Civil war that it was completed to Columbus and the Colorado was bridged. The charter of the road was changed in 1870 and San Antonio became the objective point. From that time it became known as "the Sunset route." It reached San Antonio on January 15, 1877.

Meantime, other railroads had been built in different sections of Texas. The Houston and Texas Central was begun in 1853. By the outbreak of the Civil war it had been completed from Houston to Millican, a distance of eighty miles. Construction stopped during the

war, but shortly after its close the work was resumed. The road reached Bryan in 1867, Calvert in 1868, Bremond in 1869, Groesbeck in 1870, Corsicana in 1871, Dallas in 1872, and in March, 1873, it reached Denison, where it connected with the Missouri, Kansas & Texas road, thus forming a direct rail communication between Houston, Texas, and St. Louis, Missouri.

In 1858, the Texas & Pacific railroad began building from Shreveport, Louisiana, into Texas. It reached Marshall, Texas, in 1859, but the outbreak of the Civil war prevented further progress until after the close of that conflict. In 1870 it was built to Longview, and in 1873 it reached Dallas. It was then continued to Fort Worth, and reached that city in July, 1876. A northern branch of this road was completed between Sherman and Texarkana, by way of Paris and Clarksville, in December, 1876.

The completion of the "Sunset route" to San Antonio in January, 1877, placed the leading cities of Texas in direct communication with one another by rail. The Galveston, Houston & Henderson railroad had been completed from Galveston to Houston in 1863, by order of the Confederate authorities, and the western branch of the Houston and Texas Central had been built to Austin in 1871. Waco had been connected with Houston in 1871 by the building of another branch of this road from Bremond. The Texas & New Orleans railroad, which had been completed to Beaumont from Houston in 1860, and to Orange in 1861, was abandoned during the war, but was reorganized in 1876 and resumed operation soon afterwards. In 1877, therefore, San Antonio, Dallas, Houston, Fort Worth, Waco, Gal-

veston and Beaumont could be reached by rail from St. Louis. The Houston & Great Northern railroad and the International railroad, both of which were chartered in 1870, were consolidated into the International & Great Northern in 1873. By May 1, 1878, this road was operating more than five hundred miles of railroad in Texas. Its lines connected Houston with Palestine, with a division from that point to Austin, and another to Longview, and also connected Troupe with Mineola. A branch of the Houston division at Phelps extended to Huntsville. About the same time the Gulf, Colorado & Santa Fe completed its first stretch of track from Galveston to Richmond, a distance of sixty-three miles. The extension of the Texas & Pacific from Fort Worth to El Paso, and of the Sunset route, which became the Southern Pacific, from San Antonio to El Paso, and the building of the Fort Worth & Denver through the Panhandle country, as well as the development of other lines in various sections of the state, finally established the main outlines of the transportation system of Texas.

It is not the purpose of the writer to give a detailed account of the origin and development of all of the various railroad lines in Texas, but merely to set forth the early beginnings from which the present transportation facilities developed. Today there are one hundred and thirteen railway, terminal and wharf companies doing business in the state, with 16,120 miles of railway, valued at more than one hundred and fifty million dollars. The rolling stock is valued at more than thirty million dollars, and in addition to this the railroads have intangible assets valued at more than

seventy-one million dollars. This makes a total investment of considerably in excess of a quarter of a billion dollars.

An idea of the economic service these railroads render to the industries of the state can be had from the following statement by Dr. Bizzell:

"The Missouri, Kansas & Texas Railroad Company and the Gulf, Colorado & Santa Fe Company cross the state from north to south, the former terminating in San Antonio and the latter in Houston and Galveston. These roads serve the rich country of central Texas, supplying transportation for the black prairies of the northern and central parts. The great Southern Pacific · lines cross the entire state from southeast to west, through the southern part, and lateral lines of the system extend to central and northern Texas, providing freight transportation for lumber and oil from east Texas, cotton and grain from central Texas, and livestock from the western part of the state. The Texas & Pacific crosses the state from northeast to southwest, through north-central Texas, supplying freight transportation for lumber, fruit and other products of east Texas, cotton and grain from north Texas, and livestock and other products from the western part. The International & Great Northern extends from northeast to southeast Texas, through Palestine, Austin and San Antonio to Laredo on the Rio Grande, providing transportation for lumber, fruit and cotton from the eastern part of the state, and livestock and vegetables from the southwestern part. The Fort Worth & Denver penetrates an important section from Fort Worth through northwest Texas, providing freight transportation for grain and livestock. The Gulf Coast lines constitute an important railroad system, extending entirely across the state, penetrating the gulf coast and terminating at Brownsville. This road, like the International & Great Northern, is a connecting link between Texas and Mexico through the gateway at Brownsville. The cattle and rice industries of the gulf coast country have profited by the freight facilities of this road and the several branches of the Southern Pacific. Agriculture is also profitably served by the Chicago, Rock Island & Pacific Railroad Company, the St. Louis, Southwestern Railway Company of Texas (the Cotton Belt route), the St. Louis, San Francisco & Texas Railway Company, and the San Antonio, Uvalde & Gulf Railroad Company and other lines."

Texas, however, is an empire of "magnificent distances," and there are sections of the state, almost as great in area as some of the older states in the Union, which are practically without railroad facilities. This is particularly true of certain parts of the South Plains country, which are greatly in need of a rail outlet to Fort Worth, and thence to the gulf. Because of this situation it can not be said that the transportation system of Texas is yet complete. There will be much railroad building in the state during the next decade or two. There is virgin country still to be opened up, for the process of converting Texas from "wilderness to commonwealth" is still going on.

Along with the development of the railroads in Texas has gone the spread of a network of telegraph and telephone lines. The telegraph and the telephone follow

inevitably the railroad, but both have gone ahead of the railroad in many sections of the state. There are few points so remote and so unimportant as not to be reached by one or the other, or by both.

## CHAPTER LXVIII.

## THE RISE OF THE CITIES.

WHEN Texas emerged from the war between the states there was not a single town in the entire state having a population of fifteen thousand people! deed, there were only two communities within its vast expanse with as many as ten thousand. Galveston, with 13,818 inhabitants, was the largest city in 1870, and San Antonio, at that time more than one hundred and fifty years old, was second with 12,256. Houston then had a population of 9,382. Dallas and Fort Worth, both of which are now cities of more than one hundred thousand, were only small villages. There are ten cities in Texas today of more than thirty thousand people. There was not one in 1880, and at that time the combined population of those ten communities was considerably less than one hundred thousand. Their combined population in 1920, according to the United States census, was 840,805, or nearly nine times as much as it was forty years before.

The United States bureau of census classifies as "urban" all communities of twenty-five hundred people or more. There were very few communities coming under that classification in Texas in 1870. The 1920 census showed one hundred and nineteen such communities with a combined population of 1,512,689! This gives an idea of the remarkable growth of the communities of Texas. But that growth is not something

that is finished. It is still in process. The 1910 census showed ninety-one urban communities with a combined population of 938,104 and in 1900 there were fiftysix such communities with a combined population of 520,759. During the twenty years from 1900 to 1920, therefore, the number of urban communities in Texas was more than doubled and the combined population of such places was nearly tripled. Since 1920 the process has continued and the next census will show another large increase in both the number of urban communities and their combined population. For there are more than fourteen hundred incorporated communities in Texas and most of them are growing rapidly! The settlement of Texas, which began when Stephen Austin crossed the Sabine in 1821, is still going on. It has been going on constantly for more than a century and it is destined to continue for many, many years. If all the people now in the United States should move to Texas the density of population would not be as great as that of the state of Massachusetts today. The growth of urban communities in Texas, therefore, is likely to continue for some time to come. However, the growth they have attained in the past half century is none the less remarkable on that account. while the urban population has been growing in this way, the rural population has been making strides quite as rapidly. The 1920 census showed that Texas has more rural population than any other state in the Union!

An account of the urban communities of Texas is properly a part of the history of the state. It would be obviously out of the question to give a detailed history of each of the one hundred and nineteen such commu-

nities within the state, but some notice, at least, can be taken of them. In this and the two subsequent chapters such an account is attempted. The ten cities of more than thirty thousand people are San Antonio, Dallas, Houston, Fort Worth, El Paso, Galveston, Beaumont, Wichita Falls, Waco and Austin. The present chapter is devoted to these. The next chapter deals with cities and towns of less than thirty thousand and more than five thousand, and the one following that disposes of the remaining urban communities.

SAN ANTONIO, as has already been recounted in this work, was really the first permanent center of European population in Texas. It was practically the only settlement in the province when Moses Austin visited it in 1820, for Nacogdoches and La Bahía, the other two communities then existing, consisted of only a few people. The story of its beginnings and of the part it has played in the history of Texas has been told in detail in other volumes of this work. Originally settled by the Spaniards, it was not until after the creation of the republic of Texas that the process of converting it into an Anglo-American community be-But even today the atmosphere of the Spanish period lingers and lends to the old city a charm which few others in North America possess. The ruins of a number of the old missions are still to be seen in the neighborhood and even within the heart of the city itself there are buildings which date back to the dim past. Moreover, the Alamo, the chapel of which is still standing, tells a double story—being at once a relic of the Spanish days and the cradle of Texan liberty.

It is one of the most sacred spots within the boundaries of the United States.

San Antonio, be it said, is the county seat of Béxar county, and is the largest city in Texas, according to the 1920 census. It has made great strides toward becoming a manufacturing and commercial center, but its distinguishing characteristic is its wealth of tradition. Its wonderful climate and historic background make it one of the country's favorite playgrounds in winter. The San Antonio river, winding its picturesque way through the city, and the forty-six parks and plazas distributed about, provide an ideal setting for the spirit of romance which hovers over the place.

Brackenridge park with its three hundred and sixtythree acres of hills and valleys, is one of the garden spots of the world. Besides its many other features, including a complete zoo, it has a sunken Japanese garden which is unquestionably one of the most beautiful of its kind in this country.

Medina lake, which is eighteen miles long and two miles wide, is within an hour's drive from the city. This is the largest body of fresh water in the southwest, and abounds with fish.

The water of San Antonio is drawn from an inexhaustible supply, by means of seventeen wells from a depth of twelve hundred feet. This is the purest artesian water, and fifty million gallons are consumed daily.

In 1870 the population of San Antonio was 12,226; in 1900 it was 53,321; in 1910 it had increased to 96,614; ten years later the official federal census showed it to be 161,379, and in 1922 it was 184,727. Five

railroad trunk lines and nineteen highways radiate from the city, giving it excellent transportation facilities.

Five hundred and eleven factories, employing more than thirteen thousand people, turn out eighty-five million dollars' worth of finished products annually. Farm products raised on the territory contiguous to the city and marketed there amount to one hundred and twenty-five millions each year. The wholesale trade of the city amounts to one hundred and sixty millions, and its retail stores, employing twelve thousand people, sell two hundred million dollars' worth of merchandise annually.

Among its manufacturing interests are iron and steel industries, flour and feed mills, crude oil refining, packing house products, the manufacture of cigars, cotton-seed oil products, creameries, chili products, saddlery and leather goods, and the publishing of newspapers and periodicals.

There are many kinds of fruits raised near San Antonio. Early strawberries, citrus fruits, figs, plums, peaches and pears are among those that are marketed in the city. Cattle and cotton are the two chief products of the surrounding territory and, in addition to these commodities, more than one-half of the mohair produced in the United States is grown in this section.

San Antonio has eighty-seven schools, of which forty-seven are public, with an enrollment of thirty thousand, and forty are private, with an attendance of ten thousand. Several additional school buildings are in process of erection at this time. There are twelve hospitals in the city and eighty-seven churches. The traction com-

pany operates two hundred and fifty electric cars over ninety-two miles of track. These cars carry thirtyfive million passengers annually. Two hundred and sixteen miles of the city streets are paved.

The largest army post in the country, namely, Fort Sam Houston, is stationed at San Antonio. This post occupies thirty-five hundred acres of land, and represents an investment by the government of seventeen million dollars. Fifteen thousand United States troops are stationed there, and twenty million dollars are spent in San Antonio annually by the army. Kelly field, which is the army's greatest flying school, and the largest aviation field in America, and Brooks field, one of the few equipped balloon fields in the country, are both located here.

Among the treasures of the city are a permanent art exhibit and a museum of natural history.

Oil fields located near by make San Antonio an oil refining center, and natural gas is piped into the city for domestic purposes.

DALLAS, county seat of Dallas county, is on the Trinity river, two hundred and seventy miles north of the Gulf of Mexico, and one hundred and eighty-nine miles west of Shreveport, La. Its first settler was Col. John Neely Bryan, who built a pole hut there in 1841, five years before the county was formed. Dallas was named in honor of George Mifflin Dallas, vice-president of the United States during the Polk administration.

The settlement grew very slowly at first, and in 1870 the village had less than five thousand inhabitants. In 1880 the population had reached 10,358, with 38,067

in 1890, and 42,638 at the beginning of this century, at which time it ranked eighty-sixth in the country. According to the official federal census in 1920, Dallas had increased its rank to the forty-second city, and had a population of 158,976. It has been growing steadily since that year and is credited with well over two hundred thousand people today. The growth of Dallas has been a source of great satisfaction to the entire state of Texas.

The first railroad was built to the town in 1871. Now there are eight trunk lines and their subsidiaries serving the city, besides five electric interurban lines. A new union station for its steam railroads was opened in 1916, representing an investment of six and onehalf million dollars. The new electric interurban station cost, in building and grounds, one million six hundred thousand dollars. Dallas has eighty-six passenger trains in and out of its union station, and two hundred and twenty-two electric trains in and out of its interurban station daily. It ranks first among all cities of the nation in express business per capita, and fourteenth in total volume of business. The freight, express and parcel post business handled over steam and electric lines in and out of Dallas amounts to approximately six billion pounds annually.

The city was incorporated in 1871 and the commission form of government was installed in 1910. It has thirty-eight hundred acres in public park property and playgrounds, including thirty parks within the city limit. Dallas has thirty free baseball diamonds, twenty-eight tennis courts, ten wading pools for children, a municipal bathing pool with three million gallons ca-

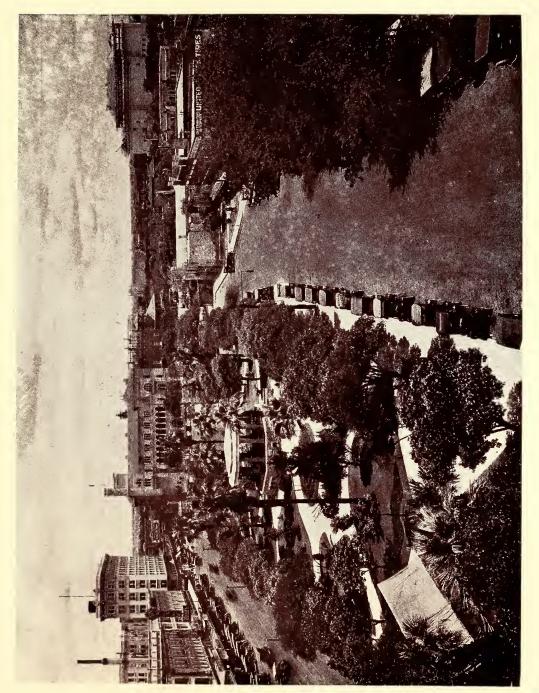
pacity, athletic fields and polo grounds. It has a base-ball park, seating nearly ten thousand, which is one of the finest to be found in the minor leagues. There is also a city zoo in Oak Cliff, a suburb.

There are one hundred and thirty schools in the city, including forty-five elementary, five high and eighty private schools, colleges and universities. The Dallas public school system represents a real estate replacement value of seven million dollars. There are about eleven hundred instructors serving nearly forty-two thousand pupils.

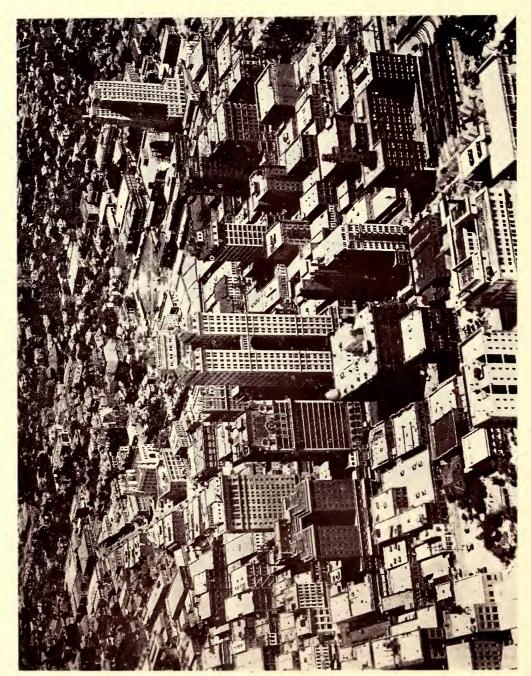
Headed by the Federal Reserve bank of Dallas, and with thirteen national and state banks, several trust companies, seventy mortgage and investment companies, Dallas is the undisputed financial center of the Southwest. Capital stock of Dallas's thirteen banks amounts to \$11,650,000.

There are four hundred and fifty-seven factories producing about ninety-four million dollars' worth of goods annually in Dallas. Nearly one-half of all the cotton gins in the world are made there. It also leads the world in the manufacture of saddlery and harness. Some of the other leading lines of manufacture are petroleum products, cement, clothing, flour, bakers' products, mattresses, trunks, sporting goods, wood and paper boxes, ice, ice cream, jewelry, tools and showcases.

Four daily newspapers are published in Dallas, besides which there are sixty-eight other periodicals. There are more than five hundred wholesale houses in Dallas, and their annual business has reached the enormous figure of six hundred million dollars. Nearly three thousand traveling men make Dallas their headquarters.



ALAMO PLAZA, SAN ANTONIO



THE BUSINESS DISTRICT OF DALLAS

As a retail center Dallas ranks well with many cities of greater size. It has some three thousand retail establishments, employing more than twenty thousand people and selling approximately two hundred and fifty million dollars' worth of merchandise per year. The network of splendid highways and electric railways extending over north Texas enables the retailers to draw trade from a wide territory.

Dallas is the home of the State Fair of Texas, which for several decades has been one of the greatest agencies in the development of the Southwest. It is the largest annual fair in the country, having an annual attendance of nearly one million. Buildings and grounds are valued at nearly three million dollars. The State Fair does not receive state or federal aid. All of its receipts are devoted to paying the expenses of the annual fair and making improvements on its one hundred and sixty-two acres of ground, which is the property of the city. The fair has one of the largest athletic stadiums in the Southwest, being five hundred feet long and three hundred and sixty-five feet wide, seating fifteen thousand people.

During the past five years the value of Dallas building permits has approximated eighty-two million dollars. Many splendid office buildings have been erected, including the twenty-nine story Magnolia building, which towers four hundred and two feet above the street. Outside of New York City, there are but three taller buildings in America. There are today over one hundred buildings in Dallas that are five stories or more in height.

Some statistics which are interesting and serve to show what progress has been made in Dallas follow: There

are two hundred churches, thirty-seven theaters which seat 28,500 people, and forty-five thousand private homes. Dallas has two hundred and twenty-five miles of paved streets and three hundred and fifteen miles of sewers. There are two hundred and twenty-five men in its police department and two hundred and seventy-five in its fire department.

HOUSTON, county seat of Harris county, is situated forty-eight miles north of Galveston. It was founded early in 1836 by John K. and A. C. Allen, brothers, who for a time were the only settlers there. The settlement soon began growing and in December of the same year was named in honor of Sam Houston, incorporated, and selected the seat of government of the republic of Texas, which it remained until October, 1839, when the capital was removed to Austin. In March, 1842, President Sam Houston again moved the government headquarters to Houston because of Mexican depredations near Austin.

The town progressed slowly but surely, and in the year 1870 its population was 9,382. Although fifty miles from the Gulf of Mexico, Houston has been navigable by water since its earliest history, by means of Buffalo bayou, now known as the Houston ship channel. Recently, after many years of labor, and the spending of many millions of dollars, the work of deepening this channel to a minimum depth of thirty feet, and widening it to a minimum width of one hundred and fifty feet at the bottom was completed, and oceangoing steamers have no trouble now in going to and from the port of Houston.

There is regular service to Liverpool, Bremen, Havre

and all United Kingdom and continental ports, as well as to Cuba, Mexico, Porto Rico, South American and coastwise to Atlantic, Gulf and Pacific ports. The tonnage handled annually in Houston's port amounts to more than three and one-half million tons and is valued at approximately one hundred and fifty million dollars. Its harbors are safe and there is forty miles of well-protected deep water frontage. This port and seventeen railroads diverging to all parts of the country make Houston one of the greatest distributing points in the Southwest.

Houston is the third largest cotton market in the country, and the largest inland port cotton market in the world. A million bales are handled there annually by its cotton firms. There are also twenty-three oil companies and forty-seven lumber companies located about the city, and the chief exports of the port are cotton, lumber, oil and rice. Houston is the most northern point in the state accessible by water from the Gulf of Mexico.

Among its principal industries are five rice mills, four flour mills, ten oil well supply factories, two car wheel plants, three mills manufacturing corn meal and stock food, seven foundries, twelve iron works, one structural steel plant, ten cotton compresses, three oil tank factories, two showcase and fixture factories, seven vegetable oil mills and eleven oil refineries. Three hundred and seventy-six factories in Houston represent an invested capital of seventy-five million dollars, and produce annually eighty million dollars' worth of finished products.

The wholesale business of the city amounts to three

hundred and fifty million dollars annually, and more than five hundred traveling men are employed to cover its trade territory. The retail stores, employing fifteen thousand people, do a business of about one hundred million dollars per year.

Houston is an educational center, having besides its thirty-five public schools many private institutions. It is also the home of Rice Institute, which is recognized as one of the leading educational establishments of its kind in the country. This college was incorporated in 1891 as the William Marsh Rice Institute for Advancement of Literature, Science and Art, by the late William Marsh Rice, one of Houston's prominent and respected citizens. Owing to litigation after the subsequent death of Mr. Rice, it was not opened to students until 1912. The campus of Rice Institute covers an area of three hundred acres, located about three miles from the heart of the city.

The population of Houston in 1920 was 138,276. Two years later, according to a local census, it had increased to 153,192, and its increase since that time has been fully as rapid. The city has an area of thirty-seven square miles and there are two hundred and eighty-eight miles of paved streets, sixty miles of storm sewers and one hundred and eighty miles of sanitary sewers within its limits. One hundred and sixty-five men are employed in its police department and two hundred and eighteen in its fire department. Houston has more skyscrapers than any other city of equal, and in many cases greater, population in the country. Its buildings are modern in every respect, and new ones are

continually in course of construction. Houston unquestionably is destined to be one of the largest cities in the entire South.

FORT WORTH, county seat of Tarrant county, is located at the confluence of the West Fork and Clear Fork of the Trinity river. The first white settler in that immediate vicinity was Ed. Terrell, who, in 1843, built a cabin on the present site of the Tarrant county criminal court building.

In 1847, Maj. Ripley A. Arnold was ordered by Gen. Winfield Scott to choose a suitable spot for a United States army post, and chose the site of the present city of Fort Worth. The post was named Camp Worth by Major Arnold in honor of Brig. Gen. William J. Worth, of Mexican war fame, and this was changed to Fort Worth in November, 1849. The settlement was chosen county seat in 1860 and the town was incorporated in 1873. The first railroad to reach here was the Texas & Pacific, on July 19, 1876.

Today twelve trunk lines, with eighteen outlets, and two interurban lines make Fort Worth one of the greatest railroad centers of the Southwest, and the outstanding grain, livestock and packing center of the entire South. Three large packing houses are established in North Fort Worth, separated from the business section of the city by the Trinity valley, which is spanned by a viaduct, taking three years to construct and costing about two million dollars.

While the packing houses constitute the chief industrial group of the city, there are many other lines of vast importance. Nine refineries turn out petroleum products valued at fifty-two million dollars annually.

There are four plants manufacturing tools and oil well supplies. The United States helium gas plant located there is the only one in the world producing this product, and alone represents an investment of more than five million dollars. Fort Worth has four iron foundries, three brass foundries, several furniture factories, ten flour and feed mills, turning out six thousand barrels of grain products a day, four cottonseed oil mills, five creameries, fourteen garment factories, and other plants manufacturing brick, pottery, drugs, chemicals and many more commodities. Three hundred and eighty-one factories in the city, employing sixteen thousand people, have an annual pay roll of eighteen million dollars.

The value of the finished products manufactured in Fort Worth annually is one hundred and seventy-five million dollars. Cotton worth one hundred and fifty millions, livestock valued at one hundred and twenty millions and grain valued at one hundred millions are handled annually in Fort Worth.

In 1913 the city purchased eight thousand acres of land on the west fork of the Trinity river, and a dam, thirty-one hundred feet long and seventy-one feet high, was built, creating a lake fourteen miles long and from one to two miles wide. This was named Lake Worth. The land surrounding the lake, and owned by the city is leased for camp sites, and more than four hundred of these sites are now under lease. In 1917 a municipal bathing beach was laid out and a bathhouse erected, and since then it has become one of the favorite playgrounds of North Texas.

Fort Worth has thirty-eight ward and nine high

schools with an enrollment of over twenty-seven thousand. In addition there are twelve private schools and several business colleges. Among the larger institutions of higher learning are the Texas Christian University, the Texas Woman's College and the Southwestern Baptist Theological Seminary.

There are one hundred and fifty-one churches in the city, one of which has an auditorium seating five thousand and claims the distinction of having the largest Sunday school attendance of any church in the country. Fort Worth has one hundred and thirty miles of hard-surfaced streets and thirty-one parks covering an area of eight thousand acres. There is a municipal zoo at Forest park, containing hundreds of animals.

Fort Worth is typical of the fast-growing large cities of the state as regards high buildings. There are two super-skyscrapers, one of twenty-four stories, and another of twenty stories within a block of each other. A fourteen-story hotel of the finest type has recently been erected by public subscription of its citizens, and there are many buildings ranging from five to ten stories distributed throughout the business section of the city.

Its mild climate has played no small part in the growth of Fort Worth, and this, in conjunction with the efforts displayed in organizing its health and sanitation work, has resulted in an announcement by the federal government that Fort Worth had a lower death rate for 1923 than any other Southern city, ranking third lowest in the nation.

In the decade between 1900 and 1910 Fort Worth increased its population one hundred and seventy-three per cent. In the following decade a similar growth

was under way, when at the time war was declared in 1917 the city became a vast army camp almost overnight. Immediately outside the city Camp Bowie was built, and within a radius of fourteen miles three flying fields were established. This vast construction period, and the presence of seventy-five thousand troops in the vicinity, gave the city a tremendous impetus.

Before the troops had departed, the news was received that an oil gusher had been brought in at Ranger, less than one hundred miles to the west. Within a few weeks the big production companies and oil field supply houses had established themselves in Fort Worth, and the streets were filled with people who follow the booms. Other fields were brought in to the north and west of the city, and this kept the population continually on the rise. The peak of the oil boom passed, however, without the citizens of Fort Worth being conscious of it, for new citizens, attracted by the general prosperity, were constantly moving in.

Fort Worth, according to the federal census, had 106,482 inhabitants in 1920. A local census taken just four years later showed an increase of fifty per cent over this figure. A large part of this increase, however, was due to the annexation of a considerable contiguous area, which was closely built up.

EL PASO, county seat of El Paso county, is situated on the Rio Grande river, in the extreme western part of Texas. The first white settlement in the Rio Grande valley was made on the south side of the river in the year 1659, when the old mission still standing was begun. This settlement was called "El Paso del Norte,"

meaning in Spanish, the northern pass. Its name was changed in 1889 to Ciudad Juarez, in honor of Benito Juarez.

The first house on the northern bank of the river was the ranch house of Juan María Ponce de Leon, which was built in 1827, and which stood on the present site of the Mills building, in El Paso, on newly formed land, which had been created by the gradual southward movement of the river. In the late forties Simeon Hart built a mill on the rapids just above the town, which is still standing, and about the same time the Stephenson ranch was established at Concordia, now within the easterly limits of the city. The settlement of Magoffinville on the site of what is now Bassett's addition was established a short time later by Judge Joseph Magoffin's father.

El Paso is today the largest and most important city between Denver and the City of Mexico, or between San Antonio and Los Angeles. It is the commercial center of an area of one million square miles, the dominant metropolis of a region as large as that part of the United States which is east of the Mississippi river, the strategic distribution point, both for passenger travel and trade traffic, in a circle having a diameter of twelve hundred miles.

Backed by its resources of mines, livestock, timber and agriculture, yielding millions annually, El Paso has become the chief manufacturing and wholesaling city of its territory. More than two hundred factories are located there, including iron foundries, machine shops, cement and brick plants and lumber mills.

El Paso has one hundred and fifty wholesale houses,

which do a business of forty million dollars annually, and for which more than five hundred men travel the surrounding territory.

The first railroad came to El Paso in 1881, and there are now six railroad trunk lines entering the city. It has been for many years the principal gateway for passenger travel and trade traffic to and from Mexico. For the past few years the exports to Mexico through the port of El Paso, of merchandise, machinery and reconstruction equipment have amounted to one and a half million dollars per month. A great warehousing system has sprung up there, through which the manufactured products and raw materials of the United States and Mexico are being cleared. The population of El Paso's trade territory in West Texas, New Mexico and Arizona is estimated at over one million, one hundred thousand. In northern Mexico, it is estimated at more than two million.

El Paso owns its own water plant which is valued at two and one-half million dollars. It has fifty-five miles of electric street railway, with twelve miles of interurban line in the Rio Grande valley; one hundred and thirty-five miles of gas mains, radiating from a modern plant of large capacity, and one hundred and fifteen miles of paved streets, ninety-five miles of which are bordered by concrete sidewalks. El Paso's court-house and auditorium, a million dollar edifice, is among the finest in the West, and forms a unit of the contemplated municipal center. The city is the seat of federal, district and county courts, national and international commissions, bureaus and boards. Five hundred teachers are employed by the city to educate its

twenty-two thousand students. The Texas College of Mines and Metallurgy, a branch of the University of Texas, is also located there and, in addition to its public school system, including eighteen grammar schools and a high school which was recently completed at a cost of half a million dollars, El Paso has fifteen academies, colleges and private schools.

Among the products that are raised on territory contiguous to El Paso and marketed there, are alfalfa, cotton, wheat, barley, oats, kaffir, milo, cantaloupes, bartlett pears, early apples, grapes, sweet potatoes, and all the common truck vegetables.

A few minutes' ride from the center of the city to the northeast, on a level tract of land, is the largest military post on the Mexican border, namely, Fort Bliss. At this post are garrisoned between five and ten thousand soldiers. These troops are educated and trained, not only in the methods of war, but also, through the vocational and educational schools, in the arts and crafts of peace.

The population of El Paso, in 1900, was 15,906. In 1910 it was 39,279, and in 1920, according to the official federal census, it had increased to 77,543. It is estimated that this figure has been increased to ninety-three thousand during the past few years. Living conditions, climate, transportation, altitude, high community standards and progressive citizenship account for the rapid growth that has been made in the past quarter century.

GALVESTON is the county seat of Galveston county, and is located on the east end of Galveston

island, which is thirty miles long and lies two miles from the mainland. Galveston bay is north and the Gulf of Mexico is south of the island. The city is connected with the mainland by the Galveston causeway, an arched reinforced concrete structure, used by electric interurban cars, steam railways, automobile and vehicle traffic.

Being one of the oldest cities of Texas, there is a great deal of interesting history connected with it. About the year 1782, a number of Spanish officers commanding a fleet made an examination of the coast of the Gulf of Mexico, west of the Mississippi river, and named both the island and the bay in honor of Conde de Galvez, who was then governor of Louisiana.

Until the year 1816 Galveston island remained in its primeval state, a low island formed in process of time by the sea throwing up sand and shells. The island was long a favorite hunting ground for the Karankawas, the once powerful and warlike tribe which inhabited so much of the coast of Texas. In 1816 Lafitte, with a number of vessels and quite a large force of adventurers, landed on the island for the purpose of capturing Spanish vessels. By the close of the year 1817 the population of Galveston had increased to nearly one thousand. The United States found cause for complaint against the pirates and in 1820 an American vessel was taken by Lafitte's men. The United States government then dispatched an armed vessel to break up the colony at Galveston.

The real development of the port of Galveston did not begin until about a decade later, when the first settlement was located on Galveston island. The first business conducted through the port was purely a coastwise trade, carried on through the medium of light draft sailing craft which operated regularly between New Orleans and Galveston. The natural result of this pioneer movement was that the trading later shifted to New York and continued to grow with rapid strides after the steamships began to generally supersede the sailing craft in service.

The early navigation to the port was attended by innumerable difficulties, not the least of which was lack of sufficient water over the bars at the entrance of the harbor to allow vessels to enter. The natural depth of water over the outer bar at this time was about twelve feet, while the depth over the inner bar was about nine feet. The result was that it was necessary to lighter all cargoes except those of the smallest boats. These conditions prevailed until 1869, during which year the first development of the harbor took place.

The citizenship demonstrated its interest in the port by constructing a pile jetty, extending more than a mile into the gulf. The object of this first step was to deepen the channel over the so-called inner bar and, realizing the necessity for national aid in the successful consummation of the plans, the federal government was importuned a year later to assist in the work. The result was that an appropriation amounting to thirty thousand dollars for the improvement of Galveston harbor was made, and in the following two years additional appropriations amounting to fifty-one thousand dollars were made to continue the work. The first real building program came in 1874, however, by the construction of jetties, the purpose of which was to deepen

the channel to a depth of eighteen feet. The work was continued for a period of several years, but the desired results were not obtained, and the plan was finally modified into the present system.

From July, 1870, to June, 1906, the total appropriations made by the federal government amounted to \$9,728,000, and since that time nearly \$10,000,000 more has been appropriated for harbor improvements. The result of this enormous expenditure is now shown in Galveston harbor, which is the most perfectly arranged harbor on the gulf coast. The jetties, which are constructed from rocks taken from Granite Mountain, Texas, form a permanent method of maintaining the channel, which is twelve hundred feet wide and thirty-five feet deep over the outer bar. The largest vessels in the gulf trade make this port without difficulty.

In September, 1885, a hurricane swept over the island, causing considerable damage to property, whereupon Judge William P. Ballinger, one of Galveston's most honored citizens, drafted two amendments to the state constitution, granting all counties and cities bordering on the coast of the Gulf of Mexico, the right to issue bonds and construct sea walls or breakwaters, and they were adopted. Judge Ballinger addressed an open letter to the citizens of Galveston, on August 28, 1886, calling their attention to these constitutional provisions, and warning them of the great necessity for the construction of a sea wall as a means of protection. This letter was a strong appeal but, while it provoked much newspaper discussion, no active steps were taken to carry out its recommendations.

The date September 8, 1900, will be referred to by the inhabitants of Galveston for generations to come. The appalling loss of life, and the destruction of property on that date, due to the terrific West Indian hurricane which drove the waters of the Gulf of Mexico over the entire city, shocked the civilized world. More than six thousand lives were sacrificed to satisfy the storm king's anger, and over seventeen million dollars' worth of property was completely destroyed. When the people of Galveston awoke from their night of death, Judge Ballinger's plan was again brought to light and, although the author had long since passed away, it required no new appeal to spur the then thoroughly aroused people to the point of action.

The population of Galveston in 1920 was 44,255 inhabitants, according to the official government census. Its trade, principally in cotton, places it among the foremost cities of the world in the volume of its exports and imports. The city was incorporated in March, 1839.

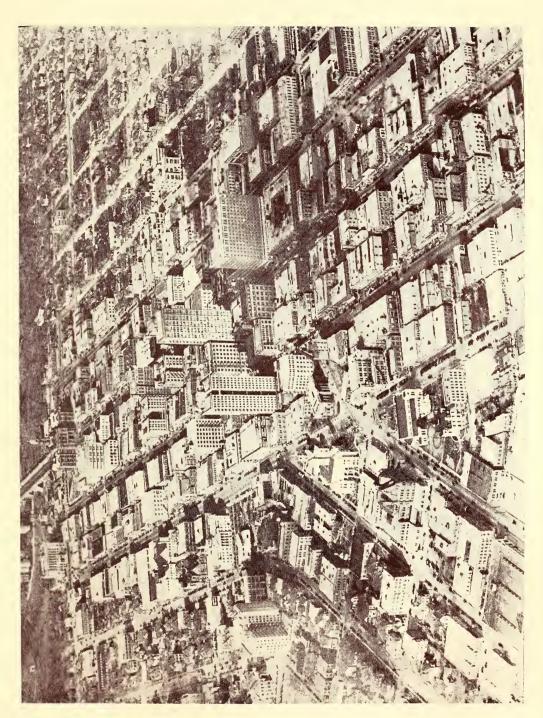
BEAUMONT is the county seat of Jefferson county, and is situated on the west bank of the Neches river, at the head of tidewater navigation, twenty-two miles from the Gulf of Mexico. The town was founded in 1836 by Jefferson Beaumont, after whom the settlement was named. It was laid out in 1837 by John Grisby, Joseph Pulsifer, Henry Millard and Thomas B. Huling. Beaumont was incorporated in 1881.

The town grew slowly, being just an average settlement until 1901. The year previous its population had reached 8,900. It was generally known that there was

oil somewhere in the vicinity, and several men had lost fortunes trying to locate it.

In 1901, when wells were sunk on Spindletop, a field very near the city, oil was located at last. gusher was brought in which surpassed everything in the history of the oil industry. It was impossible to collect the oil that rose high into the air, and before machinery could be brought from Houston to cap the flow the whole countryside was swimming in oil. Beaumont immediately became the center of an oil rush. Accommodations for all its visitors were an impossibility, and sanitary conditions became fearful. Houses and shacks sprang up overnight and exorbitant prices were paid for food and lodgings. After the flow had continued for many days, and it looked as if the wells would never stop gushing, the price of oil reached the low level of three cents per barrel. There were no tanks in which to store the oil, and naturally many millions of gallons were wasted. The well was finally capped, however, and an industry was started in Beaumont which has been going on ever since. Some of the first wells, more than twenty years old, are still producing oil by means of pumps. The equipment of the refineries, the pipe lines, storage and transportation facilities for this industry alone represent an investment of fifty million dollars.

Beaumont has recently become an important shipping point. Two new large warehouses and wharf units are under construction and another has been contracted for, assuring the port ample facilities for some time to come. From seven to ten ships load and unload there each week, the main exports being oil, rice and lumber.



AIR VIEW OF FORT WORTH



Main Street, Houston

Beaumont is a rice center, having the largest rice mills in the state. There is more rice produced along the Gulf of Mexico, from Houston into Louisiana, than is consumed by the entire country. Another of its important industries is lumber, yellow pine being exported in large quantities. The city also has large iron works and creosoting establishments.

The building of plants by the Pennsylvania Car Company and the Pennsylvania Shipbuilding Company are being completed and have begun operating there, giving Beaumont the largest plants of this kind in South Texas.

Cotton, corn, sugar cane, fruits and cattle are among the other products raised on territory contiguous to the city.

Beaumont is the junction of six railroads and an electric interurban line to Port Arthur, giving it good transportation facilities. A new ten-story hotel financed by its citizens, and a new sixteen-story office building, erected by a local insurance company, give the city a nucleus for an imposing skyline. Beaumont has recently closed a contract with the Southern Pacific Railroad, calling for the construction of a viaduct for the purpose of elevating railroad tracks over the streets in the business district. Among other improvements that are being installed to make Beaumont one of the large cities of the southwest, is a paved highway, eighty miles long, to Houston.

The population of Beaumont, according to the federal census of 1920, was 40,244, and it is estimated that this has been increased to about fifty thousand during the past few years.

WICHITA FALLS, county seat of Wichita county, is located twenty miles south of the Red river, and about one hundred miles northwest of Fort Worth.

Until 1882 Wichita Falls was a small settlement, boasting of one general store, and lay in an unorganized county. During this year three elections were held on the question of a county seat. The first was in June, at which the county was organized. This was a three-cornered election between a three hundred and twenty acre tract of Tarrant county school land, near the present site of Iowa Park, the S. B. Burnett ranch section near a settlement afterward called Ruthford, now known as Burke, about sixteen miles west of Wichita Falls, and Wichita Falls, and these were enough to keep a choice from being made.

The second election was held in August, which also resulted in no choice being made and, at the third election, in November, Ruthford received half of the votes polled, and the Tarrant county school land and Wichita Falls divided the remainder about equally; and again no choice was made. Wichita Falls would unquestionably have won the third election if the few additional people who had come as a result of the advent of the railroad, following the August election, had been eligible to vote, but these newcomers were not able to establish sufficient length of residence.

The commissioners' court decided after this that no further election be held for a year, and S. B. Burnett agreed to use his influence for Wichita Falls at the fourth election which was held in the fall of 1883. By this time the population of Wichita Falls had grown to nearly one thousand inhabitants, and she had no diffi-

culty in selecting herself as county seat. Six years later, the citizens of Iowa Park, which had grown greatly both in population and prosperity, tried to have the county seat moved from Wichita Falls to their town, but at the election which followed to decide this issue, they were decisively defeated.

Wichita Falls grew slowly for the next ten years. Until 1900 it remained a town of some twenty-five hundred people. Its citizens realized the importance of an adequate water supply if the town was to maintain a substantial growth, but, as is usual, there was no money to procure such a thing. However, in 1900, the city sold its public school to the district for a consideration of eighteen thousand five hundred dollars. This money was then paid the water company for certain fire protection guarantees and other rights and privileges. Then, as a result of the combined financial efforts of the water company and a few of the citizens, a dam was constructed over Holliday Creek, forming Lake Wichita and giving the city sufficient water for domestic and industrial use. At the time of its construction this was the largest artificial lake in the state, covering more than three thousand acres, and promising to provide ample water under the worst condition of drought. The city's recent purchase, with an eight hundred thousand dollar bond issue, of a water system, now places the city water supply in the hands of the citizens themselves, and insures them against any future water famine.

By 1910 Wichita Falls had attained a population of 8,200. There was a street car line in town which ran to the lake. The building of homes was progressing steadily and the town was enjoying a general prosperity.

From 1910 to 1918 progress was considerably more rapid than during the previous ten years and in 1918 the population had increased to about 18,000. Then came the discovery of oil and in two years the population jumped to 40,000. No city in the United States saw more new buildings erected in proportion to population than Wichita Falls during the years 1919 and 1920. It is estimated that more than twenty million dollars was expended in the construction of buildings alone. Skyscrapers rose as if by magic.

In 1918 Wichita county produced twelve million barrels of oil. The following year the production was increased to thirty million barrels and in 1920 the enormous figure of thirty-three million was reached. This was the best year in quantity production, as in 1921 the amount dropped to twenty-four million barrels.

Six railroads radiating from Wichita Falls have made it a shipping center for manufacturers and jobbers for territory in Northwest Texas and Southern Oklahoma.

The public school system of Wichita Falls consists of twelve ward schools, one junior high school and one senior high school and junior college. One hundred and eighty-five teachers, with an annual payroll of thirty thousand dollars, are employed.

Chief among its industries, besides its large oil refineries are the manufacture of motor trucks, window glass, flour, sashes and doors.

WACO, county seat of McLennan county, is located on the Brazos river, about ninety-five miles south of Fort Worth. The first white settler on the site of the present city was George B. Erath who camped there in

1837, and the first man to make that point his permanent home was Shapley P. Ross, who arrived in 1839. The settlement was originally called Waco Village, the word Waco being the Anglicized name of the Hueco Indians who inhabited the section in previous years.

McLennan county was formed in 1850, the year after the village of Waco was platted, and the settlement grew so slowly that the school and courthouse were combined in one small building until 1854, after which year the town grew faster.

A Baptist college, known as Waco University, was formed in the late sixties and other similar institutions were subsequently founded. All these were combined in 1885, forming Baylor University. In 1870 when the population of Waco was four thousand, a suspension bridge over the Brazos river was completed, which was the second largest suspension bridge in the world, the construction of which was financed by a corporation made up of the citizens of the town. The materials for this bridge were hauled on ox-carts from Bremond, forty-five miles distant, which was the nearest railroad point, as the first railroad to Waco did not reach there until 1871. This bridge was a toll bridge until 1889, when it was bought by the city and made free.

Waco today is a modern city with an estimated population of fifty thousand. In 1920 according to the federal census it had 38,500 inhabitants. It is the center of a very fertile agricultural territory and the home of many important industries, among which are the manufacture of shoe dressing, trunks, denims, tents and awnings, automobile tops and truck bodies, furniture, ice, doors and sashes, ice cream, and soft drinks. Waco

has extensive railroad shops, a large mill and elevator and a refinery and pipe-line company. Twenty-four hundred employees turn out a total of over eighteen million dollars' worth of finished products annually.

The city is also a wholesale and jobbing center, and the chief commodities wholesaled are drugs, groceries, hardware, lumber, dry goods, building material, automobile accessories, electrical supplies, produce and fruit. Twelve railroad outlets afford excellent transportation service to and from the city.

Waco has fifteen elementary, two junior high and two high schools, besides several private schools and is the seat of Baylor University, which has now more than thirteen hundred students and sixty instructors. Its public school enrollment exceeds ten thousand pupils and two hundred and fifty teachers. Sixty-nine churches, embracing nearly all denominations, are scattered throughout the city.

Waco has an area of nine square miles, and eleven parks, distributed about, help to beautify it. The largest of these is Cameron park, consisting of four hundred and fifty acres, which is recognized as one of the finest natural parks in the country. The home of the Texas Cotton Palace is also located in Waco. This is visited by about a half million people each fall, who are entertained by social features, athletic contests and exhibits of agricultural and livestock products.

The first brick courthouse of McLennan county was situated on the public square, where the city hall now stands. The present seat of the county government is housed in a two hundred and fifty thousand dollar building, completed in 1903. The year 1911 saw the com-

pletion of a twenty-two story office building erected by a local life insurance company. A structure of this magnitude was previously unheard of in any city the size of Waco. Other tall buildings have more recently been constructed in the business section of the city to accommodate its fast growing needs. The progress of Waco has been steady. No booms have inflated the population of the city, which lies in the center of the country's greatest state.

AUSTIN, capital of Texas, and county seat of Travis county, is located on the Colorado river, eighty-one miles northeast of San Antonio.

The first white settler in this community was Jacob Harrell, who established his home there in 1837. A year later the town of Waterloo was founded on the present site of Austin.

On January 4th, 1839, Mirabeau B. Lamar, president of the Texas republic, appointed a commission of five men to select a site for the "City of Austin," named in honor of Stephen Fuller Austin, on which site the capital of Texas was to be established. These five men were H. C. Horton, J. W. Burleson, William Menifee, Isaac Campbell and Louis P. Cooke.

This commission purchased from Logan Vandever, James Rodgers, G. D. Hancock, J. W. Harrell and Aaron Burleson 7,735 acres of land for approximately twenty-one thousand dollars. Following the receipt of this news President Lamar appointed Judge Edwin Waller to take charge of the survey of Austin's site, lay out the streets and lots and conduct a sale of the land to prospective citizens for the republic.

On August 1, 1839, Waller conducted the first sale of lots in the future capital city. On this day there were three hundred and six lots disposed of, which brought \$182,588. The average price of the lots was between five and eight hundred dollars, some bringing only one hundred dollars and the prize lot, the one on which the Scarbrough building now stands, is said to have brought twenty-eight hundred dollars.

After the sale of the lots the little town grew rapidly. Work was immediately begun on a capitol building and a few government office buildings. On October 17, 1839, President Lamar and members of his cabinet reached Austin and were greeted by the citizens with a big banquet which was served under a shed. During the same week the first copy of the Austin City Gazette, Austin's first newspaper, was issued. A few months later the first city election was held and Judge Waller was elected mayor. On January 25, 1840, the county of Travis was created by the Texas congress and named in honor of William B. Travis, one of the heroes of the Alamo.

In March, 1842, after two thousand of Austin's citizens had gone to the rescue of San Antonio, which had been raided by Mexicans under General Vasquez, President Sam Houston and his cabinet became worried about their safety and moved the government to Houston over the protest of the people. The following year Houston's agents attempted to remove land office archives, but the citizens overtook the party which had seized the papers from the land office and, after a bloodless encounter at Walnut creek, they returned the records to Austin. This is known as the "archives war."

In 1845, Austin was designated as temporary capital of Texas, now a state of the United States. It was then decided to hold an election in 1850 to locate the capital for the following twenty years. In this election Austin won again and in 1870 Austin was designated as the permanent seat of the state government.

The year 1869 is memorable for the reason that the highest flood ever recorded for the Colorado river was experienced. The water from the hills above Austin filled the river valley to overflowing and the lower stretches of the city were inundated. In 1871 Austin got its first railroad and a train of the Houston and Texas Central Railroad switched into the city after a run from Houston. This was a memorable occasion and greatly celebrated in the city. The next important happening in Austin's history was the burning of the state capitol in 1881, and for a time the state officials were forced to occupy such quarters as they could find.

The following year the construction of the present capitol building was begun, and great granite blocks hewn from the surface of Granite Mountain at Marble Falls were hauled to Austin to become part of the magnificent edifice. The capitol is the largest state building in the country and the syndicate which financed the construction of it was given three million acres of land in West Texas, by the state. This was by far the greatest building project that had yet been undertaken in Texas and is estimated to have cost the construction company about three and one-half million dollars.

The University of Texas was established in 1883, and from that time the population of Austin has grown steadily. The federal census of 1920 gave Austin

34,876 inhabitants and this figure has been increased during the past few years.

In 1893 the Lake Austin dam was constructed for the purpose of the advancement of Austin as an industrial center. This project, however, was ill-fated, for the dam broke in 1900, flooding the city and destroying several lives and much property. Reconstruction of the dam was begun in 1909.

Improvements in the city have kept pace with the growth of its population. Austin has two hundred and seventy-eight miles of streets, more than two hundred miles of which are kept in excellent condition. Five national highways pass through the city. There are sixteen public ward schools and two high schools. In addition to the public school system there are several other institutions such as the State School for the Deaf, State School for the Blind, State School for the Defective, St. Edward's College, St. Mary's College, Presbyterian Theological Seminary, Texas Wesleyan College and a few others. The University of Texas, with an enrollment of forty-five hundred students, is the leading individual educational institution in the state.

The chief industries of Austin are the manufacture of brick, flour, gasoline engines, cottonseed oil, ice, automobile bodies and mill work. The city is served by three railroads which afford excellent transportation facilities. The territory contiguous to Austin is fertile and immense crops of cotton, corn and hay are raised, there being 352,000 acres under cultivation in the county.

## CHAPTER LXIX.

## CITIES OF THE FUTURE.

The United States census of 1920 showed fortynine cities and towns in Texas having a population between five thousand and twenty-five thousand. Seven of the communities of this class had more than fifteen thousand and twenty had more than ten thousand people. Twenty-one of them had less than five thousand people in 1910 and thirty-three of them have achieved the five thousand mark since 1900. Steady growth, therefore, has been evident in all of these communities.

The present chapter deals with the communities of this class, but to the forty-nine enumerated by the census bureau two have been added because of their phenomenal growth since the 1920 census. These are Breckenridge, which had only 1,846 inhabitants in 1920, but is a thriving little city of about fourteen thousand people today, and Mexia, which has jumped from 3,482 to about twelve thousand. They were among the wonder towns created by the discovery of oil and, having obtained such a start, they are now forging ahead in other lines of endeavor. The cities and towns of this class range from Laredo, on the Mexican border, with a population of 22,710 in 1920, to Childress, in the Panhandle, with 5,003 people.

LAREDO, county seat of Webb county, is situated on the Rio Grande, about one hundred and fifty miles southwest of San Antonio. It was originally founded in 1750 by Col. Tomas Sanchez of the royal army of Spain, who, at the head of a small expedition, invaded that section on an exploration trip toward the mouth of the Nueces river. But, being harassed by Indians, he was compelled to turn back, and he halted at what is now the city of Laredo.

Sanchez decided to remain and build a village, the nucleus of the town being laid in the vicinity where the San Augustine cathedral and Martin plaza now stand. It was a very desirable site on the high banks of the Rio Grande, and the subsequent growth of the village into a permanent settlement demonstrated Sanchez's wisdom. Seventeen years later the city of Laredo was founded and a liberal charter granted for its government. The first settlers were allotted land, public plazas were designated, town lots surveyed and titles issued to desirable occupants. The year 1789 found a prosperous village there with a population of several thousand people. It was then Laredo, Tamaulipas, Mexico.

Laredo was incorporated under the laws of Texas in 1852, four years after the creation of Webb county. Its first mayor was W. F. Alexander. At that time it was a quaint village with very few American families. In fact, the entire American population as late as 1881, when it got its first railroad, was less than fifty people. However, Americans slowly began coming to the town and, with them, improvements.

In 1889 two public utilities came to the city; the electric street railway, one of the first to be built west of the Mississippi, and the international tramway bridge, made of steel, connecting Laredo with Nuevo Laredo,

Mexico. These stimulated business activities and the city continued growing, but faster than before.

Laredo today has a population of about twenty-five thousand. In 1920, according to the federal census, it had 22,710 inhabitants, one quarter of whom were Americans. It is a modern city with paved streets, a street railway, an abundance of natural gas, electric lighting and water systems. Four railroads radiate from the city, giving it excellent transportation facilities. In 1922 a new concrete bridge was completed between Laredo and Nuevo Laredo at a cost of a half million dollars.

A military post, namely Fort McIntosh, quartering sixteen hundred soldiers, is maintained at Laredo. This post was established in 1849 and originally called Camp Crawford, but renamed in 1850 in honor of Colonel James S. McIntosh, who died of wounds received in the Mexican war. Four regiments of the National Guard are also stationed there, in addition to detachments of artillery, signal and ambulance corps. The land embraced within the military reservation was donated by the city of Laredo to the United States in 1875.

Coal mines around Laredo produce one hundred and twenty thousand tons annually, and there are nearly three hundred producing oil wells in that section. Cattle-raising is one of the main industries of its contiguous territory, and there are more Bermuda onions grown there than anywhere else in the world. Two thousand cars of these onions are shipped from Laredo annually. Among other products raised there are spinach, cabbage, alfalfa and citrus fruits, which are noted for their fine flavor.

PORT ARTHUR came into being as late as 1896, when a townsite was laid out on the present location of the city by the surveyors of the old Kansas City, Pittsburg & Gulf railway, which was built by Arthur E. Stilwell as the shortest possible line from Kansas City to tidewater.

Stilwell had originally intended reaching the gulf by way of Shreveport and either Houston or Galveston. He was, however, a believer in the "brownies" or fairies, and claimed that these "brownies" came to him in a dream one night and advised him to build a townsite where Port Arthur now stands. He immediately sent his engineers to the spot envisioned in his dream, on which he claimed he saw a large town destined to be one of the greatest ports in the country. These engineers found that Sabine Pass and its adjacent waters formed what must be the deep-water terminus of his road.

Stilwell met many obstacles when he made an effort to secure a terminal site. The owners of the land at and around the town of Sabine were unwilling to sell their property on terms which the Stilwell companies felt justified in accepting, and Mr. Stilwell thereupon reversed the ancient fable regarding Mahomet, and as he could not take his town to deep water, he brought deep water to his town. A site was selected on the western shore of Sabine lake, which is a shallow body of water about eight by thirty miles, and which is connected with the gulf by the channel known as Sabine Pass, about five miles in length.

The site selected for Stilwell's town, which he named in honor of himself, Port Arthur, was twelve miles inland from the gulf, and at that time nine miles distant from the head of deep water in Sabine Pass. A site for a harbor was selected and a start was made dredging a ship canal directly across the lower end of the lake from the harbor to the head of deep water in Sabine Pass.

Owners of property at Sabine Pass objected to thus losing the southern terminus of the K. C. S. railway, and commenced a vigorous attack in an effort to prevent dredging through the lake. An order was finally secured forbidding the further excavation of the canal in Sabine lake, and Stilwell was forced to turn from the lake to a route inside the shore of the lake. Here a strip of land was purchased, and the canal excavated, all inland, from the mouth of the harbor to the head of deep water in Sabine Pass. This took more than two years' time, and the canal was not completed to a twenty-foot depth until late in 1898.

An export business had commenced under considerable handicaps due to lack of harbor facilities and to the fact that the finances of the Kansas City Southern Railway had become involved, and a receiver had ousted the Stilwell regime. Until 1901 the tonnage exported was very small. During that year, the first of the numerous great oil fields was discovered at Spindletop, twenty miles from Port Arthur, and from that time the town of Port Arthur has increased its shipping facilities, until today it is one of the greatest ports in the country.

The population of Port Arthur on Christmas Day, in 1896, was eighty souls. Today it is well over thirty thousand, and the city has two of the largest oil refineries in the world.

DENISON is located in the northern part of Gray-

son county, seventy miles northeast of Dallas and two miles south of the Red river. The town was first settled in September, 1872, by a townsite company in conjunction with the building of the M. K. & T. railway. It was named after one of the directors of that road and incorporated in March, 1873.

Denison is essentially an industrial city and railroad center. It is the terminal point of four steam and one interurban line. The payroll of the Missouri, Kansas and Texas Railway Company in Denison approximates ten thousand dollars daily.

The first public high school in Texas was built in Denison and its present school system ranks with the best in the South.

The second oldest cotton mill in Texas, and one of the largest, is located there, besides which there is a very large timber creosoting plant, a peanut and pecan mill, a mattress factory, a coffee-roasting plant, and other manufacturing establishments. The city is also an important wholesale center for groceries, hardware, produce and bank fixtures.

According to the official federal census of 1920, the population of Denison in that year was 17,065. This has been increased by several thousand during the past few years, because of the activities of the railroad in building a huge terminal and car shops.

Owing to three bridges over the Red river, and seven good highways entering the city, Denison is the focal point for tourist travel.

RANGER is located in Eastland county, about eighty miles southwest of Fort Worth. It was founded in



PEARL STREET, BEAUMONT



AUSTIN AVENUE, WACO

1881, when the Texas & Pacific Railroad built a small station there, and its name was acquired from the fact that there was a camp of Texas Rangers located two miles east of the center of the present town.

The settlement grew very slowly and in 1910 there were about seven hundred inhabitants living there. Ranger was a quiet cotton-ginning and agricultural town until 1917 when the first of a series of famous oil wells came in, and with this discovery of oil came thousands of prospectors, investors and gamblers.

The city was incorporated in 1919, and in 1920, according to the official federal census, had a population of 16,205. A considerable number of these, however, might be classified as a floating population, which comes and goes as the flow and ebb of the tide.

Ranger is the headquarters for several oil companies and practically all branches of the oil industry are represented there. Farming and poultry-raising are again being carried on after the great oil era, and the city is the home of several wholesale branch houses.

AMARILLO, county seat of Potter county, is located in the geographical center of what is known as the Panhandle of Texas. It was founded in 1887 with the building of the Fort Worth and Denver City railroad through that country, and incorporated in 1889. The origin of its name is not definite, Amarillo meaning yellow.

Amarillo is a metropolitan city, more modern in its facilities, its buildings and its homes than many older cities, because it has inherited no out-of-date sections from past years.

Having more than thirty manufacturing and industrial plants, giving employment to seven thousand people, with an annual payroll of nearly two and one-half million dollars, Amarillo has become recognized as the industrial center of the Panhandle. Its railroad facilities are good, as three trunk lines cross each other at this point affording direct routes to and from all the centers of the country.

Amarillo has eight miles of paved streets, seventy-five miles of concrete sidewalks, thirty-five miles of sewers, and ten miles of street railway, municipally operated. There are twenty-one churches, two hospitals and seven public schools in the city.

The population of Amarillo in 1920 was 15,494 inhabitants, and it is estimated that there are now about eighteen thousand people living there.

PARIS, county seat of Lamar county, is located about one hundred miles northeast of Dallas. The settlement was chosen county seat in 1844 when the population of the village was about twenty people. This was three years after the county was created, the name of the settlement at that time being Pinhook. George Wright, who twice represented the Red river district in congress, laid off fifty acres for a town and donated ground for a courthouse and public square. After the election that decided where the county seat would be located, the name of the village was changed to Paris, at the suggestion of T. H. R. Poteet, an early settler of French descent.

A disastrous fire, which practically wiped out the business section and a great deal of the residential part

of the town, occurred on March 21, 1916. This was a hard blow to the citizenship of Paris, but they immediately decided to rebuild the town as quickly and as substantially as was possible, with the result that Paris today is one of the most modern cities of Texas, with a business district consisting entirely of brick buildings, while its residential sections contain many beautiful churches and an abundance of handsome homes.

Paris is an industrial center, having forty factories with an annual payroll of nearly two million dollars. Approximately eleven million dollars are invested in these plants. Twenty wholesale houses make their homes there and employ one thousand people. There are thirty miles of paved streets in the city, and an electric street railway, five miles long, facilitates local travel.

Paris has a public school system which is unexcelled by any other city of equal size, and its scholastic enrollment is about forty-four hundred. The population of the city in 1920 was 15,040, and it is estimated that there are nearly twenty thousand people living there at this time.

Transportation facilities are excellent, there being five railroads entering the city, which afford efficient distribution for its agricultural and manufactured products.

SHERMAN, county seat of Grayson county, is located fourteen miles south of the Red river and about sixty miles north of Dallas. It was founded in 1848 by the Grayson county commissioners, and named in honor of Colonel Sidney Sherman of San Jacinto fame.

The town was first located four miles west of its

present site, on a prairie in the center of the county, where a log courthouse was built, but, as there was neither water nor wood there, it was moved the following year to where it now stands.

On April 6th, 1848, Samuel Blagg purchased forty acres of land from J. E. Shannon for one hundred dollars, and donated it to Grayson county, the consideration being that the county seat be permanently located there.

Sherman today is a large manufacturing center. It has thirty-seven factories which include flour mills, cotton mills, ice plants, shirt and overall factories, a gin-manufacturing plant, and an iron foundry, besides the shops maintained by the Frisco lines. It is estimated that the products manufactured there annually are valued at nearly twenty-five million dollars. There are also twenty wholesale houses in Sherman, which add greatly to the total amount of business done there.

The territory surrounding the city is a fine diversified farming country, and Sherman with its five railroads and excellent transportation facilities, is an ideal shipping point.

Sherman is also an educational center, having in addition to its splendid public school system, six colleges and private schools.

The population of Sherman in 1920 was 15,031. A recent local census shows that this has been increased to nearly eighteen thousand.

MARSHALL, county seat of Harrison county, is located one hundred and fifty miles east of Dallas and twenty-five miles from the Louisiana state line. The

town was founded in 1840, five years after the death of Chief Justice John Marshall, in whose honor it was named. It was chosen county seat in 1842 and incorporated in 1844.

Marshall is an industrial and educational town. There are forty-one industrial plants in the city, employing twenty-eight hundred men. These include the shops of the T. & P. railroad, a large plant making a decolorizing and deodorizing carbon from lignite, a large basket factory, a brick plant, a car wheel and foundry works, a mill and elevator company, a cotton oil mill and various others. The city is connected with one of the largest natural gas fields by a ten-inch pipe line which supplies thirty million cubic feet of gas daily.

From an educational standpoint, Marshall ranks among the foremost of Texas cities. In addition to the seven public schools of the city, there is the College of Marshall, a Baptist institution of high standing, two negro colleges, namely Bishop College and Wiley University, and two Catholic schools, one for girls and one for boys.

The population of Marshall in 1920 was 14,271, and it is estimated that there are sixteen thousand people living there at this time.

BRECKENRIDGE, county seat of Stephens county, is located ninety miles west of Fort Worth. It was settled in 1876 by a group of pioneers and named in honor of United States Senator John C. Breckenridge of Kentucky. The town was incorporated in 1919 and the official census taken found 1,846 inhabitants there in 1920. It was just an ordinary town, in the midst of

cattle country, and without railroad communication with the outside world. It seemed destined to remain that for some time.

Then oil was discovered in Stephens county and soon gushers were spouting from the prairies! An oil rush began and Breckenridge became the center of feverish activity. Shacks and tents went up on all sides and in a short time the country for miles around was leased for drilling purposes. Before the original inhabitants realized what was happening the population had grown to many thousands. The erection of buildings started and in an incredibly short time Breckenridge was transformed into a boom oil town. It was a mighty rough place for a while, as all such places are, and without modern conveniences the seething mass of humanity which flocked to the new field created conditions which beggar description. Disastrous fires threatened the entire town on several occasions. But soon men who had obtained interests in the new community, together with the leaders of the original town, set to work to bring order out of chaos, with the result that Breckenridge in due course became an orderly and well-managed city.

Today, with the oil boom past, Breckenridge has settled down to a steady growth. Oil is still its chief industry, for the adjacent fields will produce for years to come. But it has set about developing other industries. It now has good railroad connections with the rest of the country and its population is about fourteen thousand. The city owns a million-dollar water system and a one hundred and fifty thousand dollar filtration plant. It has excellent schools and churches and many new civic improvements are being installed.

CLEBURNE, county seat of Johnson county, lies thirty-two miles south of Fort Worth. The town was founded in 1867 when the county seat was moved from Buchanan to its present site, and named in honor of Patrick Ronayne Cleburne, who, enlisted in the Confederate army as a private, rose rapidly to the rank of brigadier-general, distinguished himself in many fierce encounters, and finally was killed in the battle of Franklin. The town got its first railroad in 1879.

Among its industries, Cleburne has the shops of the Santa Fe Railroad, two flour mills, four gins, a peanut plant, said to be one of the largest in the country, a large iron foundry, a planing mill, two ice cream factories, a compress, a broom factory and two ice plants.

The city lies in a fertile agricultural belt growing cotton, corn, oats, sweet potatoes, berries, fruits and peanuts. Part of this soil is sandy loam and the rest is black clay, giving the territory contiguous to Cleburne a diversified crop.

Cleburne has an excellent public school system and there are twenty churches within its city limits. The city owns its water system, which cost more than five hundred thousand dollars. Its population in 1920 was 12,820, and has grown considerably since then.

GREENVILLE, county seat of Hunt county, is located fifty miles northeast of Dallas. It was founded late in 1846, and named in honor of General Tom Green, a Texas patriot, who died in the service of his country in a Mexican prison. On March 22, 1850, McQuinney H. Wright deeded to the town commissioners one hundred acres of land to be used as the

county seat. The town was incorporated in 1874 and B. D. Martin was its first mayor.

Greenville today is an excellent business town. Nine railroad outlets from this point to the great commercial and industrial centers of the country render excellent distribution facilities. Eight wholesale houses are located there, beside which there is a cottonseed oil refinery, one of the largest flour mills in Texas, and one of the largest cotton compresses in the world. In addition there are a number of smaller factories.

Corn, cotton, sugar cane, alfalfa, kaffir corn and milo maize are grown in abundance on the territory surrounding Greenville, and the citizens of the city are in constant touch with the agricultural interests of the county.

Greenville has twenty-five miles of paved streets, and five state highways pass through it. Its public school system is excellent and two private junior colleges are located there.

The population of Greenville in 1920, according to the official federal census, was 12,384, but many families have moved there since that year, and it is estimated that there are now more than fifteen thousand inhabitants in the city, known to have "the blackest land and the whitest people."

TYLER, county seat of Smith county, is located about one hundred miles southeast of Dallas. The town was founded in 1846, at which time Smith county was formed from part of Nacogdoches county, and named in honor of John Tyler, tenth president of the United States. Tyler was incorporated in 1875.

Lying in a rich agricultural section and having exceptional transportation facilities, the city is today one of the important wholesale and financial centers of east Texas. Among its concerns are three large wholesale groceries, a wholesale hardware, and a few fruit and produce houses. It has cottonseed oil mills, railroad shops, brick plants, an ice factory, an overall factory and many cotton gins and saw mills. Tyler is also a fruit and vegetable canning town and distributes these commodities over several states.

The home of the East Texas Fair Association, which has been an agency in the development of diversified farming in Texas, is there. Tyler also has one of the largest business colleges in the state, and a new hotel has recently been erected which classes among the best in Texas.

The population of Tyler, according to the official federal census of 1920, was 12,085. It is estimated that this figure has been increased to over fifteen thousand during the past few years.

MEXIA is located in Limestone county, fifty-four miles east of Waco. It was founded in 1872 with the building of the Houston and Texas Central railroad, and named for General Enrique Mexía, a distinguished Mexican who owned a large tract of land where the town now stands.

The growth of Mexia was normal until 1921. The year previous to this its population was 3,482. Farming was the main industry of its citizens and a group of men who were convinced that there was oil in this area were digging wells and prospecting.

In the fall of 1921 came the big boom. The "Rogers Discovery" well came in and, immediately after it, many more. In less than three weeks' time the population of the town had increased from four to forty thousand people. When this boom struck the town, it had accommodations for six thousand at the most. All the houses were filled to overflowing and many hundreds slept on the sidewalks. With the thousands of honest and fearless men in the oil game came hundreds of gamblers and thieves who started such a carnival of crime as had never before been known in Texas. The city government found itself unable to cope with the situation and appealed to the governor of the state for help. The governor declared martial law, and with the Texas Rangers and military forces cleaned up the town, ridding it of its undesirables, as well as taking charge of the sanitary conditions.

Mexia today has about twelve thousand inhabitants. While oil is still its main industry, the richness of the surrounding territory also makes it a center of agriculture. Mexia has spent large amounts for a sanitary sewer system and water works. Its school system is above the average, and many miles of paving have been laid.

BROWNSVILLE, county seat of Cameron county, is situated on the Rio Grande river, in the extreme southern point of Texas. It was founded in 1848, Fort Brown having been located there, and named for Major Frederick Brown. The town was incorporated in 1850.

Brownsville is famed as the gateway to Mexico, and

with the opening of a deep water harbor at Point Isabel, twenty-six miles distant, to be completed shortly, with which it is connected by railway, it is certain to increase in importance. It is the distributing center of a large area in Northern Mexico.

The population of Brownsville in 1920 was 11,791, and it is estimated that its present population is around sixteen thousand. The town has several miles of paved streets, an electric street car line and an excellent public school system.

Among the products raised on the territory contiguous are corn, cotton, milo maize, kaffir corn, alfalfa and citrus fruits.

Brownsville, aside from being a wide-awake business center, is rapidly forging to the front as a tourist center.

TEXARKANA is situated on the boundary line of Texas and Arkansas, twenty-eight miles north of the northern boundary of Louisiana. One of its streets, called Stateline avenue, which bisects the city, separates Texarkana, Bowie county, Texas, from Texarkana, Miller county, Arkansas.

The name is derived from the first syllable of Texas, the first syllable of Arkansas and the last syllable of Louisiana. The twin cities, as they are called, have separate municipal governments but the same post office, the western half of which is in Texas, and the eastern half in Arkansas.

Texarkana was first settled in 1874 and incorporated a year later. It is a large railroad center and several railroad shops are maintained there. It has natural gas for industrial uses from one of the largest fields in the country. Chief among its industries are the manufacture of lumber, ice, brick, window glass, sheet metal, caskets and sewer pipes. It also has creosoting plants, cotton compresses and cotton-oil mills. A seven-foot vein of lignite underlies Texarkana and its vicinity and is within reach.

The official census of Texarkana, Texas, for 1920, was 11,480, which is about two thousand more than that of its twin city. Since that time, however, both have grown and it is estimated that their combined population will exceed 30,000 today.

CORSICANA, county seat of Navarro county, is located fifty-one miles southeast of Dallas. Both city and county were named after J. Antonio Navarro, at one time a member of the Texas senate, whose father was a native of the island of Corsica. The names were suggested by Major C. M. Winkler, a Confederate veteran, as a compliment to Navarro's patriotism and devotion to the land of his adoption. The names, used together, signify "Navarro the Corsican."

Navarro county was cut out of Robertson county in 1846, and the city of Corsicana was incorporated two years later.

Corsicana's chief industries are oil-refining, the manufacture of oil well machinery, cotton duck, brick and various smaller manufacturing plants. The principal products of the contiguous territory are cotton, corn, small grain, truck farming and the raising of thoroughbred cattle.

Transportation facilities to and from Corsicana are excellent, there being three trunk lines entering and

leaving the city besides an electric interurban line between that point and Dallas.

The population of Corsicana in 1920 was 11,356 and a local census taken in 1923 showed that this had been increased to 15,014.

PALESTINE, county seat of Anderson county, is located about ninety-eight miles southeast of Dallas. It was designated the county seat in 1846, when Houston county was split up and Anderson county formed from part of it. The town was laid out two years later.

The commissioners of this new county were offered one hundred acres of land for a county seat if they would locate it at the crossroads of the Old Spanish Trail, which lay between San Antonio and Nacogdoches, and of the road from Houston county north. This offer was accepted and the courthouse was located at this junction.

Before the Civil war, Palestine was an educational center, and many students went there to attend school.

The I. & G. N. Railroad maintain their general offices and some shops at Palestine. There is a gas plant, an ice factory, a cotton-oil mill, a candy factory and two machine shops in the city. Its industries also include six wholesale grocery houses, two wholesale packers, three wholesale grain dealers, one creamery and a salt plant with one of the largest salt block presses in the world.

Chief among the products of the territory contiguous to Palestine are cotton, corn, fruit and hogs.

Palestine was credited with 11,039 inhabitants in 1920.

TEMPLE is situated in Bell county, about thirty-five miles southwest of Waco. It was founded on June 29th, 1881, by the Santa Fe Railroad, and named for Major B. M. Temple, chief engineer of that road. Temple was incorporated in 1882.

The city lies in an agricultural region, being surrounded by the famous Texas "black lands." Cotton and corn are the main products of its contiguous territory.

Temple's chief industries are agricultural implement works, cotton compresses, cottonseed-oil mills, flour mills, a chewing gum and candy factory and lumber mills.

The official federal census of 1920 gives Temple a population of 11,033 inhabitants, but some new territory has been added to the city since that year and it is estimated that there are now nearly sixteen thousand people living within the city limits.

DEL RIO, county seat of Val Verde county, is located on the Rio Grande river, one hundred and sixtynine miles west of San Antonio. It was founded in 1868 when a number of men purchased the land, formed a stock company, and planted a settlement on the west bank of the San Felipe river.

In 1870 the original settlers undertook the construction of what is now the main irrigation canal. By 1881, when the Southern Pacific Railroad built a line along the north side of the settlement, the population had increased to about five hundred people, and the founders divided most of the land into lots and sold them. Since the coming of the railroad the growth of the town has been steady, and in 1920 its population was 10,589. It is estimated that there are about 12,000 people living there now.

Del Rio was incorporated in 1911. At the time of its settlement, the town was in Kinney county and was attached to Uvalde county for judicial purposes. Val Verde county was created in 1885 and Del Rio immediately became the county seat.

The raising of sheep and goats for the production of wool and mohair are the chief industries of the territory surrounding Del Rio. The city is one of the largest inland markets of these commodities in the country. Cattle-raising is also carried on extensively. Vegetables, grapes, figs, oranges and oats and corn are among the principal products raised on its contiguous lands.

CORPUS CHRISTI, county seat of Nueces county, is located on Corpus Christi Bay, an arm of the Gulf of Mexico. La Salle, on one of his expeditions, touched this coast on Corpus Christi day, a festival day of the Roman Catholic church, and in that way its name was acquired. The founder of the town was Colonel H. L. Kinney, who went there in 1840 and purchased from Enrique Villareal, a captain in the Mexican army, the title to a large tract of land, which is the present site of Corpus Christi. Col. Kinney made this spot his home, and advertised the place far and near, sending literature to people in the British Isles and other foreign countries, telling of the cheap lands to be had in this section. This caused many families to cross the seas from England, Germany and other lands, and make their homes on this site.

Corpus Christi dates its organization back to 1846, when the county of Nueces was created. This was a year after the entrance of General Zachary Taylor into the city with his army, to equip them for the war with Mexico. To this end, the United States government erected several buildings and wharves in 1845. Corpus Christi was the headquarters of the American army of occupation in 1846, after this country had taken possession of the disputed territory between the Nueces river and the Rio Grande.

United States army engineers have designated Corpus Christi as the location at which a new deep water harbor shall be built. Congress has appropriated enough money to dredge the channel to a depth of twenty-five feet, and the state legislature and the county officials have authorized funds for the building of the harbor and its protection.

The territory surrounding Corpus Christi has fertile black land, and agriculture is one of its important industries. The city is a fishing center and famous as a seashore resort. Its population in 1920 was 10,522, which figure has been greatly increased during the past few years.

ABILENE, county seat of Taylor county, is located one hundred and sixty miles west of Fort Worth. It was founded in 1881 with the building of the Texas & Pacific railroad westward through that territory. The town was named after Abilene, Kansas, to which place early day cattle-raisers drove their herds for market.

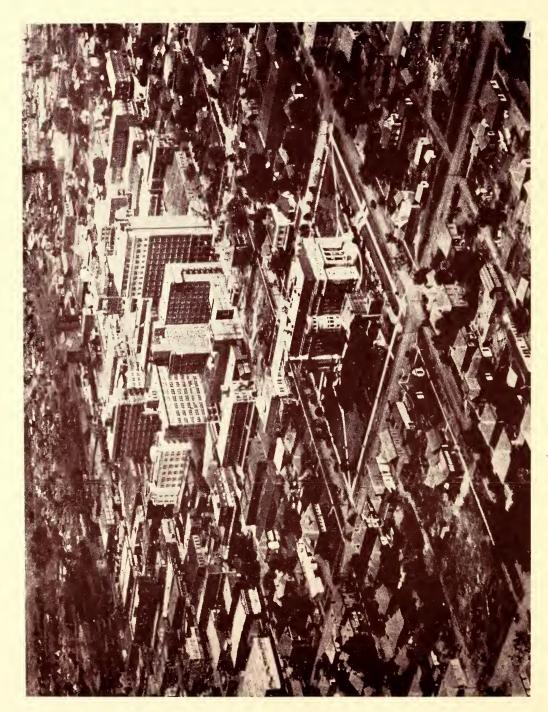
Through the influence of J. Stoddard Johnson, a Kentucky editor, the town was built on property owned by C. W. and John D. Merchant, J. T. Berry and John



A VIEW OF EL PASO



STATE LINE AVENUE, TEXARKANA (Texarkana and El Paso are 862 Miles Apart)



AIR VIEW OF WICHITA FALLS

N. Simpson. During the first few months of its existence, its population was accommodated mostly in tents and crude shacks. When the population had reached two thousand at the end of about a year, building activities got under way and several substantial structures were erected. Its growth has never ceased from that time. Today the population is estimated at eighteen thousand, which represents a tremendous increase from the official federal census of 1920, giving the city 10,274 inhabitants.

Abilene owns its own waterworks and sewerage system, costing more than a million dollars. The water comes by gravity from Lake Abilene, located in the hills, seventeen miles from the city, which has a capacity of seven billion gallons.

The territory surrounding Abilene is very fertile, and much cotton and fruit are raised in that section. These, with the large cattle-raising interests, are its main industries. Transportation facilities are excellent, there being three railroads entering and leaving the city.

Abilene, beside having an exceptional public school system, has three colleges, one academy and two commercial colleges, all of which afford advantages as to education.

SAN ANGELO, county seat of Tom Green county, is located in central west Texas, two hundred and forty-three miles southwest of Fort Worth. The town was laid out by Bart J. DeWitt in 1869 when there were just a few settlers in the vicinity. It became county seat in 1882, after a flood had wiped out the town of Ben Franklin, five miles south, and was incorporated in

1889. DeWitt named the settlement after his wife's sister, Angela, who became a nun at a San Antonio convent.

For a great many years San Angelo was known as the "cow town of the west," it being the headquarters for cattle-raisers over a very large territory, and, although cattle-raising is still one of its chief industries, agriculture and sheep-raising have become very important industrial factors for the city. Cotton, grains, small fruits, melons, celery, onions and strawberries are raised with unusual success on the contiguous land. For many years San Angelo has been the largest wool and mohair concentration and shipping point in the country.

San Angelo is the financial and industrial center and distributing point of a very large territory. Sixty-eight wholesale firms are located there and these do an annual business of twelve million dollars.

The city is a health resort, having an elevation of two thousand feet. It is visited by about thirty-four thousand tourists annually. The public school system of San Angelo is exceptional, and there are several private schools located there.

In 1920 San Angelo had 10,050 inhabitants and in 1923, according to a local census, the population had increased to 14,145.

EASTLAND, county seat of Eastland county, was laid out in 1875, by C. U. Connellee, and named in honor of William M. Eastland, lieutenant during the Texas revolution, and captain during the Mexican war. The town was incorporated in 1897.

The settlement grew very slowly and until 1919 its

population was less than two thousand. During that year came the great oil boom and in a short time there were nearly 10,000 people living there. The 1920 census credits Eastland with a population of 9,368. It has since remained approximately at that figure.

Eastland, besides being an oil center, lies in a rich agricultural district, and products raised on territory surrounding it are cotton, corn, grain, wheat, oats, barley, peanuts, sweet potatoes and fruit. There are also large deposits of raw material for the manufacture of cement and brick in this territory and, having one of the largest gas fields, it possesses a superabundance of natural gas.

ORANGE, county seat of Orange county, is located on the Sabine river, eight miles from its junction with Sabine lake, and forty miles by water route from the deep water of the Gulf of Mexico.

The site of the present location of Orange was originally known as Greens Bluff, the name being changed to Madison about 1850 and to Orange in 1856, the latter being adopted from the fact that there were large orange groves in the vicinity at that time. Orange was first incorporated in 1858, and John Fielding, who operated a shipyard, was its first mayor. Because of the Civil war, the incorporation was allowed to lapse in 1861. The city was again incorporated in 1881 and Major B. F. Norsworthy was elected mayor.

A great amount of deserved credit is given to Henry J. Lutcher for the upbuilding of Orange. Coming from Williamsport, Pa., in the early eighties, he and G. Bedell Moore, both lumber men, saw in southern pine an oppor-

tunity for great development. Up to that time cypress had been the main product of the mills in that section, and pine had not yet taken its place. Locating at Orange and establishing a lumber mill there, Mr. Lutcher fought his way through every difficulty and, at his death a few years ago, left a firmly established lumber business with enormous assets.

While the chief industry of Orange is the manufacture of lumber, another important end of the industrials is an extensive oil field, six miles west of the city, which produces large quantities of high grade petroleum.

Orange is a deep water port with a present channel of twenty-six feet at mean low tide, and work is now in progress dredging it to a depth of thirty feet, which will allow large ocean-going steamers to come directly to its ports.

The official census of 1920 gave Orange 9,212 inhabitants. In the past few years the city has grown until today there are nearly 15,000 people making their homes in that delightful spot on the Sabine.

GAINESVILLE, county seat of Cooke county, was founded by order of the court of that county on the nineteenth day of August, 1850. Some trouble had been experienced in locating a county seat, as there was no town in the county. Court had been held at the military headquarters called Fort Fitzhugh, which was occupied by rangers as protection from the Indians.

The site of the present city of Gainesville was finally chosen near the center of the county, and named for General Edmund Pendleton Gaines of the United States

army, hero of the battle of Fort Erie in the War of 1812. Gainesville was incorporated February 17, 1873.

The territory surrounding the city is an agricultural country, growing cotton, corn and fruits. There is also a good deal of livestock breeding, many registered herds being in evidence. Although the chief industry of the city is merchandising, other industries include cottonginning and compressing, cotton-oil milling, petroleum refining and flour-milling.

The population of Gainesville, according to the official census, was 8,646 in 1920. This has been increasing steadily until there are now about 9,500 living there.

TERRELL is located in Kaufman county, about thirty-two miles east of Dallas. It was named in honor of Robert A. Terrell, its earliest settler. The town was founded in 1872 with the arrival of the Texas & Pacific railroad, some years after the settlement was formed. Terrell was incorporated in 1881.

Terrell is the seat of the Texas Military College, where young men are given training in academic courses as well as military tactics. The North Texas Hospital for the Insane is also located there.

Among the industries of the city are railroad shops, cottonseed-oil mills, gins, compresses, flour mills and a bonnet and apron factory. Cotton and grains are the chief products raised on contiguous territory, and live-stock ranks next.

The population of Terrell in 1920 was 8,349, and it is estimated that nearly 10,000 people now live there.

BROWNWOOD, county seat of Brown county, is located one hundred and forty miles southwest of Fort Worth. It was first settled in 1856, during which year the county was formed, and named in honor of Capt. Henry S. Brown. The first house in Brownwood was built by Welcome Chandler during the same year, and Brownwood was incorporated in 1876.

Brownwood is a large wholesale provision center, has three oil refineries and is a horse and mule market. Stock and poultry-raising, farming and dairying comprise the other chief industries of the town. Cotton, wheat and pecans are the chief agricultural products of the contiguous territory.

Two institutions of higher learning, namely Howard Payne and Daniel Baker Colleges are located there, which enroll more than a thousand students annually. The population of Brownwood in 1920 was 8,223, and during the past few years it has grown to a city of more than 10,000 inhabitants.

WAXAHACHIE, county seat of Ellis county, is located thirty miles south of Dallas. It was founded in 1847, two years before the county was created, by Major E. W. Rogers, and incorporated in 1871. Waxahachie is an Indian name, meaning "cow creek," and was thus named because of the creek which flows through the town.

The chief products of its contiguous territory are cotton, corn and small grains. Ellis county is considered one of the greatest cotton-producing counties in the world. In 1912, its best year, it produced one hundred and eighty-seven thousand bales. For many years preceding the building of the M. K. & T. and H. & T. C.

railroads in that section, Waxahachie was one of the largest inland cotton markets in the country.

Among the industries of the city are a large cotton mill, two cottonseed-oil mills, a cotton compress, two candy factories and a large, complete refinery. There are twenty miles of paved streets and one hundred miles of cement sidewalks in the city.

The population of Waxahachie in 1920 was 7,958 and it is estimated that there are now 8,500 people living there.

MINERAL WELLS is situated in Palo Pinto county, fifty-two miles west of Fort Worth. It was founded in 1872 by the Lynch family, who, traveling westward toward the valley, drilled a well at this point and, regaining their health from its water, persuaded other east Texas families to come there and found a community. The town was named for the health-giving waters of its wells.

It is estimated that one hundred and fifty thousand visitors come to Mineral Wells annually to drink its waters and indulge in the recreations afforded tourists.

The population of Mineral Wells in 1920, according to the official federal census, was 7,890, and it is estimated that there are now nearly 11,000 people making their home there.

DENTON, county seat of Denton county, is located thirty-six miles northeast of Fort Worth. Both town and county were named in honor of John B. Denton, pioneer Indian fighter, who was killed in the early forties in a fight with Indians near the Tarrant-Denton county line.

The town was founded in November, 1855, when it was selected as the county seat, which had been at Pinckneyville, Old Alton and Alton, during the eleven years intervening since the county had been established in 1845. Denton was incorporated in 1866.

Denton is essentially a college town, its principal assets being the two state colleges; the College of Industrial Arts, for girls, and the coeducational North Texas Teachers' College, located there. These have a regular attendance of more than three thousand students, and their annual enrollments, including summer sessions, are well above six thousand.

The major products of its contiguous territory are wheat, cotton, corn and oats, and during the past few years there has been a large growth in poultry-raising and dairying.

The population of Denton in 1920 was 7,625. Its present population is estimated at 8,500, exclusive of the students at the state colleges.

CISCO is located in Eastland county, about one hundred miles southwest of Fort Worth. It was founded in 1881, following the completion of the T. & P. and the Texas Central railroads to that point. It was named for John J. Cisco of New York, a director of the Texas Central, now the M. K. & T., road. The town was incorporated the same year.

Cisco is the home of the West Texas Christian College, and has a complete system of public schools, including a two hundred and fifty thousand dollar high school. A million dollar dam forms Lake Cisco which impounds sixteen billion gallons of water for city use

and irrigation. The streets are well paved and its sewerage system is excellent.

The chief products of its contiguous territory are fruit, cotton, livestock and poultry. There is also some oil produced nearby. The population of Cisco in 1920 was 7,422, and in a local census recently taken this figure was increased to 10,417.

ENNIS is located in Ellis county, thirty-four miles south of Dallas. It was founded by a townsite company in 1872, when the Houston and Texas Central Railroad built their line from Corsicana to Dallas, and named for Cornelius Ennis, one of the directors of this company. The town was incorporated in 1875.

The chief industries of Ennis are railroad repair shops, cotton compresses, cottonseed-oil mills and flour mills. It also has extensive agricultural and stockraising interests.

The population of Ennis in 1920 was 7,224 inhabitants, and this figure has since been increased.

HILLSBORO, county seat of Hill county, is located thirty-two miles north of Waco. It was named after Dr. George W. Hill, who helped form the county, and was incorporated in 1853, the same year the county was created. Thomas Steiner donated two hundred and twenty acres of land to the county for the purpose of establishing its seat there.

Its chief industries are cotton mills, cottonseed-oil mills, compresses, ice plants and machine shops. It lies in an agricultural district producing cotton, corn, small grain, cattle and hogs.

Hillsboro has exceptional transportation facilities, being the junction of four railways. It has a very creditable public school system, several fine churches, more than six miles of paved streets and a beautiful park.

The population of Hillsboro according to the federal census of 1920, was 6,952. A local census taken in 1923 showed an increase to 7,584.

McKINNEY, county seat of Collin county, is located twenty-eight miles north of Dallas. It was founded in 1842 by a group of pioneers, including Collin McKinney, after whom both the city and county were named.

McKinney is the center of an agricultural and stockraising community, and its surrounding territory produces cotton, corn, wheat, oats, barley, alfalfa, cattle, mules and poultry.

Among its industries are a large flour mill, a cotton mill, cottonseed-oil mill, compress, grain elevators, ice cream factory, wholesale grocery houses, wholesale grain and hay firms, and several cotton gins.

McKinney has an excellent public school system and several private schools. Its population in 1920 was 6,677, and has increased to nearly 10,000 during the past few years.

BRYAN, county seat of Brazos county, is located about midway between Houston and Waco. It was founded in 1865 and named in honor of Colonel William Joel Bryan, who came to Texas in 1831. The town is part of a land grant made to Stephen F. Austin.

Texas A. & M. College is five miles distant from Bryan, and there are two private schools in the town in addition to an excellent public school system. All these tend to make Bryan one of the leading educational centers in the state.

Its main industries are those dealing with the production and marketing of cotton and livestock. The population of Bryan in 1920 was 6,307, and since that time there has been a substantial increase.

WEATHERFORD, county seat of Parker county, is located thirty miles west of Fort Worth. The town was founded in 1856, a year after the county was organized, named after Jefferson Weatherford, state senator, and laid out by Isaac O. Headley and David O. Norton.

The industries of Weatherford include two wholesale grocery houses, one wholesale dry goods house, one wholesale drug company, three wholesale produce houses, two broom factories, one planing mill, two foundries, one ice plant, one flour mill, two grain elevators, one oil refinery and a cottonseed-oil mill.

Weatherford is the center of a diversified farming section and among its chief products are watermelons, of which more than one thousand cars are shipped from there annually. The population of Weatherford in 1920 was 6,203.

YOAKUM is located on the DeWitt and Lavaca county line, eighty miles east of San Antonio. It was founded in 1887 when the S. A. & A. P. Railroad built its lines through that section and located its shops there. The town was named in honor of B. F. Yoakum, who was at the time associated with that road. It was incorporated in 1892.

Yoakum is an agricultural and manufacturing center.

Among its industries, besides the railroad interests there, are an oil mill, an ice plant, a broom factory, a large marble yard and several other factories. The surrounding territory raises cotton, corn, poultry and dairy products.

The population of Yoakum is 6,184.

BONHAM, county seat of Fannin county, is located twenty-five miles east of Sherman and forty miles west of Paris. The present site of the town was first platted in 1837 by Bailey Inglish and John P. Simpson, who, together, donated the original townsite, and named the town Bois d'Arc. This was later changed to Inglish and shortly thereafter renamed Bonham in honor of Col. James B. Bonham, one of the heroes of the Alamo.

The population of Bonham in 1920 was 6,008. One of the largest cotton mills in that part of the state is located there and has been running more than twenty years. There is also a large cottonseed-oil mill besides several other factories. Two railroads give Bonham ample shipping and transportation facilities.

THURBER is located in the northwestern corner of Erath county, about seventy miles west of Fort Worth. In the year 1885 W. W. and Harvey Johnson prospected in this vicinity for coal. A shaft was sunk and a vein of coal found at a depth of sixty-five feet. The Johnson brothers acquired three thousand acres of land and developed the first mine.

From this beginning as a coal-mining camp, the town of Thurber has grown. It has been maintained strictly as a company town for the Texas & Pacific Coal & Oil Company and its subsidiaries, which include the Thurber

Brick Company. Practically all the inhabitants of Thurber are employed by that organization.

The population of the town in 1920 was 5,980, but, with a decrease of coal output since that year, the population has decreased somewhat.

TAYLOR is located in Williamson county, about thirty-six miles northeast of Austin. The town was platted in 1876, when there were several scattered settlers in that section. The Texas Land Company, with headquarters in Palestine, Texas, bought the Taylor townsite, then called Taylorsville, for an official of the I. & G. N. Railroad, and advertised a sale of town lots to take place in June, 1867, presuming that the I. & G. N. would have reached Taylor by that time. The sale of the lots took place during that month, in spite of the fact that the road was not completed until some time later. The town was incorporated the same year.

In 1882, the Missouri Pacific Railway, now the M. K. & T., was built into Taylor and remained the terminus for several years. The same year a water system was installed to supply the city with water.

Taylor today is a city of about 8,000 inhabitants. According to the official federal census of 1920, it had 5,965 inhabitants at that time. There are many factories located there, among which are railroad shops, cottonseed-oil mills, compresses and flour mills. Being located in a black land country, the city has large agricultural interests. Cotton, grain, fruit and livestock are the main products raised on the surrounding land.

VICTORIA, county seat of Victoria county, is located about one hundred miles southeast of San

Antonio and twenty-five miles from Lavaca bay, an inlet of the Gulf of Mexico. It was founded in 1824, by Don Martín de Leon, who named the settlement after Juan Felix Fernandez, the first president of Mexico. Fernandez had changed his name to Guadalupe Victoria, taking the first name in honor of the virgin patroness of Mexico and the surname to commemorate a victory over the Spaniards. The town was incorporated in 1839.

Although the population of Victoria in 1920 was 5,957, it is estimated that there are about eight thousand people living there. Five railroads intersecting the city afford ample transportation facilities. Cattle-raising and farming are the main interests of its citizens, and cotton and citrus fruits are among the products of the contiguous territory.

In addition to an excellent public school system, Victoria has several private educational institutions. There are three and one-half miles of paved streets in the city, and a splendid water system with a 300,000 gallon steel reservoir, a modern sewer disposal, incinerator, and other civic improvements.

EAGLE PASS, county seat of Maverick county, is situated on the Rio Grande, and on the Mexican International and the Southern Pacific railroads. Before the Civil war it was a small village, surrounded by cattle country, the population of which was largely Mexican. During that war, however, when the ports of Texas were blockaded by the fleets of the Federal government, Eagle Pass became the busy center of a considerable foreign trade, chiefly by way of Mexico, large quantities of

cotton being exported and manufactured goods being imported. Today it is the principal town in a region in which agriculture is carried on by irrigation. Stock-raising is an important industry in the surrounding country also and lumber and bricks are manufactured in the town. There is an extensive trade in hides, wool and cattle and the town is the port of entry for the Saluria district. The population of Eagle Pass in 1920, according to the census of that year, was 5,675, an increase of 2,229 over that of 1910.

LONGVIEW, county seat of Gregg county, is located about eighty miles southwest of Texarkana. It lies very close to the old settlement known as Aroville, on the road from Jefferson to Tyler. Its name is derived from a nearby hill, from which a long view is obtained in all directions. The town was incorporated in 1871.

Among the industries of the city are a plow-manufacturing plant, a box factory and several planing mills. The main interests of Longview lie in cattle-raising and general farming. The chief products of its contiguous territory are cotton, corn, potatoes, peanuts and all kinds of fruits and vegetables. Four railroads entering the city give it excellent transportation facilities. The population of Longview in 1920 was 5,713.

SULPHUR SPRINGS, county seat of Hopkins county, is located about seventy-five miles northeast of Dallas. It was founded in 1866, when the county seat was moved from Old Tarrant, five miles north of there, to its present site, and the town was named Sulphur Springs because of the springs that were there at the time.

The industries of Sulphur Springs include a cotton-seed-oil mill, four gins, an ice factory, a bonnet and apron factory, a mattress factory, a candy factory and poultry-dressing and shipping plants.

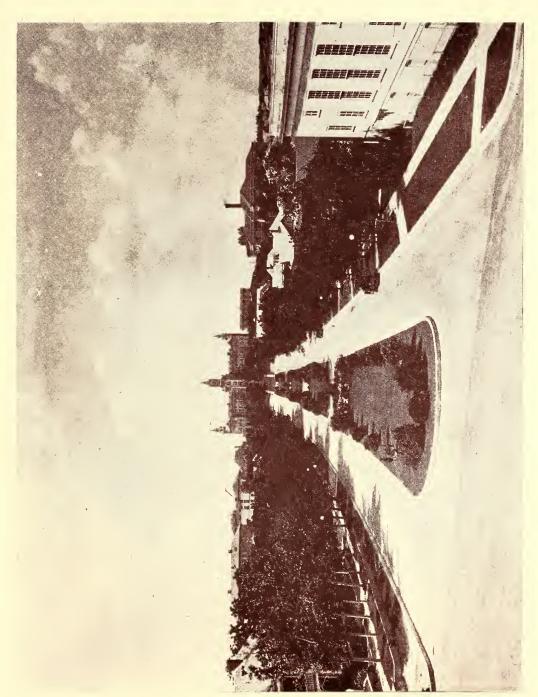
A variety of soils permits a diversified crop to be grown on the territory surrounding the city. Cotton, corn and oats predominate among the staple crops. Melons, peaches, potatoes and vegetables are also grown extensively. Cattle, poultry and hogs are also raised in this section.

Sulphur Springs is a modern city and has fifteen miles of paved streets. Its population in 1920 was 5,558, and it is estimated that there are now eight thousand people making their home within the city limits.

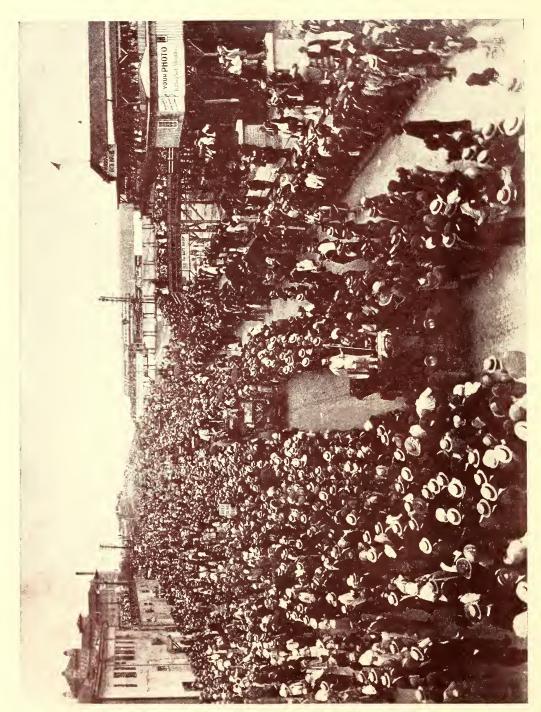
McALLEN is located in Hidalgo county, fifty-five miles northwest of Brownsville and eight miles north of the Rio Grande river. It was founded in June, 1907, by William Briggs, a promoter, and named for James B. McAllen, who owned the property of the present site of the town. McAllen was incorporated on April 1, 1910.

The chief products of the territory contiguous to McAllen are citrus fruits, although there are quantities of corn, cabbages and onions raised there. The population of the city in 1920 was 5,330. It is estimated that this has been increased to 6,500 during the past few years.

BURKBURNETT, which is located in Wichita county, came into being when the Wichita Falls & Northwestern railroad was built through the pasture of the late Capt. S. Burk Burnett, pioneer cattleman, in



APPROACH TO THE UNIVERSITY OF TEXAS



A Fete Day on Galveston Beach

1906. There is an interesting story connected with the naming of the town. Frank Kell, of Wichita Falls, president of the railroad, had promised Captain Burnett that he would name the town after him, and when the site was located application was made to the post office department to have the town named Burk, inasmuch as there already was a town of Burnet in Texas. It developed that there was also a town named "Burke" and the postal authorities rejected the name. Whereupon the request was made to have the name Burk Burnett given the town instead. This was rejected also, it being objected that it was too long, and that it was two names instead of one. It began to look as though the plan to honor Captain Burnett in this way would have to be abandoned. About this time, however, C. W. Merchant, rancher and banker of Abilene, Texas, happened to be in Washington and called on President Roosevelt. Roosevelt had long been a friend and admirer of Captain Burnett, and in the course of a conversation with Colonel Merchant he inquired about him. Colonel Merchant then told the president of the difficulty that was being experienced in naming a town after Captain Burnett and asked if something couldn't be done about it. With characteristic energy President Roosevelt proceeded to "do something about it." immediately called his secretary and dictated a letter to the post office department, virtually demanding that its action in rejecting the name of Burk Burnett be rescinded. This was done in due course, and the name of the town became Burkburnett, the two names being contracted into one.

The public sale of lots for the new town of Burk-

burnett was held on June 6, 1906, and the municipality was incorporated a few weeks later. Thus the town got started, being little more than a village, and it jogged along without showing remarkable growth for twelve years. In 1918, however, S. L. Fowler, who owned a farm near the town, formed a small syndicate among his friends and raised \$12,000 to drill for oil on his place. A sixteen-hundred-barrel well was brought in and that started an oil rush to the region. For months thereafter Burkburnett presented a scene of feverish activity. Not only was a drilling campaign launched in all the surrounding country, but the town lots which had been sold at auction twelve years before became the sites of oil derricks. It was reasoned that there was just as good chance of oil being under the town itself as around it, and this proved to be the case. In a short time Burkburnett became a forest of derricks, so to speak, and wells were soon producing petroleum only twenty or thirty feet apart. In a year's time the Burkburnett field was producing one hundred and twenty thousand barrels a day.

This, of course, made Burkburnett over. When the 1920 census was taken it was found to have a bona fide resident population of 5,300. Today, with boom conditions only a memory, it has about 7,000 people, and has taken its place among the progressive towns of Texas.

VERNON, county seat of Wilbarger county, is located fifty miles northwest of Wichita Falls. It was founded as a trading post and originally named Eagle Flats. The post office department, however, would not

use that name and suggested the town be called Vernon. It was incorporated in 1890.

The chief products of its surrounding territory are cotton, alfalfa, wheat, fruit, poultry and hogs. The land is very fertile and good crops are raised in even the dryest of years.

Vernon has flour mills, oil mills, a candy factory, mattress factory and several other manufacturing plants. Its population in 1920 was 5,142, and it is estimated that there are about seven thousand people residing there now.

BELTON, county seat of Bell county, is located about fifty miles southwest of Waco. It was founded contemporaneously with the organization of the county in 1850, and named Nolanville. In December, 1851, the town was renamed Belton, a contraction of the words Bell and town, in honor of Peter Hansborough Bell, at that time governor of Texas. Belton was incorporated in 1860.

Among the products raised on the territory contiguous to Belton are cotton, corn, wheat, oats, vegetables, cattle, horses, mules, sheep, goats, hogs, poultry and honey.

Belton is the seat of Baylor College for Women, which has an enrollment of two thousand students, and is the largest woman's college in the Southwest. There is also an excellent public school system there.

Belton's chief industry is a yarn mill, and others are a cottonseed oil mill, a cotton compress, a flour mill, a creamery, an ice plant, two corn mills and three cotton gins. The population of Belton in 1920 was 5,098,

and it is estimated that there are now seven thousand people living there.

SAN BENITO is located in Cameron county, about twenty-five miles northwest of Brownsville. It was founded by Samuel A. Robertson and named in honor of Benjamin Hicks, an early settler, the name of the town, though Spanish for Saint Benedict, having been chosen as if with reference to "little Saint Ben." It was originally named Bessie, but this was changed very shortly. The town was incorporated in 1910.

Robertson was instrumental in interesting the Heywood brothers of Jennings, La., in helping to develop the natural industries of this section by means of irrigation with water from the Rio Grande, and it was this that built the city of San Benito.

The chief industries of the town are a large power plant, four gins, a canning factory, an iron and machine company, a box factory and a cold storage plant. Citrus fruits are the main products of its contiguous territory, although cotton, corn, alfalfa and all sorts of vegetables are also raised there.

The population of San Benito in 1920 was 5,070 and according to a local census taken more recently it has 5,500 inhabitants.

BRENHAM, county seat of Washington county, is located about seventy miles northwest of Houston. It was founded in 1844, when it was selected as the county seat; this originally had been at Washington and later at Mt. Vernon. The town was named in honor of Dr. Richard Fox Brenham, a patriot who had sacrificed his life for his companions in an attempted escape from a

Mexican prison. The whole of Brenham is situated on the league of land granted to Mrs. Arabella Harrington in 1831. Jessie Farral and James Hurt donated one hundred acres of land, a part of their purchase from Mrs. Harrington, for a townsite.

Among the industries of Brenham are an oil mill, a coffee roasting plant, machine shops, a gas plant, a packing house and an ice plant. The town has an excellent public school system. The population of Brenham in 1920 was 5,066.

NAVASOTA is situated in the western part of Grimes county, about sixty miles northwest of Houston. It was founded in 1858 when the town of Washington refused to give the H. & T. C. Railroad a bonus to bring the road there and thus lost the opportunity when Navasota was chosen by the railroad. The town was incorporated in 1876.

Navasota today has eight railroad outlets, giving it good transportation facilities. Among its industries are a cooperage plant, a cottonseed oil mill, an ice cream factory, an ice plant and two wholesale groceries. The territory surrounding raises cotton, vegetables, fruits and nuts.

The public school system of Navasota is exceptionally good, and the school library is considered one of the best of its kind in the state. The population of the city, according to the federal census of 1920, is 5,060, and it is estimated that there are at present six thousand people living there.

CHILDRESS, county seat of Childress county, is situated on the Fort Worth & Denver railroad, two hundred

miles northwest of Fort Worth. It was named in honor of George Campbell Childress, author of the Texas declaration of independence. It is characteristic of the rapid growth of the Panhandle country. Forty years ago what is now Childress county was practically uninhabited, the census of 1880 giving it a population of twenty-five persons. Twenty years ago the town of Childress itself had only six hundred and ninety-two people. It grew to 3,818 by 1910, and the 1920 census shows its population to have been 5,003 that year.

Childress is in the midst of a rich agricultural region, the chief products being cotton, wheat, corn and livestock. Railroad repair shops are located there and there are many thriving local industries. The Childress State Fair is an annual event of importance which is doing much to develop the region. The town owns its waterworks.

## CHAPTER LXX.

## OTHER URBAN COMMUNITIES.

NEARLY two hundred and fifty thousand of the people of Texas live in towns of between twenty-five , hundred and five thousand population. There are sixty of such towns that have been incorporated and a few others which are still unincorporated. Many of them are comparatively young, especially in West Texas and the Panhandle—thriving and forward-looking communities on sites which were uninhabited land a few decades ago. Most of them are growing rapidly and among them there may be several destined to become cities of considerable size. When it is borne in mind that the settlement of Texas has taken place during the past century and that forty years ago, for example, El Paso, which is now a city of about fifty thousand people, was only a village of eight hundred, the potentiality of these communities is realized to be immense.

The characteristic thing about Texas communities is their progressive spirit. Pick out any one of these towns at random and inquire of one of its citizens what kind of a town it is and what future is before it and you will be told in absolute sincerity that it is the "finest town of its size in the country," and that it is destined to be a city. This is not a blind faith. It is based upon a very common experience in Texas. Villages have been converted into cities in this wonderful state in an incredibly short time—villages that showed no

more promise of growth on the surface than the smallest and most insignificant of these towns shows today. The foundations of Texas were laid by men who were filled with visions of the future, men of faith and courage, and such men are to be found today in every hamlet in the state. The potentiality of Texas is almost limitless and the process of development which is continually going on is a matter of common—almost commonplace—knowledge among her people. community, therefore, that has achieved the census bureau's classification of "urban" has already made a place for itself in Texas history, and for this reason a short notice of each of them is included in this story of the building of the state. The towns treated in this chapter range from Lufkin, which in the 1920 census just missed the five thousand mark by one hundred and twenty-two, to Kaufman, which just nosed into the urban classification by two, its population when the census-taker came around being 2,501.

LUFKIN, county seat of Angelina county, is located about ninety-five miles northwest of Beaumont. It was founded in 1882 and named after E. P. Lufkin, an engineer engaged in the construction of the railway from Houston to Shreveport, who married the daughter of Colonel Bremond, one of the main officials of the Southern Pacific road at that time. C. A. Ricks built the first house in the town during the same year.

Lufkin has many industrial plants, among which are iron works, lumber mills, a wagon factory, railroad shops, a compress, an ice plant, chemical works and a

gin factory. It is a progressive town, continually adding improvements to its educational, civic and industrial life.

Lufkin is surrounded by fertile land, producing cotton, corn, fruits and vegetables. The raising of livestock is also one of the main industries of that section of the state. The population of the city in 1920 was 4,878, and this has been substantially increased during the past few years.

KINGSVILLE, county seat of Kleberg county, is situated about thirty-five miles southwest of Corpus Christi. It was founded in 1904 by Capt. Richard King, after whom it was named. The town was formerly a part of the famous King ranch, one of the largest in Texas, covering over a million acres. Kingsville was incorporated in 1911.

The chief industries of the town are railroad shops, a large creamery, a broom factory and a cottonseed oil mill. Cotton, corn, maize and citrus fruits are raised on the surrounding country. Kingsville is the seat of the Texas-Mexican Industrial Institute.

The population of Kingsville in 1920 was 4,770, and it is estimated that there are 5,500 inhabitants in the town now.

ELECTRA is located in Wichita county, about thirty miles northwest of Wichita Falls. The town was originally settled by Dan Waggoner in 1890, and named Beaver. This name later was changed to Electra after Electra Waggoner, a daughter of W. T. Waggoner.

Electra is an oil town, and its population in 1910 was about five hundred. The first real oil well came in at the Electra field on April 1, 1911, and from that time

its growth has been rapid. The official census of 1920 shows 4,744 inhabitants and this figure has been increased to 6,500 in 1924.

Next to oil, the chief products of the territory contiguous to Electra are cotton, wheat, oats, cattle and poultry.

HUNTSVILLE, county seat of Walker county, was founded by Pleasant Gray, who established a small trading post at this spot before the Texas revolution. The town is located seventy-five miles north of Houston and was named by Gray after Huntsville, Alabama. Walker county was organized in 1846 when it was formed from part of Montgomery county, and Huntsville was designated the county seat the following year. It was incorporated in 1845.

The Sam Houston Normal Institute, which was established in 1879, is located in Huntsville. The citizens of the town purchased the historic site and buildings which formerly housed the Austin College and tendered them to the state for the location of the Normal Institute as a fitting tribute to Houston, whose old homestead was near by.

The chief products of the territory contiguous to Huntsville are cotton, corn, grain, fruit and livestock. The population of the town in 1920 was 4,689.

SAN MARCOS, county seat of Hays county, is situated about thirty miles southwest of Austin. It was founded in 1851 by Gen. Edward Burleson, William Lindsey and Eli Merriman, and incorporated in 1877.

San Marcos is essentially an educational town. The

Coronal Institute, a Methodist school, flourished there for more than fifty years, closing down in 1919. The Southwest State Teachers' College, the second largest institution of its kind in the state, with an enrollment of thirty-three hundred students annually, is located there, and also the San Marcos Baptist Academy, a preparatory school of between four and five hundred students.

Cotton-farming and livestock-raising are the chief industries of the town and its contiguous territory. The population of San Marcos is 4,527.

MARLIN, county seat of Falls county, is located about twenty-five miles southeast of Waco. It was founded in 1850 and named for John Marlin, one of its pioneer settlers, who obtained a grant of land there.

Marlin is noted as a health resort, having the deepest hot mineral waters in the country, which come from artesian wells thirty-three hundred and fifty feet deep. This water is considered one of the best treatments known for rheumatism, malaria, stomach troubles and blood diseases. It is claimed that thousands of people have been cured of these ailments in the past twenty-five years by taking the water treatments at Marlin.

The population of Marlin according to the official federal census figures of 1920 is 4,310.

SWEETWATER, county seat of Nolan county, is situated in the heart of West Texas, two hundred miles west of Fort Worth and one hundred and fifty miles north of the Rio Grande river. It was named for a stream, on which the town is located, that contained pure sweet water. The town was founded in 1876 by

James Manning, a surveyor, who located on the creek and opened a general store. During the next few years, a small town grew up around that store.

In 1881 the Texas & Pacific Railroad built through that section within two and a half miles of the village of Sweetwater, and by unanimous vote of its citizens the little town picked itself up and moved over to the railroad, its present site. The town was incorporated the following year.

The chief industries of Sweetwater include the manufacture of cottonseed oil, flour-milling, oil-refining, marble and granite works, saddle and harness manufacturing and candy-making.

The chief products of its contiguous territory are cotton, sorghum, grains, maize, poultry and cattle. Sweetwater is in the center of a very rich agricultural area and, because of its location at the intersection of three railroads, has every advantage as a manufacturing and distributing point. Its population, according to the federal census of 1920, is 4,307.

CAMERON, county seat of Milam county, is located about fifty miles south of Waco. It was founded in 1846, and named after Capt. Ewing Cameron, a gallant Texas hero. Progress in the settlement was slow and it was not until 1888 that the town was incorporated.

Cameron is a cotton center, lying in a rich agricultural belt, and being located on two railroad trunk lines. It maintains excellent gins, compresses and warehouses. The city is also the center of oil activity in Milam county, which produces about seven hundred barrels of oil daily from shallow wells.

Cameron has been commended by the department of education as having a model public school system. The population of the town in 1920 was 4,298 and it is estimated at about five thousand at this time.

BIG SPRING, county seat of Howard county, is located in central west Texas, midway between Fort Worth and El Paso. It was founded in 1881 by John Birdwell, who started a saloon there for the men building the Texas & Pacific railroad through that section. It was named after a large spring two miles south of the town. Big Spring was incorporated in 1907.

The railroad maintains shops there, employing between three and four hundred mechanics, as well as a number of men making their headquarters there, due to this being a division point on the railroad.

The main product of the territory contiguous to Big Spring is cotton. Next to this comes the raising of live stock, dairying and poultry.

The population of Big Spring is 4,273.

MOUNT PLEASANT, county seat of Titus county, is located on the St. Louis Southwestern, the Missouri, Kansas & Texas and the Paris & Mount Pleasant railroads. It is, therefore, a considerable railroad center. It is in the midst of the fruit belt and great quantities of peaches are shipped every year. Cotton and other staple crops are raised in the county and Mount Pleasant is the central market of the region. Deposits of lignite have been partially developed. Pottery and brick

are manufactured from the high quality of clay in the neighborhood.

Mount Pleasant had a population of 4,099 in 1920.

LUBBOCK, county seat of Lubbock county, is located in west Texas, about one hundred and twenty miles south of Amarillo. It was founded in 1909, with the coming of the Santa Fe, its first railroad, and incorporated the same year. The settlement was named after Thomas S. Lubbock, of Charleston, S. C., who came to Texas in 1835 and participated in the Texas revolution.

The population of Lubbock in 1920 was 4,051, and this figure has grown rapidly and steadily until now there are about nine thousand people living there. Lubbock has recently been appointed the seat of the Texas Technological College. Among the industrials of the town are a large cottonseed oil mill, a large cotton compress, an ice plant and many smaller factories. Fortyseven wholesale distributing houses are maintained there, and do business over a large trade territory.

While cotton is the chief product of the contiguous country, other products raised include corn, kaffir, maize, cane, peanuts, oats, wheat, alfalfa, vegetables and fruits. Five railroad outlets afford excellent transportation and shipping facilities.

PLAINVIEW, county seat of Hale county, is located about seventy miles south of Amarillo. Its name was derived from the level nature of the surrounding country. The first home in Plainview was built in 1887 by Z. T. Maxwell, and the public square was laid out the following year by Col. R. P. Smyth. The town

was incorporated in 1908, the year following the arrival of the Santa Fe railroad from Amarillo.

The chief products of the territory contiguous to Plainview are cotton, corn, alfalfa, small grains, poultry, hogs and dairy stock. Among the industrials of the city are grain elevators, flour mills, ice plants and lumber yards.

The population of Plainview in 1920 was 3,989. Since that year, however, the city has progressed and it is estimated that there are approximately six thousand people living there at this time.

STEPHENVILLE, county seat of Erath county, is situated seventy-five miles southwest of Fort Worth. It was founded in 1856 at the time of the county organization and named after John M. Stephens, who donated the site on which the courthouse stands. The town was incorporated in 1888.

Stephenville is primarily an educational town, being the seat of the John Tarleton Agricultural College, a state institution, now a branch of A. & M. College. This college opened in 1899 and developed steadily until 1917 when the citizens of Stephenville donated the entire college plant to the state. Since that time its development has been more rapid. There are at this time 626 students enrolled in its regular session, with several hundred more during the summer and farmers' short sessions.

The chief products of the territory surrounding the town are cotton, small grains, corn, peanuts, sweet potatoes and fruits. The population of Stephenville in 1920

was 3,891 and it is estimated that it has forty-five hundred inhabitants now.

UVALDE, county seat of Uvalde county, is located about seventy-five miles west of San Antonio. It was founded in 1854 by William Black, and incorporated in 1888. The town was named for Juan de Uvalde, governor of Coahuila in 1778.

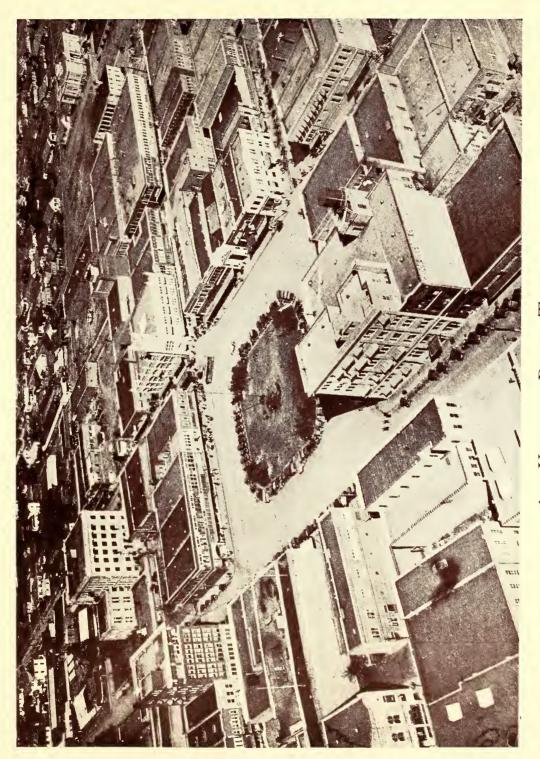
Prior to the Civil war, a fort was maintained on a small hill about two miles south of Uvalde for the protection of its people from the Indians and Mexicans across the border. This was called Fort Inge.

Uvalde has long been famous for its production of finely flavored honey. Another industry which is rapidly growing is the mining of rock asphalt. This material is used for paving streets and highways, and is being shipped out at the rate of a thousand tons daily. Uvalde is the headquarters for sheep and stock men of southwest Texas and has become a shipping center for wool and mohair.

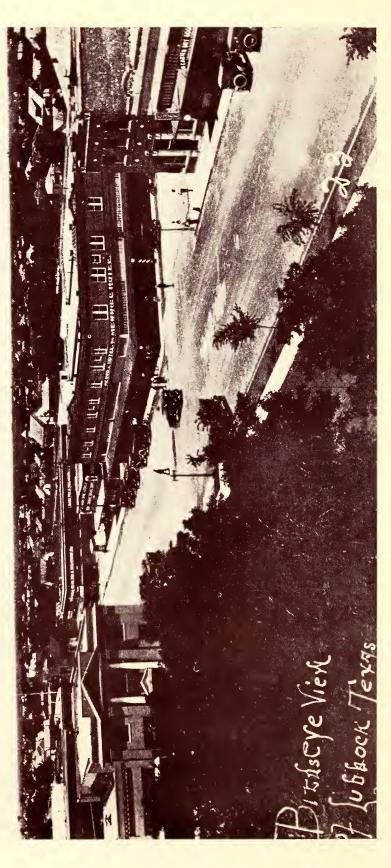
The population of Uvalde in 1920 was 3,885 and a local census taken more recently shows 5,005 inhabitants.

MISSION is located in Hidalgo county, about sixty miles northwest of Brownsville, and three miles north of the Rio Grande. It was founded in 1908 by John J. Conway and J. W. Hoit, and incorporated two years later. The name originates from an old Spanish mission located near by.

The territory surrounding the town is very fertile and, although there is a great deal of cotton produced there, Mission is best known by the size and quality of



AIR VIEW OF PARIS, TEXAS (The City That Rose From the Flames)



A VIEW OF LUBBOCK
(A City of Trees on a Treeless Plain)

the citrus fruits grown in that section. Grapefruit, oranges, lemons and tangerines abound.

The population of Mission in 1920 was 3,847. It has now reached nearly five thousand.

COMMERCE is located in Hunt county, about sixty miles northeast of Dallas. It was founded in 1855, and the first store in the settlement was run by Capt. William Jernigan, Sr. It was he who predicted that the town would some time be a commercial center, and from this prediction was the settlement named.

Commerce is primarily an educational town, being the seat of the East Texas State Normal College, which has large regular and summer enrollments.

The population of the town in 1920 was 3,842 and has grown considerably since that year.

LOCKHART, county seat of Caldwell county, is located thirty-eight miles south of Austin. It was founded in 1848 and named in honor of Byrd Lockhart, who was the original owner of the league of land on which the town now stands. It was incorporated in 1870.

Lockhart is a cotton center and was the home of the late Alexander Duff Mebane, the originator of Mebane cotton. This cotton is now being grown in Asia, Africa and South America, as well as in large quantities in all our Southern states.

Among its other industries, besides those pertaining to cotton, Lockhart has a planing mill and marble works. The population of the city in 1920 was 3,731, and it is estimated that about forty-three hundred people now live there.

JACKSONVILLE is located in Cherokee county, about one hundred and ten miles southeast of Dallas. The original settlement, founded in 1847, was first named Gum Creek, but subsequently was renamed after either Doctor Jackson, the first permanent settler on the townsite, or Jackson Smith, an early day blacksmith, who also was postmaster.

In August, 1872, a new town was started two miles away, on the I. & G. N. railroad, and all the business was moved there from the old village, which then ceased to exist.

Among the products raised on territory surrounding Jacksonville are cotton, corn, oats, peanuts, fruits and vegetables. Stock-raising and dairying also are carried on extensively. The population of Jacksonville in 1920 was 3,723, and it is now more than four thousand.

STAMFORD is located in the northern part of Jones county, about one hundred miles southwest of Wichita Falls. It was founded in February, 1900, when the Swenson brothers opened up a large ranch in that vicinity. The town was named by H. K. McHarg, then president of the Texas Central railroad, for his native city, Stamford, Conn. It was incorporated on January 24, 1901.

The city is a railroad center and has railroad shops, oil mills, a compress and various other factories. Cattle, cotton and fruits are the main products of the surrounding territory.

Stamford is a modern city and a great deal of money has been spent to give it the advantages of a much larger

community. Its population is 3,704. It is the head-quarters of the West Texas Chamber of Commerce.

QUANAH, county seat of Hardeman county, is located seventy-five miles northwest of Wichita Falls and twelve miles south of the Red river. It was founded in 1886 by J. A. Johnson, who laid off the townsite pursuant to the building of the Fort Worth & Denver City railway through that section. Quanah was named after Quanah Parker, a chief of the Comanche Indians. The name Quanah means "Bed of Flowers." The town was incorporated in 1887, and made county seat in 1890.

The chief industries of Quanah are cement plaster mills, a very large oil mill and a few smaller manufacturing plants. Its contiguous territory raises cotton, corn, maize, kaffir, wheat and barley. Quanah is also becoming a large poultry and egg center.

The population of Quanah was 3,691 in 1920.

CUERO, the county seat of DeWitt county, is located on the Guadalupe river, about sixty miles from the Gulf of Mexico. The town was founded in 1872 by Gustav Schleicher, a surveyor, who later became congressman from that district. It was incorporated on April 23, 1873. The name Cuero is a Spanish word meaning green or uncured hide.

The city is in a rich agricultural belt, and probably the most developed of its industries is the raising of poultry, especially turkeys. Partly through its biennial celebration, called the "Turkey Trot" because of its parade of these birds, but more largely through the great numbers of turkeys shipped out of there annually, both for consumption and breeding purposes, Cuero has gained a national reputation as the turkey center of the country.

The population of Cuero in 1920 was 3,671.

SEGUIN, county seat of Seguin county, is located thirty-five miles east of San Antonio. The town was originally settled in 1832, when the Mexican government granted to Humphrey Branch, of the DeWitt colony, a league of land where the town now stands. It was first named Walnut Springs, but later renamed in honor of Col. Juan Seguin, a Texas patriot of Spanish descent. The town was incorporated in 1853.

The population of Seguin in 1920 was 3,631. There has been a substantial increase since that time, however. Among its industries are a brick and tile factory, an oil mill, a flour mill and a mattress factory.

Corn, cotton, small grain, cattle and poultry are the chief products of its contiguous territory.

NEW BRAUNFELS, county seat of Comal county, is located thirty miles northeast of San Antonio. It was founded in 1844 by a German emigration society and named after the town of Braunfels in Germany. The name translated means New Brown Cliff. Prince Solms-Braunfels brought over several shiploads of emigrants and moved them from Indianola, a coast town on the Gulf of Mexico, to a tract of land purchased from a Mexican widow, situated at the intersection of the Comal and Guadalupe rivers, the present site of the town. New Braunfels was incorporated in 1847.

The town was incorporated in 1847, has several extensive industries such as a cotton gingham mill, lime-

stone-crushing plants, flour mills and tanneries. Its population in 1920 was 3,590 and, according to a local census recently taken, there are now 5,105 inhabitants living there.

MARFA, county seat of Presidio county, is located in the extreme southwestern part of Texas about forty miles from the Rio Grande river. It was founded in 1884 by J. M. Dean and incorporated three years later.

Marfa is the industrial center of a large trade territory. Cotton and mining are the chief industries of the town and the surrounding country. It is the head-quarters of the First U. S. cavalry post, and the government has an investment of approximately one million dollars there.

The population of Marfa in 1920 was 3,553, and it is estimated at thirty-eight hundred now.

NACOGDOCHES, county seat of Nacogdoches county, is located about midway between Dallas and Beaumont. The settlement had its beginning in 1770, when hardy pioneers erected their outposts at this spot, which was on the original trail from Natchitoches, La., to the City of Mexico. A granite block on a corner of the square marks the spot on which the "Old Stone Fort" stood for one hundred and forty years. The town was named from the mission to the Nacogdoches Indians which formerly was located on its site.

The University of Nacogdoches was founded in 1858 and was the second university established in the state of Texas. The structure built at that time is still standing and is part of the public school equipment of the city. It is due to the founders of that college

that Nacogdoches today probably has the largest public school campus in the state.

The Stephen F. Austin Normal College, the first unit of which has just been completed, is located at Nacogdoches, the citizens of the town having donated a tract of two hundred and seven acres of land as the site of this institution.

Nacogdoches is one of the oldest and most historic cities in Texas, the part it played in Texas history being recounted at length in other volumes of this work.

Among the industries of the city are three lumber mills, an ice plant, an oil refinery, a brick plant, a large compress, a creamery, a cottonseed oil mill and two wholesale grocery houses. Cotton is the chief product of the surrounding territory, and cattle, hogs and poultry are also raised in considerable numbers. The population of Nacogdoches in 1920 was 3,546, and it is estimated that its present population is about five thousand.

COMANCHE, county seat of Comanche county, is located one hundred and twelve miles southwest of Fort Worth. It was founded in 1858 by some settlers who established a trading post there, and named for the Comanche Indians. The town was incorporated in 1873.

Comanche is the center of an agricultural community raising chiefly cotton, corn, wheat, oats, hay and livestock.

The population of Comanche is 3,524.

SAN DIEGO, county seat of Duval county, is in the eastern part of that county, due west from Corpus Christi and almost due south of San Antonio. It is

two counties removed from the gulf coast and two counties from the Rio Grande.

It is a thriving town of 3,500, partaking of the character and business activity of the country surrounding it. Agriculture and stock-raising are the chief industries, goats, cattle and horses being raised in the county. There has been oil development in the region south of San Diego.

BAY CITY is the county seat of Matagorda county, and is situated on the Colorado river and the Gulf, Colorado & Santa Fe, the Brownsville & Mexico and the Galveston, Harrisburg & San Antonio railroads. It is twenty-five miles from the Gulf of Mexico and eighty-five miles southwest of Houston.

Bay City was settled in 1895. It is in the midst of a rich agricultural region, the chief crops of which are rice, corn, cotton and sugar cane. A large quantity of figs of a high quality are produced in the territory adjacent to Bay City. The industries of the town include rice mills and cotton gins. The population in 1920 was 3,454.

MERCEDES is located in Hidalgo county, one of the fertile Rio Grande valley counties, and is therefore in the midst of the citrus belt. Some of the finest grapefruit in the world is grown in this territory, and oranges, lemons and tangerines are also produced.

Mercedes is a rapidly developing community, having almost tripled its population between 1910 and 1920. The last census report showed a population of 3,414, but this has been increased during the past four years.

CLARKSVILLE, county seat of Red River county, is located sixty-one miles west of Texarkana and thirty-one miles east of Paris. It was founded in 1828 by James Clark, a native of Mississippi, after whom the settlement was named.

It is one of the oldest towns in the state, and was one of the first to be granted a charter by the republic of Texas in 1837.

Clarksville is a cotton center, and its industries are such as are related to the growing and marketing of this commodity. The population of Clarksville in 1920 was 3,386, and it is estimated that there are about four thousand people living there now.

TEAGUE is located in Freestone county, sixty-five miles east of Waco. It was founded in 1906 with the building of the Trinity & Brazos Valley railroad from Waxahachie to Houston. The town was incorporated the same year and named for the family of B. F. Yoakum's mother.

The chief products of the territory surrounding Teague are corn, cotton, vegetables and fruit. Large lignite coal mines are within a short distance from the town, and there is much oil prospecting going on.

The population of Teague in 1920 was 3,306.

DE LEON is situated in the northern part of Comanche county, one hundred miles southwest of Fort Worth. It was founded in 1887 by a group of pioneers, among whom J. J. Heath opened the first store. Four years later the Texas Central railroad was built to this point from Waco. De Leon was incorporated in 1888.

Agriculture and stock raising are the town's chief

industries. It also has a large peanut mill which shells, cleans and classifies peanuts.

The population of De Leon in 1920 was 3,302. The present figure is about 3,000. Inflation, which has died down, came from the oil boom in this territory in 1918, during the peak of which there were five thousand people living there.

ATHENS, county seat of Henderson county, is located seventy-five miles southeast of Dallas. It was founded in 1850 by Mrs. Annie Averitte and named after Athens, Greece. The town was incorporated in 1881.

The land surrounding Athens has millions of tons of lignite coal underlying its surface, which up to this time have scarcely been touched. The soil is very fertile and its chief products are cotton, corn and vegetables. Dairying is also extensively carried on throughout the section.

The population of Athens in 1920 was 3,276. It is estimated, however, that during the past few years this number has been increased to nearly five thousand.

DUBLIN is located in Erath county, about seventy-five miles southwest of Fort Worth. It was first settled in 1856 with the founding of the county. Among its pioneers were the Keith and O'Neal families, and James Tucker, who opened the first store there.

During its early years there was a great deal of danger from marauding Indians and at these times its settlers would cry to "double in" the cattle. Thus was the town named, first spelled "Doubling" and later changed to its present spelling. Dublin has a population of 3,229 inhabitants. It has excellent transportation facilities, being a railroad junction point, and lies in a rich agricultural country.

SMITHVILLE is located in Bastrop county on the Colorado river, forty-six miles southeast of Austin. The town was named for Frank Smith and incorporated in 1895.

Railroad shops are the chief industries of the city, although there are also an oil mill, an ice plant, several gins and a few other factories. Smithville lies in a rich agricultural district raising cotton, corn, hay and cattle.

The population of Smithville in 1920 was 3,204, and it is estimated that its present population is thirty-five hundred.

GORMAN is located in Eastland county, about ninety miles southwest of Fort Worth. It was founded in 1888 and named for Pat Gorman, a former official of the H. & T. C. Railroad. The town was incorporated in 1901.

In September, 1918, oil was discovered about five miles northeast of Gorman, and in a short while the small town became a bustling oil center of considerable proportions.

Although there is still a great deal of activity in the production of oil, the chief industry of the town now is farming, fruit, cotton, peanuts, produce, corn, wheat and oats being among the products raised.

The population of Gorman in 1920 was 3,200, and this has been deflated until there are now between two thousand and twenty-five hundred people living there.

BOWIE is located in Montague county, about seventy miles northwest of Fort Worth. It was founded in 1882 and named after Col. James Bowie.

The chief industries of the town and surrounding territory are farming and poultry-raising. A large deposit of coal lies west and north of the town, and there is a natural gas field near by.

The population of Bowie in 1920 was 3,179 and it is estimated that its present population is four thousand.

GONZALES, county seat of Gonzales county, is located about sixty miles south of Austin. It is not only one of the oldest towns in the state, but also one of the richest in local history. Its site was first settled in 1825 by Maj. James Kerr who, with a party of six men, was looking for a place to found the capital of DeWitt's colony. The settlement grew rapidly until July, 1826, when the Indians attacked it, whereupon its inhabitants fled. Returning some months later, they established themselves nearer the river, which afforded them better protection. The town was named in honor of Don Rafael Gonzales, the then provisional governor of Coahuila and Texas. It was incorporated in 1837.

How Gonzales came to be known as the "Lexington of Texas," after the battle of Gonzales in 1835, and also the important part it played in the history of this state, is related in other volumes of this work.

It is today a thriving city of about thirty-five hundred inhabitants, in a rich agricultural section raising cotton, corn and livestock.

MART is located in McLennan county, twenty miles east of Waco. It was founded in 1900 with the build-

ing of the Fort Worth division of the I. & G. N. rail-road, and named by one of its pioneers because of its advantages as a trading post.

The town lies in a black land agricultural belt growing cotton, corn, oats and poultry. Its chief industries beside farming are the shops and roundhouse of the railroad, a cottonseed-oil mill, an ice plant and two lumber companies.

The population of Mart in 1920 was 3,105. It is estimated that there are about four thousand people living there now.

BEEVILLE, county seat of Bee county, is located ninety-six miles southeast of San Antonio. It was founded by A. C. Jones about 1874 and named in honor of Gen. Bernard E. Bee, who was killed during the Civil war in the battle of Bull Run. The town was incorporated in 1908.

The chief products of the territory contiguous to Beeville are cotton, cattle, citrus fruits and feedstuff. Beeville's population in 1920 was 3,063.

CROCKETT, county seat of Houston county, is located about one hundred and ten miles above the city of Houston. The town was settled by A. W. Gossett, who was granted the league of land on which Crockett stands, and named in honor of David Crockett, one of the martyrs of the Alamo. The town was incorporated in 1890.

Crockett is chiefly a cotton town, although there are lignite mines near by, and lumber and cattle are other products that are produced on its contiguous territory. The city is rapidly progressing as far as buildings, public improvements and population are concerned. There were 3,061 people living there in 1920, and it is estimated that during the past few years this figure has been increased to 4,500.

RIO GRANDE CITY, county seat of Starr county, is situated on the Mexican border, two counties removed from the gulf coast. The chief industries of the surrounding country are agriculture and stock and goat raising. Some cotton and other crops are produced. The activities of the town are related to these industries, and to such trade as its position on the Mexican border has developed. Rio Grande City had a population of 3,035 in 1920.

SOUR LAKE is located in Hardin county, twenty miles west of Beaumont. It was originally settled in 1836 and for many years was just a small village, with one store and post office. There was near the town a small body of water, which was sour, and from this the name was derived.

Oil was discovered at Sour Lake in 1903 and there immediately sprang up a tent city of about ten thousand people, which lasted for a short time. The population of the town in 1920 was 3,032.

Oil production is the chief industry of Sour Lake, with lumber and live stock ranking next.

ARLINGTON is situated in Tarrant county on the road between Dallas and Fort Worth. The town was founded a mile east of its present site in 1873 by James Ditto. It was originally called Hayter and later Johnson City. The name Arlington was suggested by Ditto

in 1876 when the village received a post office. The town was moved to its present location in 1876 when the T. & P. railroad was built through that section.

The population of Arlington in 1920 was 3,031, and this figure has been increased during the past few years. Arlington has artesian wells which are noted for their health-giving qualities. It is connected with Fort Worth and Dallas by interurban.

There are located in Arlington the North Texas Agricultural College, the Home for Aged Masons, the Berachah Home and the Eastern Star Home.

DESDEMONA is situated in Eastland county, eight miles southwest of Fort Worth. It was founded in 1870 and named in honor of Miss Desdemona Winn, a popular young lady of the community at that time. The town was incorporated in 1920.

A boom which started in the spring of 1918 when oil and gas were found in paying quantities, reached its zenith in August, 1919, when the town had an estimated population of fifteen thousand. It has now resolved itself into a small town of three thousand inhabitants.

Its chief industries are farming, cattle and poultry raising.

HUMBLE is located in the northern part of Harris county, seventeen miles north of Houston. It was founded in 1888 and named for P. S. Humble, the first justice of the peace and postmaster.

Humble was just a small sawmill town until 1904, when oil was discovered, bringing on a great boom. By 1910 the population had dwindled to about two thou-

sand, and remained at that figure until 1915, when another boom took place and during that year more than fifteen thousand people lived there. The census of 1920 shows three thousand inhabitants.

Humble is a very prolific oil-producing center and its sawmills have been greatly enlarged, making the manufacture of lumber its second largest industry.

FREDERICKSBURG, county seat of Gillespie county, is located about sixty-five miles west of Austin. It was founded on May 8, 1846, by a small group under John Meusebach and named after Frederick the Great of Prussia. The town has never been incorporated.

The majority of the inhabitants of Fredericksburg are German-speaking people, descendants of the original settlers.

Bear Mountain, four miles from town, contains the best red granite in the country, and Enchanted Rock, twenty-two miles away, is a square mile of solid granite mountain.

Chief among the products of its contiguous territory are cotton, pecans and live stock. The population of Fredericksburg is 2,980.

GEORGETOWN, county seat of Williamson county, is located about twenty-eight miles north of Austin. The town was founded in 1848 by a commission created by legislative act to locate the county seat for the newly formed county. The settlement was named in honor of George W. Glasscock who donated the land for the seat of the county government. Georgetown was incorporated in 1871.

Georgetown is the home of the Southwestern Uni-

versity, a great Methodist institution which makes the town an educational center.

Among the products of the territory surrounding the city are cotton, grain, wool, cedar and limestone. Williamson county is one of the greatest cotton-producing counties of the country. The population of Georgetown in 1920 was 2,871, and this figure has been substantially increased during the past few years.

COLEMAN, county seat of Coleman county, is located about one hundred and thirty-five miles west of Waco. It was founded in 1876 and both town and county were named in honor of Col. Robert M. Coleman, a hero in the Texas revolution, who was drowned at Velasco in 1838. The town was incorporated in 1877.

The chief products of the territory contiguous to Coleman are cotton, cattle and sheep. The population of the town in 1920 was 2,868. It is estimated that there are now four thousand people living there.

MEMPHIS, county seat of Hall county, is located in the northeast corner of the county, about thirty miles west of the Oklahoma state line. It was founded in 1889 by J. C. Montgomery and incorporated June 25, 1906.

Its main products are kaffir, maize, cotton, cattle, horses and mules. The population of Memphis in 1920 was 2,839. It is estimated that there are thirty-three hundred inhabitants at this time.

BALLINGER, county seat of Runnels county, is located about sixty miles south of Abilene. The town



POLK STREET, AMARILLO



was founded and laid out in 1886 by the Santa Fe railroad. It was originally called Hutchins City, for one of the directors of the road, then Gresham for the general attorney of the Santa Fe, and finally Ballinger for W. P. Ballinger of Galveston.

Ballinger is the center of one of the best agricultural and stock-raising territories of West Texas. In addition to these industries, poultry-raising is carried on extensively in the surrounding country. The population of the town in 1920 was 2,767, and it is estimated that it now has thirty-five hundred inhabitants.

HEARNE is located in Robertson county, sixty miles southeast of Waco. It was settled in 1871 with the building of the I. & G. N. railroad and of the H. & T. C. railroad to that point. For a time it was the terminus of both these roads. The town was named in honor of Horatio R. Hearne, a pioneer farmer in that section.

The chief products of its contiguous territory are cotton, alfalfa, hogs and cattle. Hearne has an oil mill, a compress, an ice factory and three gins. Its population is 2,741.

DALHART, county seat of Dallam county, is located in the extreme northwestern section of the Panhandle, thirty miles from the state line of Oklahoma and the same distance from the state line of New Mexico. Its name was derived from the first syllables of Dallam and Hartley counties. The town was founded in 1901 when the Rock Island railroad made that point the junction of its road and the Fort Worth & Denver City, and was incorporated in 1903.

Dalhart has several wholesale houses and is the dis-

tributing point for a large territory in northwest Texas. Its population in 1920 was 2,676, and this has been increased by several hundred since that time.

HONEY GROVE is located on the eastern edge of Fannin county, twenty-four miles west of Paris. The town was named by David Crockett, who camped one night at a place which had previously been called Mill Grove. This spot was a thick grove of trees some four hundred yards north of the present public square. While encamped in this grove, he discovered large droves of wild bees and a large quantity of wild honey. So he called the grove Honey Grove. There was no settlement there then, but the name stuck, and when a town developed this name came to it naturally.

The town was incorporated in 1872 and at present there are two railroads entering it. The chief product of its surrounding country is cotton.

The population of Honey Grove in 1920 was 2,642.

HENRIETTA, county seat of Clay county, is ninety miles northwest of Fort Worth and one hundred and twenty-eight miles northwest of Dallas. It is situated on the Little Wichita river and the Missouri, Kansas & Texas and the Fort Worth & Denver railroads. Agriculture and stock-raising are the leading industries of the county, good crops of cotton and wheat being produced annually. Building stone quarries are worked near the town. The industries of Henrietta include flour and lumber mills, cotton gins, lumber yards and stockyards. The town has natural gas and a municipally owned waterworks.

The population of Henrietta in 1920 was 2,563.

about eighty miles northeast of Dallas. It was founded in 1870, the year the county was formed, and named after L. W. Cooper, who procured in the senate the passage of the bill creating Delta county.

Cooper is essentially a cotton town, lying in a black land section, which raises a hard fiber cotton. Its industries mainly consist of those related to the production and marketing of this commodity.

The population of Cooper in 1920, according to the federal census, was 2,563. It has grown a little since that time.

JEFFERSON, county seat of Marion county, is located in the extreme northeastern part of Texas, twenty-five miles from the Louisiana border. The town was founded about 1843 and named in honor of Thomas Jefferson. It was incorporated in 1866.

For a long time Jefferson was one of the largest cities in the state, being the head of navigation on Red river, and the western terminal of the T. & P. railroad. When the road was extended further west, however, much of its business and population drifted away.

Jefferson is today a town of about 3,500 inhabitants, the official census of 1920 being 2,549. The chief interest of its citizens is farming, and the products raised on the contiguous territory are cotton, corn, peanuts, vegetables, sweet potatoes and fruits.

GRAHAM, county seat of Young county, is fifty-five miles south of Wichita Falls. It was founded in 1872 and named in honor of Col. E. S. Graham.

Although the population of Graham was 2,544 in 1920, it now has between five and six thousand inhabitants owing to the oil development of lands surrounding the city, and is the distributing point for these fields.

In addition to its oil industries, Graham has flour mills, cotton gins, an ice plant and several smaller plants. Two railroads give it ample transportation facilities.

PITTSBURG, county seat of Camp county, is located about seventy miles southwest of Texarkana. It was settled in 1854 by a group of men headed by Maj. William Harrison Pitts, after whom the settlement was named. Major Pitts laid out the town in 1858.

Pittsburg is essentially an agricultural town with a population of 2,540 in 1920. It has a box factory and an oil mill among its industries. Cotton, corn, fruit and vegetables are the main products of the territory surrounding, which is exceptionally fertile.

HEMPSTEAD, county seat of Waller county, is located on the Brazos river, about fifty miles northwest of Houston. The townsite was originally owned by J. W. McDade, and was founded and named by Dr. R. R. Peebles, a hero of San Jacinto, who came to Texas in 1835. Dr. Peebles named the settlement after his brother-in-law, Dr. G. S. B. Hempstead, of Portsmouth, Ohio, from whence the former came to Texas.

The principal industry of the town is farming—cotton, corn, watermelons and vegetables being raised on the surrounding land. The population of Hempstead in 1920 was 2,515.

TEXAS CITY is located on the mainland in Galveston county, on Galveston bay, ten miles north of Galveston city. It was settled late in 1900 after the disastrous storm which caused so much damage to the island, and was incorporated in 1912.

Shortly after its settlement a deep water channel six miles to the gulf was effected, giving the port good shipping facilities. Other industries of Texas City are oil refineries, sugar refineries, pipe line terminals and sulphur storage.

The population of Texas City in 1920 was 2,509. According to a local census recently taken, however, the city has grown to 5,500 inhabitants.

DAYTON is located in Liberty county, about half way between Houston and Sour Lake. A small oil field has been producing north of the town for a number of years, but the chief industries of the surrounding country are agriculture and lumber. Recently there have been drilling operations south of the town, and the North Dayton field's production has been increased. In 1920 the population was a little more than 2,500, but oil activity during the past four years has served to increase this.

KAUFMAN, county seat of Kaufman county, is located about thirty-five miles southeast of Dallas. It was founded in 1848 and originally called Kingsboro, but subsequently was renamed in honor of David F. Kaufman, one of the pioneer settlers of the state. Kaufman was incorporated in 1872.

The town has two large gins, corn and flour mills and a cottonseed oil mill. The territory contiguous raises cotton, corn, wheat and oats.

The population of Kaufman in 1920, according to the federal census, was 2,501.





## INDEX

A BERDEEN, LORD, British foreign minister, IV, 119; denies having promised abolitionists to pay for slaves in Texas, 127; becomes interested in armistice between Texas and Mexico, 131; angered at Tyler's reference to British activities in Texas in message to congress, 141-142; sets forth Great Britain's attitude toward slavery in Texas in document read to American secretary of state, 146; attitude toward annexation's being made an issue in United States' politics, 179-180; informs Smith of willingness of British and French governments to settle difficulties of Texas by "Diplomatic Act," 183.

Abilene, town, sketch of, V, 278-279.

"Ab Initios," ultra-radical faction in Texas politics following civil war, V, 53, e. s.

Act of Confederation, (Acta Constitutiva de la Federación Mexicana) I, 148.

Act, Constitutional or organic, State of Texas and Coahuila created, I, 149.

Acta Constitutiva de la Federación Mexicana (Act of Confederation), I, 148.

Adams, John Quincy, president of the United States, political alliance with Henry Clay, I, 197-198; goes out of office, 203; becomes opponent of annexation of Texas, 340; rejoices at news of San Jacinto victory, III, 325; denounces war in Texas and Jackson's administration in speech before House, 348.

"Address to the Congress and people of the United States," issued by congressmen from Texas when denied seats in congress—an indictment of reconstruction program of radicals in congress, V, 19-42.

Agriculture, growth of in Texas, V, 117-134.

Agricultural and Mechanical College of Texas, founded, V, 91.

Agua Dulce, Grant and men massacred near, III, 173-175.

Aguayo, the Marqués of, governor of Coahuila, founds presidio of La Bahía, I, 31.

Aguirre, Colonel Marcial, wounded in battle of San Jacinto, III, 297.

Ahumada, Colonel Mateo, commands force sent to San Felipe, I, 253; presents resolution adopted at Mina, 258; march to Nacogdoches, 276.

Alamán, Lucas Ignacio, named secretary of for eign relations in Bustamante's cabinet, I, 338; attitude toward American colonies in Mexico, 338; submits to congress report and recommendation in regard to the United States and Texas, 353-358; recommendations enacted into law, 361-364; defends ministers in address to congress, II, 13.

Alamo, fall of, III, 195, e. s.; described by Captain Potter, 200, e. s.

Alarcón, Martín de, expedition under, establishes presidio of San Antonio de Béxar, I, 28.

Alegria, Martín de, stationed at Anáhuac as deputy revenue collector, II, 204; abandons attempt to enforce revenue law, 208.

Allen, A. C., purchases land for founding town of Houston, IV, 44.

Allen, Ebenezer, attorney general in Jones' cabinet, IV, 191; acts as secretary of state during Smith's absence on special mission, 191, 196.

Allen, H. H., member of committee on resolutions at San Jacinto convention, IV, 293; named on committee of correspondence at San Jacinto convention, 296.

Allen, John K., member of first congress of the republic, III, 364; purchases land for founding of town of Houston, IV, 44.

Allen, Mary, I, 315.

Allen, Samuel T., arrested and imprisoned by Bradburn, II, 16; elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, 403; named on committee at San Felipe consultation to draw up statement of causes for war, 413; member of first congress of the republic, III, 364.

Alley, Rawson, elected sindico procurado of Austin's colony, I, 292; member of Austin's first municipal electoral assembly, 292.

Alley, Captain, appointed by "board of war" to command company sent to Victoria, II, 354; commands company at battle of San Antonio, III, 53.

Almonte, Colonel J. N., sent on inspection tour of Texas, II, 137; describes general conditions in Texas, growth of population, development of industry, etc., in report to Mexican government, 168-179; describes movements of Mexicans at siege of Alamo, III, 190-193; urges Santa Anna to concentrate forces in Texas, 270; reports retreat of Houston to Trinity, 289; tries to rally Mexican troops at battle of San Jacinto, 297, 298; surrenders to Texans, 298; acts as interpreter on behalf of Santa Anna during interview with Houston, 302, e. s.; placed in irons to prevent escape, 354; accompanies Santa Anna to United States, 382; received as Mexican minister at Washington, IV, 120; urges resumption of war between Mexico and Texas, 121; repeats Mexican foreign minister's threat of war in letter to Upshur, 136; Upshur suggests annexation to, 145-146; informs Calhoun that ratification of annexation treaty by U. S. will precipitate war with Mexico, 149; asks for passport after passage of annexation resolution, 189; reports shipment of cotton from Texas to Mexican government, V, 119; reports number of cattle in Texas departments to Mexican government, 139.

Alvárez, Señora, saves lives of Texans at Goliad, III, 263-264.

Amador, General Juan, rallies Mexican troops at battle of Alamo, III, 205, 211.

Amarillo, town, sketch of, V, 263-264.

Amnesty, proclamation of, issued by Saucedo to Edwards's followers, I, 268-272.

Ampudia, General Pedro, commands Mexican artillery company at battle of Alamo, III, 203; commands Mexican forces defending Mier, IV, 99; orders Taylor to retire to Nueces, 213.

Anáhuac, garrison established at, I, 365; revolt of garrison, II, 31; fort captured by company under Travis, 225-228.

Anderson, C. D., wounded in battle of San Jacinto, III, 317.

Anderson, Washington, wounded in battle of San Jacinto, III, 317.

Anderson, W. R., member of caucus to draw up letter requesting Throckmorton to become candidate for governor, V, 11.

Andrade, General, commands cavalry brigade of Saltillo, III, 139; commands Mexican brigade at battle of Alamo, 203, 211; request for army to pass through Goliad refused, 339.

Andres, John, member of Austin's first municipal electoral assembly, I, 293.

Andrews, E., member of committee to prepare resolutions at Columbia convention, II, 221.

Andrews, Steven Pearl, claims to represent Texas republic at the world's convention of abolitionists in London, IV, 126-127.

Angouleme, Duke of, leads French army against Spaniards, absolutism reestablished in Spain, I, 141-142.

Annexation, proposal to seek annexation of Texas to U. S. approved at first presidential election, III, 363; refused by U. S. government, IV, 1, e. s.; efforts to obtain, 119, e. s.; treaty signed, 147-148; rejected in U. S. Senate, 169; resolution providing for, adopted by House, 188; Senate prepares amendment to annexation resolution, resolution adopted by both houses, becomes a law, 189; convention at Washington on the Brazos, adopts ordinance providing for, 206-207; Texas formally admitted into the Union, 207.

Apache, Indians, I, 29.

April 6, law of, text of, I, 427, e. s.

Archer, Dr. Branch T., member of Brazoria delegation to Anáhuac, II, 10: opposes clause of constitution prohibiting banks, 78; member of committee of safety and correspondence at Columbia meeting of August 15, 288; signs appeal for volunteers to go to Gonzales, 338; elected president of consultation at San Felipe, 402; elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, 403; outlines questions to be considered in address to San Felipe consultation, 404-407; named special commissioner to U. S. at San Felipe consultation, 420; sails with commission for New Orleans, 111, 81; activities in behalf of Texas in U. S., 144, e. s.; returns to Texas, opposes execution of Santa Anna, 345; urges Austin to run for presi-

dent, 360-361; member of first congress of the republic, 364; heads "Texas Railroad, Navigation and Banking Company," scheme, IV, 27.

Archive war, IV, 95.

Arcinega, Miguel, signs treaty of capitulation between Cos and Burleson at San Antonio, III, 65.

Arispe, Ramos, I, 147; Mexican minister of justice, Austin calls upon, II, 89.

Arispe, Manuel R., granted colonization contract, I. 186.

Arista, General Mariano, letter to Santa Anna advocating abolition of federal government, II, 88; issues address to inhabitants of Texas announcing invasion of department, IV, 93.

Arista, General Manuel, commands Mexican troops at Matamoros, IV. 214; battle of Palo Alto, 214.

Arlington, town, sketch of, V, 323, 324.

Armijo, Manuel, governor of Territory of New Mexico, IV, 81; captures Texans of Santa Fe expedition, 87-8, e. s.

Armour, Philip O., sends Cole to look for slaughtering point in Texas, V, 175.

Armstrong, M. L., signs address to defeat secession ordinance, IV, 339.

Arnold, cited by Johnson for services at battle of San Antonio, III, 61.

Arredondo, General, campaign against Perry and Mexican revolutionists in Texas, I, 44, e. s.

Arrington, William, elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, II, 403; named on committee at San Felipe consultation to draw up plans for provisional government, II, 416.

Asiatic cholera, epidemic in Mexico, II, 101-103; in Texas, 104.

Asinai Indians, I, 26.

Atchison, D. D., member of committee on resolutions at San Jacinto convention, IV. 293; signs communication to Houston notifying him of nomination for presidency, 296.

Athens, town, sketch of, V, 319.

Augustine, Henry, member of delegation to call upon Piedras, II, 40; elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, 403.

Aury, I, 45; commands Mexican fleet, takes possession of Galveston, joins Mina and Perry, 44, 45, e. s.

Austin, colony of, placed under constitutional government, I, 290-293; life in, 307-320; 323-325.

Austin's original colonists. (Old Three Hundred), list of, I, 412, e. s.

Austin county, land titles issued to early settlers, I, 163.

Austin, sketch of, V, 253-256; town founded, made capital of Texas, IV, 67-71; chosen permanent capital of Texas, V, 78-79.

Austin, Emily, brother of Moses Austin, I, 71.

Austin, Henry, proposes that action at Columbia meeting be postponed, II, 216; letter to Perry, 217-218.

Austin, James E. B., son of Moses Austin, I, 71; builds cotton gin in Texas, I, 193; V, 118.

Austin, John, quotation from, I, 348; member of company to rescue Bradburn's prisoners, II, 17; presents Ugartechea's communication to Bradburn, 18; sent to Brazoria for ammunition and men, 23; calls meeting of colonists at Brazoria, elected captain of company, storms Fort Velasco, 27-30; communicates with Mexía, 33-35; represents Brazoria at first convention of colonists in Texas, 47; addresses convention at San Felipe, 48-50; opposes resolution asking for separate statehood for Texas, 50.

Austin, Moses, journey to Texas, I, 1. e. s; early career, journey to Upper Louisiana, establishes settlement at Mine A Burton, becomes Spanish subject, comes to Texas, ordered to leave San Antonio, meeting with Bastrop, petition to found settlement granted, death, son to carry on project, 60-67.

Austin, Stephen Fuller, empresario, education and early career in Louisiana and Missouri, removal to Arkausas, leads expedition to Texas, recognized as father's successor, chooses site for colony, I, 69-91; second journey to Texas, journey to Mexico City, sojourn in Mexico, charter secured after much delay, return to Texas, 94-114; document, setting forth, conditions, under which colors setting forth conditions under which colonists might be accepted, issued by, 123; returns to San Antonio, officially installed as governing head of Anglo-Americans in Texas, town named for, 134-136; letters to settlers on Brazos, 136, e. s.; submits plan of government to Arispe, 147-148; message to people, 150; message to colonists announcing form of government, 150-152; discontent of colonists over land fees, compromise with Bastrop, labors to improve colony, requirements for admission of colonists, divis-ion of colony, issues civil and criminal code of laws, land allotted to settlers, trouble with Karankawa Indians, 152-167; first petition to admit families into colony, 169; second petition to admit families into colony, 170-171; colonization laws passed, 171, 172, e. s.; obtains grant under new law, territory included in colony, 176, e. s.; granted colonization contract, contract regranted to, 187; attitude toward colonists' relation to Mexican government, 208-211; visits settlement on San Jacinto and learns of Edwards's threats regarding land titles, 213, 214; communication between Austin and Ed-Austin condemns Edwards's policy, wards, Austin condemns Edwards's policy, 214-221; advises Benjamin W. Edwards to write governor of Texas, giving frank statement of situation in colony, 236, 237; calls upon colonists to stand by governor, attempts to mediate, sends personal appeal to J. B. Tompson, 251-253; sends message to district of Victoria, 254-256; persuades Saucedo to send delegation with offer of americal states. Saucedo to send delegation with offer of amnesty to insurgents, letter to John Dunn Hunter, 260-262; calls colonists to arms, 267-268; sends delegation and message to Indians, 272-276; march to Nacogdoches, 276; creation of court of alcaldes, land titles issued by state government, colony records transferred to permanent register, 287-290; colony placed under constitutional govern-

ment, 290-293; explains conditions in address to colonists, 296-297; meeting for formation of York Lodge held in colony, 301, 302; officer of the "Lodge of Union," 302; attitude toward edict abolishing slavery, advice to colonists, appeals to Músquiz, 332; colonization contract not cancelled by law of April 6, 364; member of committee to plan independence celebration, 370; comprehension of Mexican character, certificates issued to immigrants, II, 2-7; instructions to Menard, 6-7; accompanies Mexía to Texas, 32, 33; represents San Felipe at first convention of colonists, 47; elected president of convention, 50; serves on committee, 53; defends convention in letter to Músquiz, 59 60; defeated by Wharton for president of second convention, 77; chosen to go to Mexico City, 82; goes to San Antonio, Goliad, Matamoros, confers with Filisola, sails for Vera Cruz, reaches Mexican capital, 82-85; calls upon Farias, Garcia, Arispe, presents written argument for separate statehood for Texas, 89-96; reports re-sults of interviews with Farias and ministers, recommendations of, 97-99; letters to brother-in-law, stormy interview with Farias, 103-108; advises state organization in letter to ayuntamiento at San Antonio, 105-106; opposes move to make Texas territory, appears before Santa Anna's cabinet, receives government's final answer to petitions, law of April 6, repealed, 107-111; ayuntamiento of San Antonio replies to letter of, 112-114; arrest of, sends favorable report to Texas, advises colonists to remain tranquil, 115-119; letter to Rafael Llanos, 120-122; imprisonment of, describes life in prison, 122-126; deplores injustice of imprisonment in letter to Perry, 133-137; efforts in Texas to secure release of, 138-141; friends in United States intercede for, 141; enmity between Butler and Austin, 141, 142, 146, 147; removed to prison of Acordada, 144; escape planned by Hammeken, 144-146; removed to Diputación prison representatives of colonists arrive in capital, released on bail, expresses gratitude in letter to McKinney, 147-152; publishes pamphlet on Texas question, brighter property on Texas question, brighter prospects for Texas in letter to Perry, 182-184; attitude toward Texas situation, 184, 186; hopes for establishment of federal republican government in Mexico, 189-190; returns from prison, 302; visits Santa Anna, attitude to-ward Texas situation before learning of actual conditions, urges American immigration, 303-308; sails for Texas on San Felipe, witnesses fight between San Felipe and Correo de Mexico, visits home of sister, entertained at public dinner, discusses principles involved in political situation in Brazoria address, 310-320; goes to San Felipe, issue calls to arms, 320-323; appointed member of committee of virilence and cafety at San of committee of vigilance and safety at San Felipe meeting, 321; letter to Hall, 323-324; gives reasons for war proclamation in letter to Grayson, 325-327; issues appeals, calling people to arms, appeals to commit-tee of safety at Columbia, 330-331; proposes immediate organization of central body, 332; sends appeals urging volunteers to repair to Gonzales, to Nacogdoches and San Augustine, appeals to be published in United

States, 340-342; Ugartechea sends appeal to, 350, 351; invited to come to Gonzales. 352, 353; arrives in Gonzales, elected commander in chief of army, reconciliation with Wharton, selects staff, issues general orders, orders Smith to Goliad, troops begin march toward San Antonio, orders courteous treatment of captured Spanish officers, 356-362; organizes army, halts at Cibolo creek, 367, 368; sends officers with communication to coast, 370-372; army marches to Salada creek, 373; delivers address to army, 375-377; dispatches memorandum of nine points to consultation at San Felipe, tenders estate to be mortgaged for war funds, 378-379; sends detachment under Bowie and Fannin to examine country around San Antonio, moves to Mission Espada, company deserts, battle of Concepción, begins siege of San Antonio, demands formal surrender of Cos, tightens siege, 380-391; believes government should be based on constitution of 1824, 401-402; elected delegate to con-1824, 401-402; elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, 402; gives idea of attitude Texas ought to assume in statement to consultation at San Felipe, 410-411; defeated by Smith for governor of Texas at San Felipe consultation, 418; named as special commissioner to seek assistance for Texas in United States, 420; reports conditions favorable to storming of San Antonio, to consultation at San Felipe, III 1-33. nio to consultation at San Felipe, III, 1-3; accepts appointment as commissioner to U. S. but plans to storm San Antonio before leaving, 3-4; desires cooperation of Mexican federalists and that Texas grievances have a strictly constitutional and legal basis, 6-7; orders removal of Dimmitt from command at Goliad, reports bad reception of Viesca ro provisional governor, 10-11; makes preparation to storm San Antonio, officers and men oppose attack, 11-15; decides to leave army, goes to San Felipe, submits to provisional government. ional government, personal report and trans-lation of decree of October 3, 16-17, e. s.; reviews situation of Texas in reports to genreviews situation of Texas in reports to general council, 21-28; suggests calling of convention with plenary powers in report submitted December 2, 28-30; gives reasons why convention should be called in letter to Barrett, 30-37; misunderstanding with Wharton, 77-78; council adopts resolution with respect to services of, 80, 81; sails for New Orleans with commission, urges that declaration of independence be made without delay in letter to Houston, 81-84; attitude toward a declaration of independence, 84-88; activities in behalf of Texas in U. S., Louisville address, 144-170; issues appeal to Jackson and cabinet to take up arms in cause of Texas, 277-280; prepares to return to Texas after battle of San Jacinto, 325-326; returns to Texas, induces Burnet to write Gaines, suggesting the sending of troops to Nacogdoches to quiet Indians, 346; visits Santa Anna, persuades him to order Urrea to abandon invasion, 345-346; persuades Santa Anna to ask U. S. recognition of treaties with Texas in letter to Jackson, 346; gets Houston to forward Santa Anna's letter to Jackson, urges Gaines to send troops to Nacogdoches, 346-348; becomes candidate for president of Texas, 359-361; charges made against, replies to charges in letter to Borden, 362-363; secretary of state in Houston's cabinet, 373; writes letter to Jackson's secretary, giving reasons for the necessity of the immediate annexation of Texas, 398; death of, 398-400; tributes paid, burial of, 406-409; reports to government increase in number of cattle in Texas, V, 140.

Austin, William T., comes to Texas, I, 311; signs call for meeting of Columbia citizens, II, 254; secretary of Columbia meeting of August 15, 287; member of committee of safety and correspondence at Columbia meeting of August 15, 288; signs appeal for volunteers to go to Gonzales, 338; describes chaos in Gonzales army at election of commander in chief before arrival of Stephen Austin, 354, 355, 356; named second aidede-camp on Stephen Austin's staff, 360; describes meeting held in Texan camp on eve of departure of delegates to San Felipe, 375, 377; quotation from, 382-383; 387-390; describes preparations of Stephen Austin's army for attack on San Antonio, I, 11, 12, 13; appointed aide-de-camp on Burleson's staff, 17; aids Johnson in command of division of Texas army at battle of San Antonio, 53.

Austin's civil and criminal codes, text of, I. 388-411.

Ayish Bayou, settlers' land dispute with Edwards, I, 230-231; fear of Indians prevents colonists from attacking Nacogdoches, II. 30.

Ayres, Lewis, signs resolution paying tribute to Austin, III, 81.

Ayuntamiento, election of, ordered for Austin's colony, I, 290; duties of officers, 294, 295; adopts ordinance for government and regulation of, asks for state law guaranteeing slave labor contracts, 298-299.

Ayuntamiento of Austin's colony displays patriotism by "Business as Usual" program, after promulgation of law of 1830, I, 366-370.

Azcarate, General Antonio, defeated by Santa Anna's forces, II, 45, 46.

BADGETT, Jesse B., signs declaration of independence, III, 223.

Baird, Judge Spruce M., prevented from holding court at Santa Fe by American officials, IV, 219.

Baker, Mosely, chosen to go on secret mission to East Texas, II, 254; arrest of ordered by Ugartechea, II, 266; activities in East Texas, 279-280; triumphal entry with Johnson into San Felipe, 297-299; messenger for Austin to Nacogdoches district and reports activities of people of East Texas, 342, 346; reports to central committee, 395, 399; captain in Texan army, stationed at San Felipe, III, 287; wounded in battle of San Jacinto, III, 317; member of Texan congress, III, 364.

Baker, Valentine, assistant quartermaster general of Austin's staff, II, 360.

Baldwin, D. J., member of convention held on San Jacinto battlefield, IV, 293, 296.

Ball, A. J., member of caucus that nominated Throckmorton for governor, V. 11.

Ballinger, town, sketch of, V, 326.

Bancroft, quoted, II, 155.

Banks, General, at capture of Brownsville and Texas coast towns, IV, 360.

Barker, Dr. Eugene C., quoted, I, 156, 157, 158; II, 411-412.

Barnett, Thomas, elected comisario, district of Victoria, I, 292; delegate to consultation at San Felipe, II, 402; signs declaration of independence, III, 223.

Barr, Robert, postmaster general, Houston's cabinet, III, 374.

Barradas, Gen. Isidro, heads Spanish expedition against Mexico and surrenders to Santa Anna, I, 328-330.

Barragán, José Antonio, revolt under, II, 14.

Barragán, General Miguel, heads Mexican government during Santa Anna's absence, II, 182; death of, III, 393.

Barrett, D. C., representative of Mina at San Felipe, II, 249 e. s.; peace commissioner to wait upon General Cos, II, 252; failure of mission, II, 267-271; delegate to consultation, II, 403; member of general council, II, 420; chairman of committee on state affairs, correspondence with Austin, III, 30 e. s.; signs resolution paying tribute to Austin, III, 81; Governor Smith refuses to issue commission to, III, 98.

Barrett, G. W., signs declaration of independence, III, 224.

Bartlett, Jesse, member of San Felipe committee, II, 248; member of committee to draft resolution at San Antonio meeting, III, 136. Bastrop, La., I, 59.

Bastrop, Baron de (Felipe Enrique Neri), early career, empresario in Louisiana, removal \*0 Texas, I, 58, 59; Moses Austin's meeting with, I, 65; administers oath to colonists, I, 130, 134, 135; arrangement with Stephen Austin on fees, I, 155; issues titles to colonists, I, 164; member of legislature of Coahuila and Texas, I, 170; influences coloni-

Batson, oil field opened, V, 185.

Battle, M. M., signs resolutions of Mina against Fredonian revolt, I, 258.

Bay City, town, sketch of, V, 317.

Baylor, Lieut. Col. John R., takes possession of West Texas army posts, IV, 349.

Baylor University, V, 93.

zation law, 172.

Beales, J. C., empresario, I, 187.

Bean, Ellis, member of Nolan's expedition, I, 37; Fredonians seize property of, I, 362; influences Indians against Fredonians, I, 277; sent by Piedras to enlist support of Indians against Texans, II, 25.

Beaton, Major Alexander, heads move to drill test well for oil at Corsicana, V, 182.

Beauchamp, Thomas D., delegate to first convention of colonists, II, 48.

Beard, James, accompanies Austin to Natchitoches, I, 76; passenger on Lively, 118.

Beaumont, city, sketch of, V, 245.

Becknell, William, member first congress of the republic of Texas, III, 364. Bee, Bernard E., escorts Santa Anna to Washington, III, 382; advances money to Santa Anna, 396; commissioner to negotiate peace with Mexico, IV, 52; secretary of state, Lamar's cabinet, IV, 56.

Belden, ——, wounded at battle of San Jacinto, III, 60.

Beeville, town, sketch of, V, 322.

Bell, Judge James H., tribute to Austin, III, 409.

Bell, John, candidate of constitutional unionists for president of the United States, IV, 297.

Bell, Josiah H., I, 98; appointed by Austin to take charge of colony, 117; holds first election in colony, 130; member of committee on resolutions at Columbia meeting, II, 220; represents Columbia at San Felipe meeting, 247; urges postponement of action at Columbia meeting, 254.

Bell, P. Hansborough, in Mexican war, IV. 215; third governor of Texas, appoints Neighbors to organize counties in Santa Fe territory, IV, 222; controversy with United States government over Santa Fe, 223; deals with disturbances in Rio Grande country, 224-226; recommends sale of territory north of Missouri Compromise line to United States, 226.

Belton, town, sketch of, V, 297.

Benavides, Placido, joins Texan army, II, 372; commands company at battle of San Antonio, III, 53; Grant's messenger to Fannin, III, 174.

Bennett, Joseph L., at battle of Concepción, II, 384; lieutenant-colonel at battle of San Jacinto, cited for bravery by Rusk, III, 310.

Benson, Ellis, at convention on San Jacinto battlefield, IV, 293.

Benton, Thomas H., objects to boundary of treaty of 1819, I, 11; appealed to by Austin, III, 278, e. s.

Bernard, Dr. J. H., account of Goliad massacre by, III, 242-265.

Bertrand, P., II, 254, 288.

Bevil, John, delegate to consultation, II, 403.

Béxar, San Antonio de, presidio established, I, 28; ayuntamiento of passes act asking for repeal of law of April 6, 1830, and for separation of Coahuila and Texas, II, 61.

Big Mush, Cherokee Indian chief, Austin's appeal to, I, 273.

Big Spring, town, sketch of, V, 307.

Billingsley, Capt. Jesse, wounded at battle of San Jacinto, III, 317; member of first coagress of the republic, 364.

Bingham, F. A., II, 221, 288.

Birney, James G., IV, 176, 177.

Bizzell, Dr. W. B., quoted, V, 128, 133, 207-209, 214, 215, 220, 221.

Blackburn, Ephraim, member of Nolan expedition, executed, I, 37.

Blaffer, R. L., V, 186.

Blakely, Lemuel, killed at San Jacinto, III, 317.

Blanco, Victor, orders expulsion of Hayden Edwards, I, 238; sends books to Austin in prison, II, 136.

Blount, J. H., II, 403.

Blount, Stephen W., signs declaration of independence, III. 224.

Bogart, Sam, at convention at San Jacinto battlefield, IV, 296; opposes secession, 339.

Bonaparte, Joseph, I, 10, 38.

Bonham, town, sketch of, IV, 290.

Bonham, Col. James B., member of committee to draft resolutions at San Antonio, III, 136; reaches Alamo through enemy's lines, 187, 195.

Bonilla, Manuel Diós de, Mexican minister of relations, declares race war against Texans, II, 300-301.

Borden, Gail, Jr., comes to Texas, I, 311; member of committee of safety, II, 321; editor of Texas Telegraph, III, 362; publishes letter of Austin replying to charges, 363.

Borgara, Anselmo, III, 232.

Bouligny, Francisco, I, 53.

Bower, John W., signs declaration of independence, III, 224.

Bowie, town, sketch of, V, 321.

Bowie, James, takes Mexican troops to San Antonio, II, 42; accompanies Sam Houston to San Antonio, 62; obtains lands from state government, 192; gives information on Mexican movements, 220; joins Texan army, 374; wins battle of Concepción, 380, 384, 386; persuades Austin to abandon immediate occupation of San Antonio, 387, 388; in the "grass fight," III, 47; fails to receive Houston's order to lead expedition against Matamoros, 91, 92; goes to relief of the Alamo, 117, 119; member of committee at San Antonio indignation meeting, 136; appeals for reinforcements, 180-181; commands volunteers in Alamo, 183; stricken with illness, 195; death of, 207; body found after battle, 210.

Bowles, Cherokee Indian chief, I, 273; II, 40; death of, IV, 64.

Boyd, John, member of first congress of the republic, III, 364.

Bradburn, Col. John Davis, commands Mexican garrison at Anáhuac, I, 365; arrests land commissioners, II, 8-10; imprisons citizens of Anáhuac in fort, 16-18; violates compact for their release, 19; resigns command, 30; escapes across the Sabine and reports to Mexican government, 31.

Bradley, John M., II, 48.

Bradley, Thomas, II, 17.

Bradshaw, James, presides at Nacogdoches meeting, II, 296; member of committee to treat with Indians, 297.

Branch, A. M., elected United States congressman from Texas, V, 17.

Branch, Edward T., member of first congress of the republic, III, 364.

Brashear, John, secretary of convention on San Jacinto battlefield, IV, 293.

Bravo, Nicolas, I, 111, 170, 283.

Brazos county, early land titles in, I, 163.

Brazos, department of the, created, II, 132.

Brazoria county, early land titles in, I, 163.

Brazoria, citizens of request reopening of port, II, 10.

Brazoria, schooner, II, 28, 29.

Breckinridge, John C., IV, 298.

Breckenridge, town, sketch of, 267.

Breece, Captain, at battle of San Antonio, III, 53.

Breedlove, James William, II, 7.

Brenham, R. F., IV, 83.

Brenham, town, sketch of, V, 298.

Brigham, R. R., killed at San Jacinto, III, 317.

Briscoe, Andrew, II, 209-210; 387; signs declaration of independence, III, 224.

Bristow, Adjutant, at battle of San Antonio, III, 56; cited in report of battle, 61.

Brown, Henry S., sent to Brazoria for men and ammunition, II, 23; at battle of Velasco, 28, 29; delegate to first convention of colonists, 48.

Brown, John, execution of, IV, 260.

Brown, John M., at convention on San Jacinto battlefield, IV, 293.

Brown, John Henry, member of committee to draft declaration of causes for secession, IV, 339.

Brown, R. R., description of Grant massacre by, III, 173.

Brownsville, town, sketch of, V, 272.

Brownwood, town, sketch of, V, 284.

Bruff, Samuel, delegate to first convention of colonists, II, 47.

Brush, Elkanah, member of first congress of the republic, III, 364.

Brutus, schooner of Texas navy, III, 144.

Bryan, town, sketch of, V, 288.

Bryan, Guy M., nephew of Stephen F. Austin, comes to Texas, I, 307; quoted, 307, 308, 309, 310, 311, 312, 324; letter to from Hammeken, II, 144-147; quoted, 310-311; quoted, III, 275; delegate to national Democratic convention of 1860, IV, 291.

Bryan, James, son-in-law of Moses Austin, I.

Bryan, Joseph, II, 368.

Bryan, Moses Austin, nephew of Stephen F. Austin, quoted, II, 381-382, 387; acts as interpreter for Santa Anna at San Jacinto, III, 302.

Bryant, William J., II, 338.

Bautista, San Juan, Mission of, I, 28.

Bucareli, Pilar de, pueblo of, I, 32.

Buchanan, James, secretary of state, 189; president of the United States, IV, 251.

Buckeye Rangers, prevent arrest of President Burnet, III, 344.

Buckner, Capt. Aylett C., Edwards's letter to, I, 244-246.

Buffalo Bayou, Brazos & Colorado, first railroad built in Texas, V. 217.

Bull, Lieutenant, skirmish with Mexicans, II, 272,

Bullock, John W., commands colonists in department of Nacogdoches, defeats Mexicans at Nacogdoches, II, 39-41; commands company at battle of Refugio, III, 241.

Bumpass, J. K., member of caucus nominating Throckmorton for governor, V, 11.

Bunton, John W., member of first congress of the republic, III, 364.

Burkburnett, oil field, discovery of, V, 195-196.

Burkburnett, town, sketch of, V, 294-296. Burleson county, early land titles in, I, 163.

Burleson, Edward, elected lieutenant-colonel at Gonzales, II, 360; elected delegate to consultation, 403; commands detachment to intercept reinforcements from Laredo, III, 2; presents communication to Austin opposing storming of San Antonio, III, 13; chosen commander in chief of volunteers, III, 17; Gonzales's order to report to, 37; holds council of war which decides to abandon siege of San Antonio, 48-51; arranges terms of capitulation with Cos after battle of San Antonio, 62-65; reports fall of San Antonio and retires from army, 65; named colonel of infantry, 71; elected colonel of regiment at Gonzales, 235; utters famous phrase, "Thermopylæ had its messenger of defeat, the Alamo had none," 237; commands first regiment at battle of San Jacinto, 295, e. s.; cited for bravery by Rusk, 310; defeats Córdova and followers, IV, 54; defeats Cherokee Indians in battle on Neches, 64; chosen by volunteers at San Antonio to lead expedition against Mexico, 95; candidate for presidency of the republic, 182; serves in Mexican war, 215.

Burnam's Station, I, 191.

Burnam, Capt. Jesse, experience with Indians, I, 121; delegate to first convention of colonists, II, 47; opposes resolution for separate statehood, 51; member of board of war at Gonzales, 353; delegate to the consultation, 402

Burnet, David G., granted colonization contract, I, 186; settles in Austin's colony, 310; leader in second convention of colonists, II, 77; chairman of committee to draft memorial for separate statehood, 77, 79; drafts San Jacinto precinct resolutions, 258; chosen to represent San Jacinto precinct in general convention, 264; delegate to consultation, 404; elected first president of the republic of Texas, III, 227; orders Houston to balt retreat, 271-272; flees with cabinet to Galveston island, 288; orders removal of Santa Anna to Velasco, 326; negotiates treaties with Santa Anna, 326-330; army adopts memorial protesting against his proposal to release Santa Anna, 334; defends proposal, 336-337; replies to Santa Anna's protest, 341-342; attempt of army to arrest, 343-344, calls first election under republic, 359; message to first congress, 364-366; vice president under Lamar, IV, 91; defeated by Houston for presidency, IV, 91; secretary of state under Governor Henderson, IV, 209; elected United States senator from Texas, V, 17; denied seat and signs "Address to the Congress and People of the United States," 19 e. s.

Burnett, S. Burk, establishes cattle ranch in Wichita county, V. 168.

Burr, Aaron, charged with conspiracy, I, 39. Burton, Isaac W., II, 40; IV, 69.

Burton, J. W., signs declaration of independence, III, 223; member of committee to draft constitution, 224.

Burton, H. G., IV, 17.

Bustamante, Anatasio, leads revolution against Guerrero and assumes office of president, I, 336, 337; brings proposals of Terán and Alamán to attention of congress, 353; refuses to accept resignation of cabinet, II, 13; defeats Moctezuma and resigns, 45; campaign against Santa Anna, 61; signs peace terms with Santa Anna, 71; elected president of Mexico, III, 396; loses power, IV, 77.

Butler, Col. Anthony, appointed by President Jackson, 141-143; personal enmity between chase of Texas, I, 340, 341; journey to Mexico and arrival, 343-346; proposes that United States take mortgage on Texas, II, 67; efforts to have Texas made territory, 107; condemns Austin, suggests bribery as means of securing Texas, condemned by Jackson to negotiate with Mexico for pur-Butler and Austin, 146, 147; recalled as minister to Mexico, III, 141-142.

Butler, George, delegate to first convention of colonists, II, 48; votes against resolution for separate statehood, 51.

Bynum, Wade H., II, 254, 288.

Byrom, J. S. D., delegate to consultation, II, 403; signs declaration of independence, 111, 223.

CADILLAC, DE LA MOTHE, governor of Louisiana, sends St. Denis to Texas to establish trading post, I, 25, 26.

Calderón, General José Maria, defeats Santa Anna at Talome, siege of Vera Cruz, II, 13, 14.

Caldwell, J. P., member of committee to prepare resolutions at Columbia convention, II, 221.

Caldwell, Mathew, signs declaration of independence of Texas, III. 223; defeats Mexicans under Woll, near San Antonio, IV, 97.

Caldwell, Judge C., moderates' choice for president of Austin convention, defeated by Davis, V, 53.

Calhoun, John C., makes plea for recognition of Texas before U. S. senate, III, 401; succeeds Upshur as secretary of state in Tyler's cabinet, annexation treaty signed, IV, 147-148; informs Almonte of signing annexation treaty with Texas, 149; replies to Aberdeen's note on British attitude toward slavery in Texas, links annexation question with slavery in Texas, 149-150.

Calvit, Alexander, member of Austin's first municipal electoral assembly, I, 292; signs call for meeting of Columbia citizens, II, 254.

Cameron, Dr., praised by Johnson in report on battle of San Antonio, III, 61.

- Cameron, John, granted colonization contract,

  I, 186; signs treaty of capitulation entered into by Cos and Burleson at San Antonio, III, 65.
- Cameron, town, sketch of, V, 306-307.
- Camp, L. B., signs address to defeat secession ordinance, IV, 339.
- Campbell, Isaac, commissioner to select and purchase site for Texas capital, IV, 69.
- Campbell, Thomas Mitchell, governor of Texas, V, 105.
- Campeachy, pirate town of, I, 47.
- Campos, Juan Vicente, granted colonization contract, I, 187.
- Canales, Miracle reports force under ready to join Texans, III, 42; heads revolution in Coahuila and adjoining territory, IV, 77.
- Canalizo, General Valentino, succeeds Filisola at Matamoros, plans Mexican-Indian attacks on settlers in Texas, IV, 54.
- Cantú, José M., selected to serve as vicegovernor of Texas and Coahuila during absence of Viesca, II, 191.
- Carajal, J. M., appointed surveyor of municipality under Madero, II, 8.
- Carajabal, J. M., Ugartechea orders arrest of, II, 266.
- Carey, W. L., oil discovered on farm of, V, 193.
- Carns, Captain, cited by Johnson for bravery at battle of San Antonio, III, 58.
- Carondelet, governor of Louisiana, encourages
  Baron de Bastrop in founding settlement in
  Texas, I, 58, 59.
- Carson, Sam P., signs declaration of independence of Texas, III, 224; chosen secretary of state of Texas republic, III, 227; sent to Natchitoches to confer with Gaines, writes of interview, III, 284-286.
- "Cart war," IV, 232-233.
- Cartwright, John, remains in Texas after treaty of 1819, I, 224.
- Cartwright, Jesse, I, 314; member of first congress of the republic, III, 364.
- Cartwright, Miss, marriage of, I, 314,
- Castaneda, Capt. Francisco, commands Mexican cavalry force at Conzales, party with Colonel Moore, attacked by Texans, retreats toward San Antonio, II, 334-337.
- Castleman, Sylvanus, meeting of colonists held at home of, I, 135.
- Cass, Lewis, Austin's appeal to Jackson and cabinet, III, 278, e. s.; favors annexation, candidate for nomination for presidency at Democratic convention, IV, 167.
- Castrillon, directs Mexican assault of Alamo, III, 204, e. s., 211; wounded in battle of San Jacinto, 297, 321.
- Catlett, W. F., advises an attempt to change attitude of Jackson toward recognition before expiration of term of office, III, 393.
- Cattle, history of industry in Texas, V, 135,
- "Cattle Raisers' Association," the Texas and Southwestern, origin and growth of, V, 172.

- Causes of Secession, adopted at Austin convention, text of, IV, 391, e. s.
- Centralist party, I, 146.
- Centralists, political party in Mexico, II, 181.
- Cespedes, Don Manuel, wounded in battle of San Jacinto, III, 321.
- Chadwick, signs treaty of capitulation after battle of Coleta, III, 253; returns to Goliad from Copano with Travis, 258.
- Chambers county, land titles issued to early settlers, I, 163.
- Chambers, T. J., granted colonization contract, I, 186; appointed surveyor general for Nacogdoches district, I, 322; candidate for governor of Texas, IV, 361.
- Chaplin, son-in-law of Hayden Edwards, candidate for alcalde in election of 1825, I, 232, 233.
- Charleston, S. C., national democratic convention held at, southern delegates withdraw, IV, 291-292; Massachusetts delegates withdraw, 298.
- Chenoweth, John, representative of Texas republic, III, 364.
- Cherokee Indians, alliance with Edwards, I, 243; Sam Houston goes to live among, 371, 372; agree to remain neutral, II, 40; Lamar orders banished from Texas, IV, 60; refuse to leave Texas, defeated in battle by Texans, 64.
- Chesire, Captain, commands company at batrle of San Antonio, III, 60.
- Chevalie, M., serves in war between Mexico and U. S., IV, 215.
- Childress, town, sketch of, V, 299-300.
- Childress, George C., moves that committee be appointed to draft declaration of independence at Washington convention, chairman of committee appointed, III, 218; signs declaration of independence of Texas, 223.
- Chilton, George W., elected U. S. congressman from Texas, V, 17.
- Chisholm, Jesse, trail named for, V, 161.
- "Chisholm Trail," description of, V, 161-162.
- Chriesman, Horatio, member of Kincheloe's party, surveyor for Austin's colony, I, 125. 126.
- Christie, Lorenzo, accompanies Austin to Mexico City, 1, 99.
- Cibolo creek, Texas army camps at, II, 367.
- Cisco, town, sketch of, V, 286-287.
- Civil and criminal codes of Austin, text of, I. 388-411.
- Civil war, Texas's part in, IV, 345, e. s.
- Claiborne, governor of Louisiana, takes possession of West Florida territory, I, 40.
- Clark, George, nominated for governor of Texas by Democratic faction, platform of adherents opposes Hogg's stock and bond law and demands an elective railroad commission, condemns unsettling of land titles, V, 99-101.
- Clark, Edward, serves in war between Mexico and U. S., IV, 215; candidate for lieutenant-governor of Texas, 258; lieutenant-governor of Texas, takes Houston's place as

governor, 342; governor, makes preparations in Texas for carrying on war against Union, 349-350; flees from Texas at close of Civil war, 365.

Clark, William, Jr., signs declaration of independence of Texas, III, 224.

Clarksville, town, sketch of, V, 318.

Clay, Henry, objects to boundary established by treaty of 1819, I, 11; efforts to acquire Texas territory from Mexico, 197, e. s.; political alliance with Adams, 197; named secretary of state, 198; gives Obregon expression of American attitude toward Texas, 280; opposes recognition of Texas, III, 401; Whig candidate for president of U. S., opposes annexation of Texas, IV, 162, e. s.; Houston refers to attitude of, toward union, in speech against secession, 280; praised by Houston in address defending union, 322-324.

Clay, Nestor, represents Hidalgo at first convention of colonists in Texas, II, 47; demands that McFarland's resolution be put to vote, 50; votes against resolution asking for separate statehood for Texas, 51; serves with Houston on committee to draw up constitution, 78.

Cleburne, town, sketch of, V, 269.

Clement, J. B., elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, II, 403.

Clements, J. D., chosen member of general council of Texas, II, 420; signs resolution paying tribute to Austin, III, 81; member of committee of general council to which Smith's communication was referred, 111.

Cloud, J. W., member of committee to decide question of joining in Mexican war, II, 27, 28,

Coahuila, province of, I, 148.

Coahuila and Texas, message of governor, II, 10, 11; civil war between state and national authorities, 186, 190, e. s.; legislature draws up memorial protesting against law regulating militia, 195-196; remonstrance to congress, 196-198,

Codes, Austin's civil and criminal, I, 388-411.

Coe, Philip, elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, II, 403.

Coke, Richard, associate justice of supreme court of Texas, V, 17; nominated for governor of Texas at Democratic convention, 81; elected governor of Texas, 82; inauguration of, 85-86; governor, reclected, of Texas, 88; elected U. S. senator from Texas, 90.

Colano, San Francisco, mission of, I, 28.

Cole, P. C., Armour sends to Texas to look for slaughtering point, V, 175.

Coleman, Captain, commands company at battle of Concepción, II, 384.

Colcman, R. M., elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, II, 403; signs declaration of independence of Texas, III, 223; member of committee to draft constitution at Washington convention, 224.

Coleman, town, sketch of, V, 326.

Coles, John P., receives special grant of land, I, 164; member of Austin's first municipal electoral assembly, 292.

Coleta, battle of, III, 246-253.

Collard, C., elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, II, 403.

College of Industrial Arts, founded, V, 92.

Collier, Jim, colleague of Martin Parmer, I, 254.

Collinsworth, Captain George, captures Goliad, II, 348, 349; ordered to retain fort at Goliad by Austin, 361; Austin urges obtaining of allegiance of people of Goliad in communication to, III, 6-7; appointed to take Dimmitt's place at Goliad, 10.

Collinsworth, James, signs declaration of independence of Texas, III 223; member of committee to draft constitution at Washington convention, 224; introduces resolution reelecting Houston commander in chief of army at Washington convention, 229; major, cited for bravery at battle of San Jacinto by Rusk in report to Burnet, 309; signs treaties with Santa Anna at Velasco, 329-330; member of Texas commission to Washington, 366; named chief justice of supreme court of republic of Texas, IV, 43.

Colonization, carly attempts at, I, 15, c. s.

Colonization law, general. passed by Mexican congress, I, 170-171-182; state, passed by legislature of Coahuila and Texas, 172; provinces of, 173, 174, 175.

Colorado, river, colony on, hardships endured by settlers, privations, sickness, trouble with Indians, civilly organized, I, 119, c. s.

Colorado, county, land titles issued to carly settlers, I, 163.

Colquitt, Oscar Branch, governor of Texas, V, 105.

Columbia, first meeting, resolutions adopted at, II, 216-217.

Columbia, convention, resolutions adopted at. II, 220-224.

Columbia, committee, represents municipality at San Felipe meeting, instructions to, II, 247-248; issues address to offset war party propaganda, letter to Ugartechea, delegation appointed to wait upon Cos in person, 249, 253.

Columbia. meeting of August 15, resolutions adopted at, address to people voicing pl?a for consultation, II, 286-296.

Columbia, resolutions adopted at meeting favoring independence, III, 89.

Comanche Indians, I, 29; "council house fight," fights with Texans, IV, 65; Texas government makes treaty with last war chief, 202.

Comanche, town of, sketch of, V, 316.

Commerce, town of, sketch of, V, 311.

Concepción, La Purísima, mission of, I, 27.

Concepción, battle of, II, 383-386.

Conell, John, represents Mill Creek at first convention of colonists in Texas, II, 48.

"Confederate States of America," Texas joins,
IV. 341.

Conrad, Edward, serves on committee to draft declaration of independence at Washington convention, III, 218; signs declaration of independence of Texas, 224.

Constitution, drafted by Houston and others at first convention of colonists in Texas, II, 78, 79.

Constitution of 1824, abolished, II, 231; of Texas, ratified by people, III, 363; of Republic of Texas, text of, 412, e. s.

Constitution of 1866, adopted, V, 14.

Constitution of 1869, adopted, V, 62.

Constitution of 1876, adopted, V, 88.

Constitutional Union party, holds convention at Baltimore, IV, 297.

Consultation, of all Texas, held at San Felipe, II, 393, e. s.; Archer's address to, 404-407; delegates entertain varied opinions as to position Texas should take, 407-412; resolution adopted thanking men for services in battle of Concepción, committee named to set forth statement of causes for war, 412; declaration based on principles of constitution of 1824 finally adopted, 413-416; committee created to draw up plan for provisional government, plan adopted, 416-417; Henry Smith elected governor at, provisional government to have no authority over volunteer army, members of general consultation chosen, 417-420.

Contracts, slave labor, legalized, I, 300.

Convention, first of colonists in Texas, held at San Felipe, representatives and districts represented, officers elected, committees appointed, resolution asking for separate state-hood for Texas adopted, repeal of law of April 6, asked, memorials prepared, Wharton appointed to present memorials to state and national governments, II, 47-57; second, of Anglo-Americans in Texas at San Felipe, 75-82.

Cook, Captain, commands company at battle of San Antonio, III, 53.

Cook, James M., author of "Fifty Years on the Old Frontier," describes experiences in cattle business in Texas, V, 142-151.

Cooke, Major, cited for bravery at San Jacinto by Rusk in report to Burnet, III, 310.

Cooke, Louis P., commissioned to select and purchase site for Texas capital, IV, 69.

Cooke, Captain Philip S., U. S. cavalry troops under, guard Mexican traders, returning to Santa Fe, IV, 101.

Cooke, William G., appointed commissioner to Santa Fe, IV, 83; commands advance party of expedition, reaches sheep ranch, surrenders to Armijo, 88; march of prisoners to Mexico City, 89-91; succeeds Hill as secretary of war and navy of Texas, IV, 191.

Cooper, town of, sketch of, V, 329.

Cooper, C. E., serves in war between U. S. and Mexico, IV, 215.

Cooper, J., wounded in battle of San Jacinto, III, 317.

Cooper, William, mustang purchased from, I, 317.

"Cooper and Chieves," saloon and billiard hall, I, 194. "Córdova Rebellion," IV, 53-54.

Córdova, Vicente, leader of Mexican-Indian uprisings around Nacogdoches, IV, 53; de feated by Burleson, flees across Rio Grande, 54.

Coronado, Vasquez de, expedition under, I, 18. Corpus Christi, town of, sketch of, V, 277-278.

Correo de Mexico, revenue cutter, fight with San Felipe, II, 310.

Corro, José Justo, named president of Mexico, III, 396.

Corsicana, town of, sketch of, V, 274-275.

Corsicana, oil activities around, V, 182-183.

Cortés, introduces cattle-branding irons into America, V, 136.

Cortina, Juan, supersedes Bradburn at Anáhuac, escapes with officers, II, 30, 31; leads Mexican revolt on Rio Grande, IV, 233.

Corzine, Shelby, elected judge of first district of republic of Texas, IV, 43; senator of Texas republic, 363.

Cos, General Martín Perfecto de, commandant of eastern internal provinces, prepares to crush resistance in Coahuila and Texas, II, 193, 194, 195, 198; arrests Viesca, establishes provisional government of Coahuila and Texas, 201; made commandant of eastern internal provinces, 204; sends Miller instructions regarding new policy in Texas, 211; letter to Tenorio intercepted by colonists, 212; assures people of good will of central government in address to political chiefs of 243-245; orders arrest of De Za-Texas, vala, 265; reflects view of central govern-ment in regard to Texas, 324; lands at Copano with troops, marches toward Goliad, 329; colonists prepare to intercept, 330; leaves military supplies at Goliad, capture of Goliad by, 347; refuses to receive communications from Austin, 372; refuses to receive communications from Austin, sends apology for firing upon Texans under flag of truce, 390-391; signs treaty of capitulalation after battle of San Antonio, III, 62-65; army marches back to Mexico, 68; storms chapel at battle of Alamo, III, 204, 68; e. s.; Santa Anna orders to gulf coast, 288; joins Santa Anna at San Jacinto, 294; capture of, 300; Santa Anna permits soldiers of, to water horses, 319-320.

Cotten, Godwin B., I, 194, 313.

Cotton, history of growth of industry in Texas, V, 118-131.

"Council house fight," IV, 65.

Council, general of Texas, first meeting of, receives governor's message, divides itself into five standing committees, Austin submits report to, III, 21, e. s.: friction with governor, Smith vetoes ordinance of, extending support to Mexía, 39-40; passes ordinance calling convention of all Texas, Smith vetoes ordinance, 40; measure passes over Smith's veto, 41; issues address to Mexican people, 42-45; expresses gratitude of people for capture of San Antonio in address to volunteer army, 66-68; permanent, of Texas, passes ordinance establishing volunteer corps of army of Texas, creates cav-

alry and ranger forces, 76, 77; passes bill authorizing loan, drafts instructions to commissioners to U. S., adopts resolutions paying tribute to Austin, 80-81; adopts resolutions urging the concentration of all forces on frontier, III, 95-97; adopts committee report granting Johnson authority to make expedition against Matamoros, 99-100; adopts resolution giving Fannin full power to organize and conduct expedition against Matamoros, 100-102; authorizes Johnson to unite with Fannin, 105; adopts resolutions suspending Smith, 111-112; confirms resolutions after Smith's apology, 114; sends resolutions to Neill empowering him to defend San Antonio, 178.

Counly, James, wounded in battle of San Jacinto, III, 317.

Court of Alcaldes, created, I, 288.

Crane, Captain, commands company at battle of San Antonio, III, 53.

Crawford, William H., candidate for presidency of United States, I, 198.

Crawford, William Carrol, member of committee to draft constitution at Washington convention, III, 224; signs declaration of independence of Texas, 224.

Crockett, town of, sketch of, V, 322-323.

Crockett, David, arrives in Texas, joins defenders of Alamo at San Antonio, III, 177; body found in west battery of Alamo, 207, 210.

Crosby, Josiah F., elected delegate to national Democratic convention, IV, 291.

Crosby, Stephen, made land commissioner of Texas, V, 17.

Crozart, Antonine, obtains monopoly of Louisiana trade, I, 25.

"Cuernavaca," plan of, Santa Anna responds to, II, 155; state government of Texas and Coahuila declares against, 156.

Cuero, town of, sketch of, V, 313-314.

Cuevas, Luis G., minister of foreign relations in Mexico, IV, 201; favors recognition of independence of Texas, 202.

Culberson, Charles A., nominated for attorney general of Texas at Democratic convention, advocates amendment providing for state railroad commission, V, 98; successfully defends Texas against railroad suits, 99; becomes governor of Texas, anti-trust agitation, Greer county dispute, 103-104; United States senator from Texas, 105.

Cullinan, J. S., erects first oil refinery in Texas at Corsicana, V, 183; organizer of Texas Company, V, 185.

Cummins, James, I, 135; receives special grant of land, 164; member of committee sent by Saucedo to Nacogdoches, 261; committee's report to Austin, 262, 264; member of Austin's first municipal electoral assembly, 292.

Cummins, Judge Cummins's station, I, 192.

Cummins, John, Austin's messenger to the Cherokees, I, 273.

Cushing, Caleb (chairman), withdraws from national Democratic convention, IV, 298.

DALHART, county seat of Dallam county sketch of, V, 327-328.

Dallas, city of, sketch of, V, 228-232.

Dallas, George M., nominated for vice-presidency of U. S. at Democratic convention in 1844, IV, 168.

Dalrymple, W. C., member of caucus to draw up letter requesting Throckmorton to become candidate for governor, V, 11.

Daly, Andrew, named vice-president at San Jacinto convention, IV, 293; elected secretary at San Jacinto convention, 293; member of committee on resolutions at San Jacinto convention, 293; named on committee of correspondence at San Jacinto convention, 296.

Darden, Stephen H., nominated for comptroller of Texas at democratic convention, V, 81.

Darnell, N. H., candidate for first lieutenantgovernor of Texas, IV, 207.

Davenport, Samuel, settles in territory before Edwards, I, 222, 223.

Davis, Thomas, elected first regidor of Austin's colony, I, 292, 312.

Davis, George W., elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, II, 403.

Davis, Jefferson, elected president of Confederate States of America, IV, 345.

Davis, Edmund J., leader of "Ab Initios," named president of Austin convention, V, 53; ultra-radicals file protest against adoption of constitution with, adds indorsement of protest, 58; nominated by "Ab Initios" for governor of Texas, 60; elected governor of Texas, appointed provisional governor, 62; inauguration of, character of, ideas of governor, 63,64. government, 63-64; controls legislature, military laws passed, state police force created, election laws passed, act passed giving governor right to dismiss officials and fill vacancies by appointment, school system provided for, railroad act passed, 64-69; becomes dictator of Texas, despotic measures of 71-72; movement against administration of, 73 e. s.; issues proclamation decreeing that members of legislature chosen at election of 1872 should hold office only one year, 77-78; Democratic legislature destroys machine of, 79-80; nominated for reelection at Republican convention at Dallas, 81; attacks constitutionality of law under which state election was held, supreme court declares law unconstitutional, issues proclamation forbidding legislature to meet, 82-83; appeals to Grant for help, attempts to prevent legislature from meeting, 83, e. s.

Davidson, James H., heads military forces in Texas during Davis's administration, absconds after appropriating money from state funds, V. 71.

Dawson, Captain Nicholas, volunteers under, slaughtered by Mexicans, IV, 97.

Dawson, John C., trail named for, V, 164; description of trail, 164.

Dayton, oil field opened, V, 191.

Dayton, town of, sketch of, V, 331.

Declaration of independence of Texas, adopted at Washington convention, III, 218-224.

De Cordova, J., describes transportation in early Texas, V, 216-217.

Decree of October 3, issued by centralist congress of Mexico, formally abolishing federal system, 15, text of presented to provisional government by Austin, 17-18.

Dee, receives letter from Austin, I, 219.

De la Garza, house of, occupied by Texas in battle of San Antonio, III, 54, 55.

De Leon, town of, sketch of, V, 318-319.

De Leon, Martin, establishes ranch in Texas, V, 139; colonization contract exempted from law of April 6, 1830, 364.

Delgado, Captain, Mexican officer, murders Salcedo and staff, I, 43.

Del Rio, town of, sketch of, V. 276-277.

Democratic Statesman, newspaper established,

Denison, town of, sketch of, V, 261-262.

Denton, town of, sketch of, V, 285-286.

Desdemona, town of, sketch of, V, 324.

Devine, T. J., member of commission to confer with Gen. Twiggs in regard to surrender of arms, IV, 340.

Mexico, I, 105; obtains colonization contract in tract, 175; situation of grant, 176; colonization contract not cancelled by law of 1830, 364. DeWitt, Green, seeks colonization contract in

DeWitt's Station, I, 191.

DeWitt's settlers, resolutions of, condemning Fredonians, I, 258-260.

DeWitt's colony, life in, I, 325.

Dexter, R. B., elected secretary of consultation of San Felipe, II, 402.

Dickinson, Lieutenant, spectacular death of, III, 208, 209.

Dickinson, Mrs., wife of Lieutenant Dickinson, brings story of the defence of Alamo to Gonzales, III, 236.

Dimmitt, P., member of deputation sent to demand surrender of Goliad, II, 349; as captain, commands Texas troops at Goliad. Viesca offended at treatment accorded by, Galán complains of treatment of Mexicans, III, 6: Austin orders removal of, men refuse to submit to order, 10, 11; urges the taking of Matamoros in letter to Smith, 92-94; Houston meets before reaching Goliad, 118.

Dinsmore, Silas, represents Mina at first convention of colonists in Texas, II, 47; member of committee of safety and correspondence at Columbia meeting of August 15, 287.

Dobson, Archibald B., represents San Jacinto at first convention of colonists in Texas, II, 47; votes against resolution asking for separate statehood for Texas, 51.

Donelson, A. J., American chargé d'affaires to Texas, returns from New Orleans to present annexation proposal to Texas government, IV, 191-192; expresses hope for more favorable terms of annexation, in presenting proposal to Texan government, 197.

Donley, S. P., associate justice of supreme court of Texas, V, 17.

Dorn, A. J., nominated for treasurer of Texas at Democratic convention, V, 81.

Douglas, Stephen A., drafts Kansas-Nebraska bill, IV, 240, e. s.; controversy with Pierce. 251; opposes admission of Kansas into Union, 251-252; debates with Lincoln, 252; Southern Democrats turn against, 254; Texas Democrats adopt resolutions in regard to doctrine of nonintervention, 254; nominated for president by Northern Democrats, 298.

Douglas, Samuel C., represents Mill Creek at first convention of colonists in Texas, II, 48.

Dowling, Lieutenant Dick, Confederate defense of Sabine Pass, IV, 359.

Drake, E. L., drills oil well in Pennsylvania, V, 180.

"Dred Scott," case, decision of, IV, 252.

Dublin, town of, sketch of, V, 319-320.

Duke, Thomas M., alcalde of Mina, adoption of resolutions condemning Fredonians, I, 257; elected alcalde of Austin's colony, 292; member of Austin's first municipal electoral as-sembly, 292; member of "The Lodge of sembly, 292; member of Union," 302.

Dunbar, William, named vice-president at San Jacinto convention, IV, 293.

Duncan, Captain, commands company at battle of San Antonio, III, 53.

Dunlap, Richard G., succeeds Jones as minister to United States, IV, 41; secretary of treasury in Lamar's cabinet, 56.

Durán, letter to Santa Anna advocating abolition of federal government, II, 88.

Durán, Ignacio, brings reinforcements to Tenorio, II, 208.

Durst, John, Austin writes letter to, I, 333.

Durst, Joseph, house made headquarters of Johnson and Baker, II, 342-343.

Dusaugue, Captain, acts as interpreter between Fannin and Mexican officers when he su renders near Goliad, III, 251, 255, 256.

Duque, Colonel, wounded at battle of Alamo, III, 205.

Dyer, Clement C., member of Austin's first municipal electoral assembly, I, 293; elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, II, 403; named on committee at San Felipe consultation to draw up plan for provisional government, II, 416.

EARLY, murder of, I, 317-318. Eagle Pass, town of, sketch of, V. 292-

Eastland, town of, sketch of, V, 280-281.

Ecatzingo, plan to place descendant of Montezuma on throne proclaimed at, II, 154.

Eckhardt, Von, Zimmermann's secret note to, V, 108-109.

Edward, David B., publishes "History of Texas," discusses importance of cotton in-dustry in Texas, V, 119-120.

Edwards, Asa M., escorts Piedras to Velasco, II, 42.

Edwards, Ashmore, serves as second lieutenant under Travis at Anáhuac, II, 226.

Edwards, Benjamin W., takes charge of colony, seeks advice from Austin, letter offends governor, expulsion of Edwards and brother from country ordered, I, 235, 238; hopes for annexation of Texas territory to United States, 241, 242; issues appeals to colonists for revolt, letter to Captain Buckner, general appeal to colonists, 242-251; letter to Colonel Ahumada, 278.

Edwards, Hayden, seeks colonization contract in Mexico City, contemporaneous with Austin, I, 105; empresario, obtains colonization contract, 175; situation of grant, 176; threatens settlers on San Jacinto, communicates with Austin, 213; character of, 226-227; difficulties confronting Edwards, 221-227; Edwards's position in colony, clash with authorities, trouble wth settlers over land titles and fees, 227-232; dispute over election at Nacogdoches, district divided into two factions, 232-235; Edwards goes to United States, 235; forms alliance wth Cherokee Indians, 242, 243; receives letter from Saucedo proposing compromise, 260.

Edwards, Hayden H., representative in first congress of Texas republic, III, 364.

Edwards, brothers, flight across the Sabine, I, 277.

Edwards, Monroe, arrested and imprisoned by Bradburn, II, 16.

Edwards, Captain, commands company at battle of San Antonio, III, 53.

Egerton, Henry, granted colonization contract, I, 187.

Elam, John, member of Austin's first municipal electoral assembly, I, 293.

Election, first constitutional election held in Austin's colony, I, 291.

Electra, oil field opened, V, 191-192.

Electra, town of, sketch of, V, 303-304.

Elguezabal, Juan, installed as military governor of Texas and Coabuila, II, 157.

Elisondo, general, forces defeated by Americans under Perry, I, 44.

Ellett, William A., signs address to defeat secession ordinance, IV, 339.

Elliot, Charles, appointed British diplomatic agent for Texas, IV, 119; plan for future of Texas, 120-121; secures armistice between Mexico and Texas through British minister to Mexico, IV, 129; believes plan of nominal sovereignty of Texas by Mexico to be impractical, 131-132; Jones names son for, 132; applies for information regarding Henderson's mission to U. S., IV, 148; goes on mission to Mexico City to present proposal that Mexico recognize independence of Texas as alternative to annexation, IV, 192-196; Mexican congress passes act authorizing recognition of independence of Texas, returns to Texas, 201-202.

Ellis, Richard, member of committee sent by Saucedo to Nacogdoches, I, 261; committee's report to Austin, 262, 264; elected president of Washington convention, III, 218; signs declaration of independence of Texas, III, 223; senator in first congress of Texas republic, III, 364.

Elmore, Colonel H. M., wins distinction at recapture of Galveston by Confederates, IV, 358.

El Paso, city of, sketch of, V, 238-241.

Encarnación Chirino, district of, Mexican 21calde killed, II, 42.

Encinal del Perdido, battle of, III, 246-253. English, Bill, colleague of Martin Parmer, I, 254.

English, William, represents Teneha at first convention of colonists in Texas, II, 48.

English, Captain, commands company at battle of San Antonio, III, 53.

Ennis, town of, sketch of, V, 287.

Epigmenio de las Piedras, author of plan to restore Montezuma line, II, 154.

Epperson, B. H., signs address to defeat secession ordinance, IV, 339; elected U. S. congressman from Texas, V, 17.

Erwin, Dr., member of deputation sent to demand surrender of Goliad, II, 349.

Escalada, Colonel Ignacio, calls upon Santa Anna to defend church and army, II, 87.

Escoceses, branch of Masonry organized in Mexico for political purposes, I, 203; 282. Escoceses, political party in Mexico, I, 300; II, 181

Espada, Mission of, Texan army camps at, II, 380.

Espejo, Antonio de, journey through Texas for purpose of founding missions, I, 27.

Everitt, S. H., elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, II, 403; named on committee at San Felipe consultation to draw up plan for provisional government, 416; signs declaration of independence of Texas, III, 223; member of committee to draft constitution at Washington convention, 224; senator in first congress of Texas republic, 363; delivers address against proposal to send Santa Anna to Vera Cruz via Washington, 379-381; Jones arranges committee exchange with, IV, 111.

Exeter and Wilson, granted colonization contract, I, 186.

Expansion of United States, I, 2, e. s.

PACIO, minister of war in Bustamante's cabinet, II, 13; forces defeated by Santa Anna, 45, 46.

Fairchild, Philo, member of Austin's first municipal electoral assembly, I, 292.

Fannin, J. W. Jr., signs appeal for volunteers to go to Gonzales, II, 338; signs letter inviting Austin to Gonzales, 352; Austin sends detachment under to examine country, 380; battle of Concepción, 383-386; implores Austin not to enter San Antonio immediately after battle of Concepción, 387; Captain, detachment under, sent to intercept Mexican reinforcements from Laredo, III 2; named colonel of artillery of Texas army, 71; chosen by council to organize and conduct Matamoros expedition, 100-102; issues proclamation announcing frontier expedition, 103; sails for Copano with "Georgia Battalion" and Texas volunteers, 117; moves on to Goliad with troops, 135; prepares to send aid to Alamo, decides to defend Goliad, 185; sends detachment under King and Ward to Refugio, recalls Ward, prepares for retreat to Victoria, 239-242; attempts to

retreat from Goliad, 245-246; battle of Coleta, wounded in fight, surrenders to Urrea, 251-252; returned to Goliad from Copano, 258; execution of, 262.

Farias, Gomez, leader of revolt of Zacatecas and Jalisco, principles of, II, 38; elected vice-president of Mexico, 71; becomes acting president of Mexico during absence of Santa Anna, raises army of citizens to protect capital and rescue Santa Anna, 86-88; Austin calls upon, 89; Austin expresses confidence in, 103; Austin's stormy interview with, 104; orders arrest of Austin, 114; exonerated by Austin in letter to Perry, 136; leaves president's chair, 155; deposed by congress, 182; returns from exile, joins movement to restore constitution of 1824, IV, 77.

Farish, W. S., V, 186.

Farmer's Alliance, demands regulation of railroads in Texas, V, 96.

Fat Stock Show, established at Fort Worth, V. 173-174.

Fayette county, land titles issued to early settlers, I, 163.

Federalist political party in Mexico, I, 146; II, 181.

"Fence-cutting war," V, 94-95, 171.

Ferdinand VII, is restored to Spanish throne, I, 10; Mexican revolution, 100, 102; dethroned by the French, 141.

Ferguson, Dr., attends wounded after battle of Coleta, III, 253.

Ferguson, James E., governor of Texas, V, 104; impeachment of, 105.

Fernández, Francisco V., governor of Tamaulipas, revolt under, II, 14.

Field, Dr. J. E., attends wounded after battle of Coleta, III. 252; life spared at Goliad massacre, 259.

Fields, Richard, chief of Cherokee Indians, treaty with Edwards, I, 243; Austin's appeal to, 273.

Filisola, Gen. Vicente, granted colonization contract, I, 187; ordered to send troops to Texas, II, 72, 73; confers with Stephen Austin at Matamoros, 83-85; forwards document to national government, 85; fails to occupy Texas, 129; urges Santa Anna to concentrate forces in Texas, III, 270; Santa Anna leaves in charge of army on Colorado, 287; agrees to carry out terms of treaty with Texans in reply to Santa Anna's order, 332; intrigues with Indians and Mexicans in Texas against Anglo-Americans, IV, 53.

Fillmore, succeeds Taylor as president of U. S., adopts conciliatory attitude toward Texas, IV, 227.

Fisher, George, dismissed as secretary of ayuntamiento, I, 369; member of committee to plan independence celebration, 370; collector of revenue at Galveston, II, 10.

Fisher, John, signs declaration of independence of Texas, III, 223.

Fisher, S. Rhoads, signs declaration of independence of Texas, III, 224; member of committee to draft constitution at Washington convention, 224; secretary of navy in Houston's cabinet, 374.

Fisher, William S., elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, II, 403; named on committee at San Felipe consultation to draw up statement of causes for war, 413; reprepresentative at first congress of Texas republic, 364; issues order requesting tribute be paid Austin, 407.

Fisher, Col. W. S., commands Mier expedition, IV, 99; forces surrender to Ampudia, 99,

Flanagan, J. W., U. S. Senator from Texas, V. 62.

Flores, Gaspar, appointed successor to Baron de Bastrop, I, 164; issues land titles in Austin's colonies, 288, 289; member of committee to draw up resolutions at indignation meeting in San Antonio, III, 136.

Flores, Manuel, Filisola's agent at Matamoros, IV, 53; capture of, 54.

Florida, ceded to United States, I, 9.

Flournoy, George M., leads procession at demonstration following adoption of secession ordinance at Austin convention, IV, 338; serves on committee to draft declaration of causes for secession, at Austin convention, 339.

Fondren, Walter, V, 186.

Fontainebleau, treaty of, I, 4.

Forbes, John, named member of vigilance and correspondence committee at Nacogdoches meeting, II, 247; makes treaties with Cherokees, IV, 60.

Forsyth, John, brother-in-law of H. Meigs, II, 141, 143; Austin's appeal to, as member of Jackson's cabinet, III, 278, e. s.; secretary of state in Jackson's cabinet, Wharton interviews in regard to recognition of Texas republic, 385-386; secretary of state in Van Buren's cabinet, replies to Mexico's protest against recognition of Texas by U. S., IV, 2; annexation refused in reply to Hunt's proposal, 11-15.

Fort Bend county, land titles issued to early settlers, I, 163.

Fort St. Louis, settlement of, I, 20; burned, 23.

Fort Worth, city of, sketch of, V, 235-238. Foscue, F. F., elected delegate to national Democratic convention, IV, 291.

Foster, Colonel B., renders aid to Nacogdoches committee, I, 264.

Foster, John R., member of Austin's first municipal electoral assembly, L. 293.

Foster, L. L., named on state railroad commission, V, 98.

"Four Hundred League," law enacted by legislature of Coahuila and Texas, II, 193; annulled by congress, 200.

Fowl, Sergt. Thomas P., loses life in battle of San Jacinto, III, 317.

Fowler, S. L., V. 195.

Fowler, Mrs. S. L., V, 195.

Foye, Frederick, represents Tenaha at first convention of colonists in Texas, II, 48.

Franklin, Benjamin, proposes plan for unity of British colonies, I, 4.

Franklin, Benjamin C., elected judge of Second district of the republic of Texas, IV, 43.

Franks, Lieutenant-Colonel, commands artillery company at battle of San Antonio, III, 53; praised by Johnson in report on battle of San Antonio, III, 61.

Frazier, Captain, brings to Goliad news of disaster at Refugio, III, 241-242.

Fredonian war, I, 211; 267-286.

Fredonia, republic of, proposed formation of by Edwards brothers, I, 243.

Fredericksburg, town of, sketch of, V, 325.

Freeman, Benjamin, meeting held at house of, to petition general government to modify tariff laws, I, 207.

Fulcher, I, 189.

Fuqua, Benjamin, elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, II, 403.

GAGSLEY, THOMAS P., signs letter inviting Austin to Gonzales, 11, 352.

Gaines, Captain, officer of Magee's expedition, I, 42.

Gaines, James, officer of Magee's expedition, I, 42; establishes ferry on Sabine river, I, 222, 223; attempts to deal with "border ruffians," I, 225; escapes after failure to capture Nacogdoches, 276; serves on committee to draft declaration of independence at Washington convention, III, 218; signs declaration of independence of Texas, 224; member of committee to draft constitution at Washington convention, 224.

Gaines, Gen. Edmund P., American army under, ordered to Louisiana-Texas border, III, 227; activities on American border, 281, e. s.; dispatches messenger with news of victory at San Jacinto to Jackson, 324; commends Houston for condemning plan to execute Santa Anna, 353.

Gaines, faction, political party in Edwards colony, I, 233.

Gainesville, town of, sketch of, V, 282-283.

Galán, Roberto, acting alcalde at Goliad, complains of Dimmitt's treatment of Mexicans at Goliad, in letter to Austin, III, 6; Austin notifies of removal of Dimmitt, 10.

Gallaber, Dr., member of committee on resolutions at San Jacinto meeting, II, 258.

Gallatin, Albert, wounded in battle of San Jacinto, III, 317.

Galveston county, land titles issued to early settlers, I, 163.

Galveston, city of, sketch of, V, 241-245.

Galveston, captured in Civil war by Federalists, recaptured by Confederates, IV, 357-359.

Galvez, Don Bernardo de, campaign against British, I, 6; visits Galveztown, 54.

Gant, W. W., representative in first congress of Texas republic, III, 364.

Gaona, General, commands First infantry brigade of Mexican army, III, 139; commands Mexican army at Bastrop, 267, 270; ordered to form junction with Ramírez y Sesma, 270; army loses way, 288.

Garcia, Carlos, Mexican minister of relations, Austin calls upon, II, 89.

García, Lucian, governor of Texas, I, 134.

Garret, Jacob, represents Ayish Bayou at first convention of colonists in Texas, II, 48; reflects attitude of conservative element in resolution recommending compromise between Texas and Mexico, 396; elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, 403.

Garrison, William Lloyd, editor of "The Genius of Universal Emancipation," I, 342.

Garza, Antonio, Mexican officer captured at Goliad, II, 362.

Garza, Don Felipe de la, commandant of eastern internal provinces of Mexico, San Felipe de Austin named for, I, 134, 135.

Garza, Don Refugio de la, Santa Anna orders to attend wounded at battle of Alamo, III, 210.

Gasper, W., member of Stephen F. Austin's expedition to Texas, I, 77.

Gates, John W., introduces barbed wire fences into Texas, V, 169-170.

Gates, Samuel, elected captain of Brazos colony militia, I, 130.

Gazette, The Texas, first newspaper in Texas colonies, I, 194.

Gazley, Thomas J., signs declaration of independence of Texas, III, 223.

Gentry, A. M., member of committee on resolutions at San Jacinto convention, IV, 293; named on committee of correspondence at San Jacnito convention, 296; member of caucus to draw up letter requesting Throckmorton to become candidate for governor, V, 11.

George III, King of England, death of, I, 9. Georgetown, town of, sketch of, V, 325-326.

"Georgia Battalion," arrives at Velasco, III, 95; sails for Copano under Fannin, 117.

Geraghty, John, representative in first congress of Texas republic, III, 364.

Gibson, Fenton W., named vice-president at San Jacinto convention, IV, 293.

Gill, Lieutenant, commands detachment in battle of San Antonio, III, 59.

Gilmore's band, rescued by Texas regiment when captured in Spanish-American war, V. 104.

Goheen, Captain, commands company at battle of Concepción, II, 384.

Goliad, beginning of town, I, 31; delegates to first convention of colonists at, II, 57; Texans capture guard and supplies at, 347-349; massacre, III, 242-265; slain martyrs paid tribute by army, 338.

"Goliad declaration of independence," signed, III, 88.

Gonzales, town of, headquarters of De Witt's colony, I, 190, 191; conservative declaration made at, meeting held at, II, 238-239; "Lexington of Texas," first clash between Texans and Mexicans at, 333, 337; town of, sketch of, V, 321.

Gonzales, José, comes to Texas as revenue collector, II, 204; abandons attempt to en-

force revenue laws, 208; Colonel, commands force to Goliad accompanied by Viesca, III, 5, 6; Austin sends communication to, to join army at San Antonio, 10; services accepted by council, instructed to report to Burleson, 37.

Goodnight, Charles, establishes cattle ranch in North Texas, V, 168-169.

"Goodnight trail," description of, V, 163-164.

Goodrich, Benjamin Briggs, signs declaration of independence of Texas, III, 224.

Goose Creek, oil field opened, V, 191.

Gordon, W. K., drills first oil well in Ranger field, V. 194.

Gorman, town of, sketch of, V, 320.

Gorostiza, Manuel Eduardo de, Mexican minister to U. S., issues pamphlet criticising Jackson administration with respect to troops on Texas border, III, 383.

Graham, town of, sketch of, V, 329-330.

Graham, Malcolm D., serves on committee to draft declaration of causes for secession at Austin convention, IV, 339.

Graham, William, cited for bravery by Johnson at battle of San Antonio, III, 59.

Grange, The Texas, demands regulation of railroads in Texas, V, 96.

Granger, Gen. Gordon, Federal commander of Texas after fall of Confederacy, issues proclamation freeing slaves, IV, 365.

Grant, Dr. James, captured with Viesca, rescue of, II, 201; helps plan attack on San Antonio, III, 12; Colonel, aids Johnson in command of division of army at battle of San Antonio, 53; praised by Johnson in report on battle of San Antonio, 61; suggests move against Matamoros to Austin, 94; Johnson orders to lead expedition against Matamoros, 98; marches to Goliad and Refugio, 117; Houston expresses opinion of, 124, 125; moves troops with Johnson to San Patricio, 135; leads expedition from San Patricio to find horses, 172.

Grant, Gen. U. S., made commander in chief of Union forces, IV, 363; elected president of United States, proposes that question of disfranchising of Confederate soldiers in Virginia and Mississippi be submitted to people, V, 59; postpones election in Texas, 60; approves act readmitting Texas to Union, 62; reelected president of U. S., 78; declines to interfere in Texas election, 83, 85 86; orders military government for Texas in the event of bloodshed at capital, 85.

"Grass fight," III, 47, 48.

Grayson, Peter W., volunteers to take memorials for Austin's release to Mexico, II, 141; report written for Lamar, 147-150; secures Austin's release on bail, 147-150; Austin gives reasons for war proclamation in letter to, 325-327; signs letter inviting Austin to Gonzales, 352; elected president of "board of war," at Gonzales, 353; sends official notification of election as commander in chief of army to Austin, 359; appointed aide-de-camp on Austin's staff, 360; signs treaties with Santa Anna at Ve-

lasco, III, 329, 330; member of Texas commission to Washington, 366.

Greeley, Horace, Democrats nominate for president of U. S., carries Texas in election, V, 78.

Green, John A., made secretary of state in Throckmorton's cabinet, V, 17.

Green, T. Jefferson, nominal commander of Ocean, forbids Invincible to sail, seizes Santa Anna, III, 335-336; representative in first congress of Texas republic, 364; escapes with companions from Mexico, IV, 101.

Green, Major-General Tom, serves in Civil war, IV, 348; Colonel, wins distinction at recapture of Galveston, 358.

Greenville, town of, sketch of, V, 269-270.

Greenwood, J. M., named vice-president at San Jacinto convention, IV, 293.

Greer, E., elected delegate to national Democratic convention, IV, 291.

Greer, John A., succeeds Ochiltree as secretary of treasury of Jones's cabinet, IV. 191.

Green John named delegate to Birmingh

Gregg, John, named delegate to Birmingham convention, IV, 339.

Griffin, Gen. Charles, placed in command of Texas during part of reconstruction period, V, 43; requests cooperation of Throckmorton in making up list of registrars in Texas,

V, 46-47; Sheridan names report of, as excuse for removal of Throckmorton, 50.

Grimes, Jesse, elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, II, 403; chosen member of general council of Texas, 420; signs declaration of independence of Texas, III, 224; member of committee to draft constitution at Washington convention, 224; senator in first congress of Texas republic, 364; named elector for western congressional district at San Jacinto convention, IV, 296.

Grimes county, land titles issued to early settlers, I, 163.

Gritten, Edward, reports conditions in Texas to Ugartechea, II, 249, 250; confers with members of joint committee of Columbia and San Felipe, named commissioner to wait upon Cos, 252; sends Miller's letter to Cos, 253; failure of mission of, 267-271; writes Martin of expected arrival of troops under Cos, 321; Smith refuses to issue commission to, III, 98.

Groce, Jared E., receives special grant of land, I, 164; commands expedition against Karankawa Indians. 166; builds first cotton gin in Texas, 193; only wealthy colonist in Texas, 324; chief slaveholder in Texas, 332; represents Viesca at first convention of colonists in Texas, II, 47; votes against resolution asking for separate statehood for Texas, 51; believes Texas needs Houston, 279; founds cotton industry in Texas, V, 118.

Gross, J. J., nominated for commissioner of the land office of Texas at Democratic convention, V, 81.

Guadalupe, Nuestra Señora de la, Mission of, I. 27. Guadalupe Hidalgo, treaty of, signed, IV, 215: text of, 368, e. s.

Guerly, Davis, made adjutant-general of Texas, V. 17.

Guerrero, Gen. Vicente, candidate for president of Mexico in election of 1828, I, 303, 304; secretary of war in Victoria's cabinet, 305; inauguration of, 306; invested with extraordinary powers by congress, 329; signs edict abolishing slavery, 330; exempts Texas from decree abolishing slavery, 336; driven from office by Bustamante, 336-337; execution of, 370.

Guerrier, Colonel, spares lives of Texans at Goliad massacre, III, 259.

Guerro, Colonel José Miriano, commandant at Matamoros, compact with Mexía, II, 32.

Gulf Pipe Line Company, V, 198.

Gulf Refining Company, organized, V, 185.

Gutiérres, Bernardo, plans invasion of Mexico through Texas, joins Magee, is deposed by Americans, I, 41-44.

Gutiérrez, J., letter to Van Buren, II, 138.

HADLY, JOSHUA, tepresents Viesca at first convention of colonists in Texas, II, 47.

Hale, Lieut. J. C., loses life in battle of San Jacinto, III, 317.

Hall, Edward, reports aid from New Orleans, II, 399; appointed special agent of government in United States, 417.

Hall, G. B., member of "The Lodge of Union," I, 302.
Hall, W. D. C., first lieutenant of company formed to rescue Bradburn's prisoners, II, 17; member of committee to prepare resolutions at Columbia convention, 220; elected chairman of second Columbia convention, 220; named member of vigilance committee at Columbia convention, 223; signs call for meeting of Columbia citizens, 254; member of committee of safety and correspondence at Columbia meeting of August 15, 287; Austin's letter to, 323,324; signs appeal for volunteers to go to Gonzales, 338; appointed by Austin adjutant and inspector-general of staff, 359-360; elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, 403.

Hall, Capt. William S., heads committee to Nacogdoches, I, 252, 253; appointed "con-tractor of the army of the people," II, 369.

Hamilton, Robert, signs declaration of independence of Texas, III, 224; member of committee to draft constitution at Washington convention, 224.

Hamilton, Gen. James, succeeds Henderson as foreign minister, IV, 41; writes of recognition of Texas independence by England, 41; attempts to negotiate loan for republic, 50.

Hamilton, A. J., provisional governor of Texas following fall of Confederacy, IV, 365-366: appointed provisional governor of Texas, qualifications for post, calls for registration of voters in Texas, calls election of delegates to convention at Austin, V, 2-3; expresses disappointment over lack of interest shown in election, urges that fran-

chises be extended to all, regardless of race, but restricted to certain qualifications, in message to Austin convention, 5-7; recognizes validity of all laws passed since secession not in conflict with constitution of U. S., 52; leader of moderate faction of radicals in Texas, 53; offers substitute for ex-Confederate report disfranchising diers at Austin convention, substitute adopted, Hamilton praised by Houston Telegraph, 56-57; nominated by moderates for governor of Texas, 60-62; leads movement aganist Davis administration, 73; chairman of committee to consider and report business at taxpayers' convention held at

Hamilton, M. C., leads "Ab Initios," V, 53; elected U. S. senator from Texas, 62; serve on committee "to consider and report bush at taxpayers' convention at Austin,

Hammeken, George L., plans escape of Austin from prison, II, 144-147.

Hancock, John, signs address to defeat secession ordinance, IV, 339; member of caucus to draw up letter requesting Throckmorton to become candidate for governor, V, 10.

Hancock, Gen. W. S., succeeds Sheridan as military commander of Fifth district, countermands "secret orders" of Sheridan, strengthens civil authorities, issues "General military order No. 40," orders election to decide upon convention to draft new constitution, superseded by Reynolds, V, 51-52 52.

Handy, R. E., Houston sends on scouting party toward San Antonio, III, 235-236.

Hanks, Wyatt, represents Ayish Bayou convention of colonists in Texas, II, 48; elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, 403; named on committee at San Felipe consultation to draw up statement of causes for war, 413; chosen member of general council of Texas, 420; signs resolution paying tribute to Austin, III, 81.

Hantz, Truman, represents Nacogdoches at first convention of colonists in Texas, II, 48.

Hardeman, Baily, serves on committee to draft declaration of independence at Washington convention, III, 218; member of committee convention, 111, 218; member of committee to draft constitution at Washington convention, 224; signs declaration of independence of Texas, 224; chosen first secretary of Texas republic, 227; signs treaties with Santa Anna at Velasco, 329-330; appointed to accompany Santa Anna to Mexico as commissioner for Texas government, 334. ernment, 334.

Hardeman, Col. William P., wins distinction at recapture of Galveston by Confederates, IV, 358.

rdin, A. B., sig dence, III, 223. Hardin, A. signs declaration of indepen-

Hare, Col, Luther R., commander Texas regiment in Spanish-American war, V, 104.

Harris, DeWitt Clinton, sends report of Anáhuac incident to San Felipe, II, 210.

Harris, John W., appointed attorney general of state of Texas, IV, 209; named on committee of correspondence at San Jacinto

convention, IV, 296; signs communication to Houston notifying him of nomination for president of U. S., 296.

Harris, Wm. P., elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, II, 403; chosen member of general council of Texas, 420; signs resolution paying tribute to Austin, III, 81.

Harris county, land titles issued to early settlers, I, 163.

Harrisburg, government of Texas removed to, III, 227; burned by Santa Anna, 288-289.

Harrison, Jonas, represents Tenaha at first convention of colonists in Texas, II, 48.

Harrison, William Henry, elected president of U. S., death of, IV, 103.

Hart, M. D., signs address to defeat secession ordinance, IV, 339.

Harwood, A., member of caucus to draw up letter requesting Throckmorton to become candidate for governor of Texas, V, 11.

Hastings, Frank S., pays tribute to longhorns in "A Ranchman's Recollections," V, 174.

Hastings, Thomas, represents Nacogdoches at first convention of colonists in Texas, II, 48.

Hawkins, Joseph, friendship with Stephen F. Austin, interest in Texas project, I, 74; helps finance Austin's expedition, voyage of the Lively, 95; death of, 108.

Hayes, J. C., serves in war between Mexico and U. S., IV, 215.

Hayes, Rutherford B., becomes president of United States, V, 88.

Haynes, J. L., signs address to defeat secession ordinance, IV, 339.

Head, E. G., member of committee to prepare resolutions at Columbia convention, II, 221.

Hearne, town of, sketch of, V, 327.

Hebert, Brig. Gen. P. O., Confederate military commandant of Texas, places state under martial law, prohibits unauthorized exportation of cotton, people resent measures of, IV, 352-353.

Heir, Absalom, represents Sabine at first convention of colonists in Texas, II, 48.

Helium, gas, Texas product, V, 206.

Hemphill, John, Henderson appoints as chief justice of supreme court of state of Texas, IV, 209; elected U. S. senator from Texas, 253; named delegate to Birmingham convention, 339.

Hempstead, town of, sketch of, V, 330.

Henderson, J. Pinckney, arrives at Velasco on Ocean, III, 335; attorney general in Houston's cabinet, 374; sent to England and France to negotiate recognition of powers, efforts to secure recognition, writes Jones of recognition of Texas independence by France, IV, 37-40; returns to Texas, 41; names chief obstacles to recognition of Texas by England in letter to Jones, 113; advises against opening negotiations for annexation with U. S., in letter to Jones, 133-134; named special commissioner to cooperate with Van Zandt in Washington, 142-143; arrives in Washington, annexation treaty signed, 147-148; Houston instructs to return from

Washington, 180; elected first governor of state of Texas, 207; organizes state government, 209; serves as major in Mexican war, 214; protests occupation of Santa Fe by American forces, 218-219; elected U. S. senator from Texas, 253; death of, 259.

Henderson, J. W., member of caucus to draw up letter requesting Throckmorton to become candidate for governor, V, 11.

Henrietta, town of, sketch of, V, 328.

Henry, J. E., signs address to defeat secession ordinance, IV, 339.

Hensley, William R., represents Alfred at first convention of colonists in Texas, II, 47.

Herbert, C. C., member of caucus to draw up letter requesting Throckmorton to become candidate for governor of Texas, V, 11; elected U. S. congressman from Texas, 17.

Hernández, Gil, stationed at Anáhuac as deputy revenue collector, II, 204; abandons attempt to enforce revenue laws, 208.

Herrera, General, agreement with General Wilkinson, creation of "neutral ground," I, 38; acts as president ad interim of Mexico, IV, 201; approves act of Mexican congress authorizing recognition of independence of Texas, 202.

Hewetson and Power, granted colonization contract, I, 186.

Hewitson, Dr. James, accompanies Stephen F. Austin to Natchitoches, I, 76.

Hidalgo, Father Francisco, letters to Cadillac, I, 25, 26.

Hidalgo, Miguel, revolt under, I, 40, 41.

Hill, F. A., member of caucus to draw up letter requesting Throckmorton to become candidate for governor of Texas, V, 11.

Hill, George W., secretary of war and navy in Jones's cabinet, IV, 191.

Hill, Isaac L., presides at San Jacinto convention, IV, 293.

Hill, W. G., signs call for meeting of Columbia citizens, II, 254.

Hill, William H., representative in first congress of Texas republic, III, 364.

Hillsboro, town of, sketch of, V, 287-288.

Hobby, William Pettus, governor of Texas, V, 105.

Hockley, Col. George W., commands artillery at battle of San Jacinto, III, 295, e. s.; takes Santa Anna to Houston, 302; cited for bravery at San Jacinto by Rusk in report to Burnet, 310; escorts Santa Anna to U. S., 382; named commissioner to negotiate with Woll on Rio Grande, IV, 132; writes Jones of Elliott's displeasure over annexation negotiations, 181.

Hodge, Alexander, member of Austin's first municipal electoral assembly, I, 292.

Hodge, James, elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, II, 403.

Hodge, John, member of committee of safety and correspondence at Columbia meeting of August 15, II, 288.

Hoffman, —, elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, II, 403.

Hogg, James Stephen, attorney general of Texas, conducts prosecutions against railroads, V, 96; reelected, 97; nominated for governor at Democratic convention, 98; elected governor of Texas, amendment providing for state railroad commission adopted, 98; advocates stock and bond law for control of issuance of securities by railroads, 99; nominated for reelection by Democratic faction, 100; platform favors existing railroad commission law, stock and bond law, defends "unsettling of land titles," 101-102; reelected governor of Texas, 103.

Hollingsworth, O. L., nominated for superintendent of public instruction of Texas at Democratic convention, V, 81.

Holman, W. W., representative in first congress of the republic of Texas, III, 364.

Holmes, Thomas, elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, II, 403.

Holstein, Henry, member of Stephen F. Austin's expedition, I, 77; passenger of Lively, 118.

Holt, Benjamin, represents Sabine at first convention of colonists in Texas, II, 48.

Holzinger, Lieutenant-Colonel, superintends receiving of arms when Fannin surrenders near Goliad, III, 252; version of agreement between Fannin and Urrea after battle of Coleta, 253-254.

"Homestead Law," passed, IV, 74-76.

Honey Grove, town of, sketch of, V, 328.

Hood, J. S., elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, II, 403.

Hood, Lieut.-Gen. John B., serves in Civil war, IV, 349.

Hooper, Richard, representative in first congress of Texas republic, III, 364.

Horton, Albert C., senator in first congress of Texas republic, III, 364; commissioner to select and purchase site for Texas capital, IV, 69; elected first lieutenant-governor of Texas, 207.

Horton, Alexander, elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, II, 403.

Horton, Colonel, leads skirmish with Mexicans near Goliad, III, 242-244; leads scouting expedition sent out by Fannin, 245; goes to Victoria, escape of men, 255.

Hough, Emerson, describes "cattle drives in western United States" in novel, North of Thirty-Six, V,158-160.

House, Col. E. M., prominent diplomat in World War, V, 110.

Houston, town of founded, becomes temporary capital of Texas, IV, 44-45; city of, sketch of, V, 232-235.

Houston, Almanzon, elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, II, 403; named on committee at San Felipe consultation to draw up statement of causes for war, 413; named on committee at San Felipe consultation to draw up plan for provisional government, 416; chosen member of general council of Texas, 420.

Houston, Sam, resigns as governor of Tennessee, goes to live among Cherokee Indians, Jackson's letter to, telling of rumor of ille-

gal conquest of Texas by, I, 371-373; gal conquest of lexas by, 1, 3/1-3/3; comes to Texas with commission from U. S. war department, II, 62; trips to Washington, affray with Stanberry, trial, becomes popular idol, commissioner to visit Texas, 62, 64; letter from Van Fossen, letter to Jackson, 65-67; elected delegate to convention of colonists, 71; made chairman of committee to draw up constitution at second committee to draw up constitution at second convention of colonists in Texas, 77, defends clause of constitution prohibiting banks, 78; retires for two years, 82; returns to Texas, early career, marriage, life among Indians, friendship with Jackson, meets Johnson and Baker in Nacogdoches, 272-280; de-livers address at meeting at Teal's Tavern, 296; named member of committee to treat with Indians at Teal's Tavern meeting, 297; made commander in chief of department by San Augustine committee, 343-344; issues call for volunteers, 344-345; leaves San Felipe to join army, 370; disapproves of immediate campaign against San Antonio, 375; delivers address to army, 377; returns to San Felipe to attend consultation, 379; elected to consultation at San Felipe, 403; named on committee at San Felipe to draw up statement of causes for war, 413; establishes right to leadership through activities at San Felipe consultation, 414; elected com-San Felipe consultation, 414; elected commander in chief of regular army at San Felipe consultation, 420; complains of delay in completing organization of regular army in letter to Smith, III, 71; issues proclamation inviting recruits, 72-76; believes resolution to concentrate all forces on frontier to be impractical, 79; orders Bowie to organize company, and proceed to Matamoros, 91. company and proceed to Matamoros, 91, 92; Smith orders to take command of troops, 103; goes to Refugio, learns of council's action from Johnson, returns to headquarters, 117-118; describes confusion of army in report to Smith, 118-134; orders fortifications of San Antonio demolished, 135; opposes move to adjourn convention and go to relief of Alamo, 218; signs declaration of independence of Texas, 224; named member of committee to draft constitution at Washington convention, 224; Smith grants furlough to, negotiates with Indians, 228; issues proclamation announcing declaration of independence and calling for reinforcements, reelected commander in chief of army, 229-230; provided with formal orders to take command, 231; goes to Gonzales, learns of fall of Alamo, orders Fannin to evacuate Goliad, 231-235; organizes volunteers at Gonzales, 235, e. s.; retreats to Burnam's crossing on Colorado, to Beason's Ferry, 267; retreats to Brazos, men dissatisfied with move, 269; camps at Groce's Ferry, rebuked by Burnet for retreating, 270-271; crosses Brazos, marches to Harrisburg, addresses army, 289-291; marches to Buffalo Bayou, takes position in oak grove, artillery engages in skirmish with enemy, 292-294; at battle of San Jacinto, 295, e. s.; wounded in battle of San Jacinto, 299; Rusk commends for bravery in report to Burnet, 308; official report of battle of San Jacinto to Burnet, 310-317; sent to New Orleans for operation, 326; forwards Santa Anna's letter to Jackson, 347-348; expresses disap-

proval of plan to execute Santa Anna in letter to Rusk, 351-353; becomes candi-date for first president of Texas republic, 361; elected first president of Texas republic, 363; visits Santa Anna, 366; inauguration of, inaugural address, 367-372; names cabinet, 373-374; proposes that Santa Anna be sent home via Washington, 375; congress opposes proposal to release Santa Anna, 378-382; Jackson's friendship for, 405-406; requests that tribute be paid Aus-407; urges Jones to accept post at Washington, agrees to withdraw annexation proposal, IV, 29; financial problems of administration, 47-51; attitude toward Indians, 51; makes treaties with Cherokees, 60; introduces bill recovering Cherokees had 60; introduces bill, reserving Cherokee lands from settlement, into Texas congress, 64; restores policy of reconciliation with Indians, 65-67; reelected president of Texas republic, inauguration of, 91; reverses policies of Lamar, 91-92; vetoes bill extending boundaries of Texas, 93; prepares to meet Mexican invaders, 94, e. s.; attempts to move capital to Houston, 95; recommends war with Mexico in message to congress, 96; issues call for volunteers, orders Som-Mexico, 101-102; induces Elliot to attempt to secure an armistice with Mexico through British minister to Mexico, 129; believes time not ripe for opening negotia-tions for annexation with U. S., 133; dis-cusses difficulties of annexation question in special message to congress, 142; consents to negotiation for annexation with U. S., 143: holds in abeyance armistice signed by Texan and Mexican commissioners, pending result of annexation negotiations, 148; instructs Henderson and Van Zandt not to press annexation question further, 179; in-structs Henderson to return home, 180; directs Jones to instruct Smith to complete arrangement for settlement of Mexican difficulties, in memorandum, 184; elected U. S. senator from Texas, 209; defends right of Texas to Santa Fe in U. S. senate, 223-224; vigorously opposes Kansas-Nebraska 224; vigorously opposes Kansas-Nebraska bill, 242-246; denounced by party for opposition to Kansas-Nebraska bill, 246-247; defeated in election for governor of Texas, 251; opposes secession, 257, 258, 260; elected governor of Texas, 258-259; makes inaugural address to people, 259-260; message to legislature, 260-261; transmits South Carolina resolutions to Texas legislature, message to legislature condemning the right of secession, 265-283; nominated for presidency of U. S.; 296-297; mentioned for president of U. S. at Constitutional Union convention at Baltimore, 297; withdraws from race for president in favor of Bell, 299; address in defense of the Union, 303-326; hopes for convention suggested by Reagan as alternative to secession, 329; convenes legislature, calls election of delegates for southern convention, authorizes state convention, 330; condemns secession in message to legislature, 330-333; given ovation at Austin convention of secessionists, 336; declines to interfere with activities of people, refuses to take oath of allegiance to Confederacy, office declared vacant, declines

assistance of Federal government to sustain him in office, retires to home at Huntsville, death of, 341-343.

Howland, sent to San Miguel to announce approach of Santa Fe expedition, IV, 85-86; arrest of, 87; escape and death of, 87.

Hoxey, Dr. Asa, Austin sends back to colony to get ammunition, II, 373; elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, 403; named on committee at San Felipe consultation to draw up plan for provisional government, 416.

Hubbard, Richard B., elected delegate to national Democratic convention, IV, 291; presides at Democratic convention at Austin, V, 80; nominated for lieutenant-governor of Texas at Democratic convention.

81; elected lieutenant-governor of Texas, 85; reelected lieutenant-governor of Texas, 88; becomes governor of Texas, 90; breaks up outlaw bands in Texas, 90.

Hughes, Christopher, friendship with Anson Jones, Jones gives letter and to on eve of departure for Europe, IV. 31; transmits memorandum to Palmerston, sends Palmerston's reply to Jones, 34-37; works for Texas' interests in France, 37; Jones declares annexation to be policy for Texas in letter to, 111.

Hughes, Howard H., V. 186.

Hughes, Thomas P., votes against secession ordinance at Austin convention, IV, 336.

Huff, George, I, 193.

Hulen, Capt. John A., distinguishes himself in rescue of Gilmore's band in Spanish-American war, V, 105.

Humble Oil Company, organized, V, 185.

Humble, Pipe Line Company, organized, V 198.

Humble, oil field opened, V, 185.

Humble, town of, sketch of, V, 324-325. Humphreys Pure Oil Pipe Line Company, V. 199.

Hunt, Memucan, arrives at Velasco on Ocean, III, 335; sent to reinforce Wharton at Washington, 399; efforts to secure recognition of Texas' independence, 401; sends final appeal to Jackson for recognition of Texas, 402; formal recognition as minister to U. S. delayed, IV, 1-2; formally received as minister from Texas, sets forth annexation proposal, 3-10; replies to Forsyth's communication refusing annexation of Texas, 17-23; relieved of post at Washington, 29; secretary of navy in Lamar's cabinet, 56.

Hunter, John Dunn, chief of Cherokee Indians, treaty with Edwards, I, 243; Austin sends letter to, 260-262; "representative of twenty-three tribes" of Indians, 272; ignored by Austin, 273; shot by Indians, 277.

Huntsville, town of, sketch of, V, 304.

Hurt, J. M., member of caucus to draw up letter requesting Throckmorton to become candidate for governor, V, 11.

Huston, General Felix, succeeds Rusk as commander in chief of Texas army, III, 374; force under, defeats Comanche Indians, IV. 65. Hutchinson, Anderson, made prisoner forces under Woll at San Autonio, IV, 97.

Hyde, A. C., criticises Lamar's action in sending out Santa Fe expedition in letter to Jones, IV, 83-84; named vice-president at San Jacinto convention, 293.

INDEPENDENCE, schooner, purchased for Texas navy, III, 143.

Independence of Texas, formal declaration of, at Washington convention, III, 218-227.

Ingram, Allen, wounded in battle of San Jacinto, III, 317.

Ingram, Ira, I, 194; candidate for alcalde in first constitutional election in Austin's colony, 292; officer of "The Lodge of Union," 302; represents Mina at first convention of colonists in Texas, II, 47; representative in first congress of Texas republic, 111, 364.

Ingram, Seth, I, 194.

Invincible, schooner, purchased for Texas navy, III, 143; Santa Anna to sail on for Mexico, III, 335.

Ireland, John, serves on committee "to consider and report business" at taxpayers' convention at Austin, V, 75; governor of Texas, 93.

Irion, Dr. Robert, senator in first congress of Texas republic, III, 364; secretary of state of Texas, writes Hunt of change of sentiment in Texas regarding annexation, IV, 25.

Issacs, Elijah, represents Snow River at first convention of colonists in Texas, II, 48.

Iturbide, Augustin de, signs treaty with O'Donojú, is hailed as liberator of Mexican nation, I, 93, 94; forms coalition with rebels, publishes "Plan of Iguala," subsequent rise to power, 102-103; 104; proclaimed emperor, 106; fall and banishment of, 111-113.

JACK, PATRICK C., arrested and imprisoned by Bradburn, II, 16; represents Liberty in first convention of colonists in Texas, 48; signs letter inviting Austin to Gonzales, 362; named quartermaster general on Austin's staff, 360.

Jack, Spencer H., volunteers to take memorials for Austin's release to Mexico, II, 141; secures Austin's release on bail, 147-150.

Jack, William H., demands transfer of Bradburn's prisoners to civil authorities, II, 16, 17; member of central committee, reply to Smith's address, 161; named member of vigilance committee at Columbia convention, 223; member of committee of safety and correspondence at Columbia meeting of August 15, 288; signs appeal for volunteers to go to Gonzales, 338; appointed brigadeinspector of Texas army at Gonzales, 360.

Jackson county, land titles issued to early settlers, I, 163.

Jackson, Andrew, invades Florida, I, 9; defeated by Adams in presidential election, 198; president of United States, proposes purchase of Texas, 340-347; attitude toward relationship of Texas and Mexico, 346; letter to Sam Houston, 372, 373; assailed by political enemies through Houston, II, 63; letter from Houston, 65-67; letter from Butler, instructs Butler to close negotiation for mortgage on Texas, misunderstanding of situation in Texas, 67-69; abandons hope of purchasing Texas, reprimands Butler for suggesting bribery, 142-143; considers declaration of independence of Texas "a rash and premature act," III, 9, 10; Austin's appeal to, 278, e. s.; attitude toward war in Texas, 280-281; learns of victory at San Jacinto, 324-325; refuses to interfere in Mexican internal affairs in reply to Santa Anna's letter, 354; disapproves of project to try Santa Anna, in letter to Houston, 356-357; asks Mexican government to disavow Gorostiza's act in issuing pamphlets, 383-384; sends special message to congress on subject of recognition of Texas, 386-393; Santa Anna calls upon, receives unfavorably Santa Anna's proposal to sell Texas to U. S., mentions cession of Northern California, 395; transmits Austin's letter to committee on foreign relations, 398; recognizes independence of Texas; appoints chargé d'affaires to republic, message to senate, 403-404; drinks health of new republic, friendship for Houston, 405-406; Houston quotes in speech against secession, IV, 278-280.

Jackson, Humphrey, elected second regidor of Austin's colony, I, 292; member of Austin's first municipal electoral assembly, 292.

Jacksonville, town of, sketch of, V, 312.

Jalisco, state of, revolt of, II, 14, 15.

James, W. F., wounded in battle of San Jacinto, III, 317.

James Brothers, outlaws, V, 90.

Jameson, Green B., member of committee to draw up resolutions at indignation meeting in San Antonio, III, 136.

Jamieson, Green B., member of Austin's first municipal electoral assembly, I, 292. Jarero, leads force against Azcarate, II, 45.

Jefferson, Thomas, proposes to buy New Orleans, I, 8; Houston quotes in speech against secession, IV, 274-275.

Jefferson, town of, sketch of, V, 329.

Jenning's camp, I, 125, 126.

John Motley, schooner, I, 125.

Johnson, A. E. C., elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, II, 403.

Johnson, Andrew, becomes president of U. S. at death of Lincoln, devises plan of reconstruction, IV, 365; program for reconstruction of seceded states, V, 1, e. s.; controversy with radical Unionists in congress, 9, 14, 15; issues proclamation declaring insurrection ended, 15; denounced as enemy of Union, 18.

Johnson, Francis W., civil engineer, comes to Texas, I, 311; quotations from, 312, 313; captain of company to rescue Bradburn's prisoners, II, 17; interviews Piedras, 26; represents San Felipe de Austin at first convention of colonists in Texas, 47; elected secretary of convention, 50; named chairman

of central committee of colonists at first convention in Texas, 57; sends account of convention proceedings to ayuntamiento of Béxar, member of central committee, reply to Smith's address, 161; governor grants land to, 201; urges Bell to move adjournment of Columbia citizens' meeting, chosen to go on secret mission to East Texas, 254; Ugartechea orders arrest of, 266; finds East Texas conservative, 272; meets Houston and Rusk, conservative, 2/2; meets Houston and Rusk, induces political chief to call meeting of people of Nacogdoches municipality, 279-280; activities with Baker in East Texas, triumphal entry into San Felipe, 297-299; Austin sends, with Baker, as messengers to Nacogdoches, reports activities of East Texas people, 342-346; recommends that land offices be closed during war, 395; reports meeting at Natchitoches, Louisiana, held in the interest of Texas, 399; appointed adjutant and inspector-general on Burleson's staff, III, 17; makes strong plea against leaving San Antonio, 48, 49; suggests to Milam calling of volunteers to attack San Antonio after report of Mexican deserter, 52; commands division of Texas army at battle of San Antonio, 53; chosen commander in chief, after death of Milam, 55; story of battle of San Antonio told in report to Burleson, 56-61; signs treaty of capitular interpretation entered into by Burleson and Constitution of the state of the tion entered into by Burleson and Cos at San Antonio, 65; named major of artillery of Texas army in place of Travis, 71; suggests strengthening of frontier in letter to Smith, 95; asks council for authority to make expedition to Matamoros, orders Grant to lead expedition, 97, 98; declines to lead expedition against Matamoros, 100; issues proclamation announcing frontier expedition, 103-105; goes to Refugio to join Grant, calls upon Houston, 117, 120; moves troops with Grant to San Patricio, 135; escapes from San Patricio, 172-173.

Johnson, Hugh B., member of delegation demanding transfer of prisoners by Bradburn, II, 17; elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, 404.

Johnson, J. F., signs address to defeat secession ordinance, IV, 339.

Johnson, Joshua, votes against secession ordinance at Austin convention, IV, 336.

Johnson, M. T., named to be voted on for elector-at-large, at San Jacinto convention, IV, 296; member of caucus to draw up letter requesting Throckmorton to become candidate for governor, V, 11.

Johnson, Richard M., Austin's appeal to with Jackson and cabinet, III, 278, e. s.

Johnson, William H., votes against secession ordinance at Austin convention, IV, 336; signs address to defeat secession ordinance, 339.

Johnston, Albert Sidney, secretary of war in Lamar's cabinet, IV, 56; (General) prepa-rations made by Texans to resist Mexican in-vasion, 93-94; leads expedition against Matamoros, 200; serves in Mexican war, 215; serves in Civil war, 348.

Jones, Dr. Anson, comes to Texas, practices medicine at Brazoria, enters politics, elected Texas congress, introduces resolution to withdraw annexation proposal, IV, 26-28;

measure defeated in Texas senate, appeals to Houston, goes to Washington as minister from Texas, annexation proposal withdrawn, 29-30; makes friends among diplomats, gives Hughes letter with memorandum setting forth arguments in favor of Texas, 31-34; Hughes sends Palmerston's acknowledgement of memorandum to, 35-37; interests American minister to France in affairs of Texas, 37; returns from Washington, 41; criticizes Lamar's attitude toward Texas, IV, 61-63; secretary of state in Houston's cabinet, draws up recommendations reflecting policy of Houston toward Mexico, 101; Texas congress ratifies with drawal of proposal for annexation, 109; redrawal of proposal for annexation, 109; feturns from Washington, elected to senate, emphasizes importance of Texas cotton to Great Britain, opposes Lamar's policies, favors annexation, 110-111; Houston appoints secretary of state in cabinet, dominates foreign policy of Texas, 117-118, e. s.; issues proclamation declaring armistice with Mexico, 130; disapproves of plan for Mexican sovereignty of Texas, names son for Elliot, 132; does not believe time ripe for annexation treaty, 133; instructs Van Zandt to decline proffer of negotiations for annexation, 135; consents to open negotiations for annexation treaty with U. S., 143; would await result of U. S. presidential election before recalling Henderson, 180; expresses hope for annexation, 181-182; candidate for presidency of republic of refrains from making speeches, elected president of Texas republic, 182-183; transmits contents of Smith's dispatches regarding Aberdeen's proposal to Houston, 182; pockets Houston's memorandum, instructs Smith to return to Texas, 184; inaugurated president of Texas republic, 191; sends Elliot to Mexico City with proposal to recognize independence of Texas, 192-196; plans to force U. S. government to offer better terms of annexation, 197-198; is compelled to abandon plan because of procompelled to abandon plan because of proannexation sentiment of people, calls special session of congress, 198, 199; expedition against Matamoros planned, 200-201; issues proclamation declaring establishment of preliminary peace with Mexico, 202; people fail to recognize services of, 202-203, 205; proposal to depose defeated, resolu-205; proposal to depose deleated, resolu-tion, thanking Jones for services voted down in Texas congress, 205; refuses to allow U. S. troops to cross Nucces, 205-206; hands over reins of government, 208; retires to private life, defeated in race for U. S. senator, death of, 209-211; discusses cotton industry in Texas in memorandum to British minister, V, 121; believes cotton strongest influence in bringing about the annexation of Texas to U. S., 122-123.

Jones, Mrs. Anson, tells of "runaway scrape."

III, 276.

Jones, George W., named vice-president at San
Jacinto convention, IV, 293; conservative candidate for lieutenant-governor of Texas, V, 11.

Jones, John R., member of San Felipe repre-sentatives committee, II, 248.

Jones, Oliver, serves with Houston on committee to draw up constitution, II, 78;

Austin's appeal to, 139; describes chaotic conditions in Monclova and advises that Texas organize separate government in letter to Smith, 157-158.

Jones, Randall, I, 192; interviews Piedras, II, 26; appointed member of committee of vigilance and safety at San Felipe meeting, 321; elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, 402; named on committee at San Felipe consultation to draw up plan for provisional government, 416; brings cattle into Texas from Louisiana, V, 139.

Jordan, A. N., member of committee on resolutions at San Jacinto convention, IV, 293; named on committee of correspondence at San Jacinto convention, 296.

KANSAS-NEBRASKA ACT, bill drafted, IV, 240, e. s.; passed by congress, 246; Texas Democratic convention adopts declaration of principles on act, 247.

Kansas trail, description of, V, 162.

Karankawa Indians, I, 120, 126, 127, 128, 165, 167.

Karnes, Henry, Houston sends on scouting party toward San Antonio, III, 235-236; (captain) company under captures Cos, 300.

Kaufman, town of, sketch of, V, 331-332.

Kellog, A. C., elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, II, 403.

Kelly, C. O., named vice-president at San Jacinto convention, IV, 293.

Kemper, Major, officer of Magee's expedition, takes command of forces, I, 42, 43.

Kendall, George W., writes account of Santa Fe expedition, IV, 85, 86.

Kennedy, William, visits Texas, decides to write book on republic, returns to England, IV, 112-113, successfully defends Texas in controversy with O'Connell, 114-116; publishes book on Texas, 116; reports possibilities of Texas as a cotton country to British public, V, 121, 122.

Kenney, Lawrence Richard, authorized by Saucedo to call settlers to arms, I, 271; member of Austin's first municipal electoral assembly, 293.

Kerr, James, member of committee sent by Saucedo to Nacogdoches, I, 261; committee's report to Austin, 262-264; civil engineer, 311; represents Lavaca at first convention of colonists in Texas, II, 47; serves with Houston on committee to draw up constitution, 78; home on the Lavaca to be rendezvous of Texas volunteers, 331; elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, 403; Viesca halts at place on the Lavaca, III, 11; signs resolution paying tribute to Austin, 81.

Kimball, H. S., named secretary of Washington convention, III, 218.

Kincheloe, William, party of, I, 125; member of committee to present resolutions adopted at Mina to political chief, 257; elected comisario in district of Mina, 292; member of Austin's first municipal electoral assembly, 292.

King, Captain, Fannin sends detachment under

to Refugio, scouting party under, annihilated by Mexicans, III, 239-240.

Kingsville, town of, sketch of, V, 303.

Kinney, H. L., serves in war between Mexico and U. S., IV, 215.

Kinney, Thomas, elected member of "board of war" at Gonzales, II, 353.

Kirby, John Henry, leading spirit in organization of "Southern Tariff Association," V, 177; relates incident showing lack of demand for lumber in early days, 211.

Knight, James, member of committee to represent Columbia at San Felipe meeting, II, 247.

Ku Klux Klan, organization of in Texas, V, 169-170.

Kuykendall, Abner, is granted permission by Austin to emigrate and settle in Texas, I, 122, e. s.; administers punishment to Indians, 165; (captain) brings force from San Felipe to Turtle Bayou, II, 24.

Kuykendall, J. H., elected lieutenant of Brazos colony militia, I, 130.

Kuykendall, Robert, elected captain of militia of Colorado colony, II, 130.

ABORDE, REAR ADMIRAL, commander of Spanish fleet, I, 328.

La Branche, Alcée, appointed by Jackson chatgé d'affaires to republic of Texas, III, 403; delivery of commission as chargé d'affaires to Texas delayed, IV, 1.

Lacy, William O., represents Alfred at first convention of colonists in Texas, II, 47; signs declaration of independence of Texas, III, 223.

Lafitte, Jean, buccaneer, establishes pirate town on Galveston island, I, 47, 48.

Lamar, Mirabeau B., Grayson's report for, II, 147, e. s.; commands cavalry company at battle of San Jacinto, III, 295; cited for bravery at San Jacinto by Rusk in report to Burnet, 310; refuses to sign treaties with Santa Anna, 330; elected vice-president of Texas republic, 363; inauguration of, 372; opposes Houston's plan to send Santa Anna home via Washington, 379, e. s.; becomes president of Texas republic, IV, 41; dream of a great republic of Texas, 51-65; founds town of Austin, 67-71; establishes land endowment for public education, 71-74; problems of administration, financial troubles, Indian and Mexican uprisings, early career of, policy with Indians, homestead law passed, 74-76; declines to have anything to do with "republic of the Rio Grande," 78; forms naval alliance with republic of Yucatan, 78-79; urges the extension of Texas territory upon congress, 30; advises union with Texas in letter to citizens of Santa Fe, 81-82; Santa Fe expedition, 82-91; opposes annexation in inaugural address, 103-109; serves in war between Mexico and U. S., 215.

Lamb, Second Lieut. George A., loses life in battle of San Jacinto, III, 317.

Land scandal in Texas and Coahuila, II, 191-

Landrum, Captain, commands company at battle of San Antonio, III, 53; senator in first congress of Texas republic, 363.

Lane, John, nominated for vice-presidency at Richmond Democratic convention, IV, 298.

Lane, Gen. Walter P., visits site of execution of Mier prisoners, IV, 100; serves in war between Mexico and U. S., 215.

Lang, W. W., deplores production of cotton in Texas to the exclusion of other crops, V, 126-127.

Lanham, S. W. T., governor of Texsa, V, 105. Laredo, town of, sketch of, V, 257-259.

La Salle, Robert Cavelier de, attempt to plant colony on Lavaca bay, explorations in Texas, Fort St. Louis, I, 15, e. s.

Latimer, Albert H., signs declaration of independence of Texas, III, 224.

Law of April 6, 1830, enacted, I, 361; text of, 427, c. s.; repeal of, II, 106, 109.

Lavaca county, land titles issued to early settlers, I, 163.

Lavaca, district of, Columbia resolutions endorsed at meeting held at, II, 238.

League, Hosea N., I, 194.

League, H. H., officer of "The Lodge of Union," I, 302.

Ledbetter, Hamilton, named vice-president at San Jacinto battlefield convention, IV, 293.

Lee, Gen. R. E., surrenders to Grant at Appomattox, IV, 364.

Leftwich, Robert, empresario, obtains, with Nashville Company, colonization contract, I, 175; situation of Grant, 176; to meet Hayden Edwards, 216.

Legitimacy movement, II, 38; restoration of declared for at Vera Cruz, 44.

LeGrand, Edwin O., signs declaration of independence of Texas, III, 224.

Lemos, Manuel Gayosa de, governor of Louisiana, opposes colonization of upper Louisiana, I, 59.

Lemus, Gen. Pedro, made commandant of eastern internal provinces, fails to occupy Texas, 11, 129.

Leon, Alonzo de, expedition under, I, 23.

Leon, Martin de, granted colonization contract, I, 186; trouble with Karankawa Indians, 190, 191.

Lcon, Ponce de, story of, I, 17.

Leovy, F. A., V, 186.

Lesassier, Luke, story-teller, I, 314; represents San Felipe de Austin at first convention of colonists in Texas, II, 47; serves on committee at convention, 53; serves with Houston on committee to draw up constitution, 78.

Lester, James S., elected member of "board of war" at Gonzales, II, 353; elected delegate to consultation to draw up plan for provisional government, 416; senator in first congress of Texas republic, III, 364.

Lewis, Captain, commands company at battle of San Antonio, III, 60.

Lewis, H. K., member of delegation demand-

ing transfer of prisoners by Bradburn, II,

Lewis, J. R., elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, II, 403.

Lewis, Samuel, elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, II, 403; representative in first congress of Texas republic, III, 364.

Lewis, Washington, wounded in battle of San Jacinto, III, 317.

Lewis, Captain William P., sent with four other members of Cook's party toward San Miguel, IV, 86; force captured by Mexicans, forced to accompany Armijo as interpreter, makes contract with Armijo, 87-88.

Liberty, ayuntamiento issues proclamation warning colonists to obey revenue laws, II, 206-207.

Liberty, municipality of, organized, II, 9.

Liberty, schooner, purchased for Texas navy, IV, 143.

Lincoln, Abraham, debates with Douglass, IV, 252; arouses North by declarations during debates with Douglass, 256-257; nominated for president of U. S. at Republican national convention, 297; elected president of U. S., 327-328; inaugurated president of U. S., prepares to enforce authority of U. S. government over Confederate states, 345-346; assassination of, 365.

Lindsay, J. M., member of caucus to draw up letter requesting Throckmorton to become candidate for governor, V, 11.

Lindsey, James, interviews Piedras, II, 26.

Linn, John J., signs letter inviting Austin to Gonzales, II, 352.

Lipantitlan, garrison established at, I, 365.

Lipan Indians, I, 120.

Lipscomb, Abner S., appointed associate justice of supreme court of state of Texas, IV, 209.

Little, William, passenger of Lively, I, 118. Lively, Austin's schooner, purchase of, failure to arrive, I, 95, 96; arrival at mouth of Brazos, fate of passengers, 117-119; wreck of, 125.

Llanos, Rafael, Mexican senator, personal friend of Austin, Austin's letter to, II, 120-122.

Llewellyn, Captain, commands company at battle of San Antonio, III, 53.

Lockett. Captain, officer of Magee's expedition, I, 42.

Lockhart, Byrd, signs resolutions of DeWitt's settlers, I, 258.

Lockhart, town of, sketch of, V, 311.

Lodge of Union, The, name chosen for Yorkino party in Austin's colony, I, 302.

Logan, J., named member of vigilance and correspondence committee at Nacogdoches meeting, II, 247.

Logan, William G., secretary of meeting at Teal's Tavern, II, 296.

Lone Star, association, movement to reestablish republic of Texas, IV, 341.

Long, Dr. James, leads filibustering expedition into Texas, captures Nacogdoches, I, 12; organizes expedition in New Orleans, 48; second expedition and death of, 93-94.

Longview, town of, sketch of, V, 293.

Longworth, see Cook's description of experiences in cattle business in Texas, V, 143, e. s.

Looney, James, represents Snow River at first convention of colonists in Texas, II, 48.

Looney, Joseph K., represents Lavaca at first convention of colonists in Texas, II, 47.

Looney, Samuel, represents Snow River at first convention of colonists in Texas, II, 48.

Los Adaes, settlement of, I, 31.

Louisiana Purchase, 1803, I, 8.

Louisiana, settlement of upper, I, 53-62.

Love, Clara M., describes early cattle trails in western United States, V, 160-164.

Love, G. H.. named vice-president at San Jacinto battlesield convention, IV, 293.

Lovelace, Edward, member of Stephen F. Austin's expedition, I, 77; helped finance Lively expedition, passenger of Lively, 118.

Lovelace, John, passenger of Lively, I, 118.

Lubbock, town of, sketch of, V, 308.

Lubbock, Francis R., candidate for lieutenant governor of Texas, IV, 258: elected delegate to national Democratic convention, 291: elected governor of Texas, confers with Davis at Richmond, rigorously enforces draft law, 350-352; Davis offers place on staff, 360.

Lucas, Capt. Anthony F., drills first Spindletop oil well, V. 183.

Luckett, P. N., member of commission to confer with General Twiggs in regard to surrender of arms, IV, 340.

Luelmo, Lieutenant-Colonel Santiago, commands reserve companies of Santa Anna's army at San Jacinto, III, 318; killed at San Jacinto, 321.

Lufkin, town of, sketch of, V, 302-303.

Lumber, growth of industry in Texas, V, 206-215.

Lundy, Benjamin, editor of "The Genius of Universal Emancipation," I, 342.

Lunch, Col. Charles, Bastrop grant purchased from, I, 59.

Lynch's (on San Jacinto) meeting held at, De Zavala's message, III, 281, e. s.

MABRY, H. P., member of caucus to draw up letter requesting Throckmorton to become candidate for governor, V, 11.

Mabry, Col. W. H., dies in Spanish-American war, V, 105.

Macomb, David B., member of committee on resolutions at San Jacinto meeting, II, 258; chosen to represent San Jacinto precinct in general convention, 264; assistant adjutant general under Austin, reports Bowie's movements to Austin, 381; (colonel) sent under flag of truce to deliver message to Cos, 390; elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, 403; named lieutenant-colonel of artillery of Texas army, III, 71.

Madero, Francisco, appointed land commissioner

and instructed to organize municipality on Trinity, II, 8.

Madison, James, president of U. S., I, 40; Houston quotes in speech against secession, IV, 276-278.

Magee, Lieut. Augustus, leads expedition into Texas, joins Gutiérres, capture and siege of La Babía by, death of, I, 41-43.

Magnolia Petroleum Company, organized, V, 185.

Magruder, Brig. Gen. J. Bankhcad, succeeds Hebert as Confederate military commander of Texas, restricts exportation of cotton, order revoked when people protest, IV, 353; recaptures Galveston, 357-359; transferred to Arkansas, 363; surrenders to Unionists, 364; flees to Mexico, 365.

Manchola, Rafael, named by central committee to accompany Wharton to Mexico City, II, 57.

Manley, John H., member of committee on resolutions at convention on San Jacinto battlefield, IV, 293; named on committee of correspondence at convention, 296; delegate from Texas to Constitutional Union convention at Baltimore, 297.

Manlove, B., elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, II, 403.

Manufacturing, industries in Texas, V, 204-206.

Marcosson, Isaac F., describes Spindletop oil field in "The Black Golconda," V, 184-186.

Marfa, town of, sketch of, V, 315.

Margil, Father, member of missionary contingent of Ramón's party, I, 27.

Markham, John, Jr., V, 186.

Markham, oil field opened, V, 191.

Marlin, town of, sketch of, V, 305.

Marsh, Shubael, member of Austin's first municipal electoral assembly, I, 293.

Marshall, town of, sketch of, V, 266-267.

Mart, town of, sketch of, V, 321-322.

Martin, Albert, elected captain of volunteers at Gonzales, II, 335; elected member of "board of war" at Gonzales, 353; arrives at Alamo with reinforcements from Gonzales, III, 185.

Martin, Thomas, named vice-president at San Jacinto battlefield convention, IV, 293.

Martin, Wily, member of company to rescue Bradburn's prisoners, II, 17; represents San Felipe de Austin at first convention of colonists in Texas, 47; votes against resolution asking for separate statehood for Texas, 51; member of central committee, 57; member of central committee, separate statehood for Texas, 51; member of central committee, 57; member of central committee, 58; member of committee, 248; takes Miller's place as political chief of Brazos department, 253; issues writs for arrest of war party leaders, 271; Gritten tells of expected arrival of Cos in letter to, 321; appointed member of committee of vigilance and safety at San Felipe meeting, 321; elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, 402.

Martinez, Spanish governor of Texas, Moses

Austin seeks interview with, I, 49; refuses to read Austin's papers, 64; converses with physicians during massacre at Goliad, III, 260.

Masonry, lodges corrupted in Mexico, I, 203. Massachusetts, legislature calls upon representative at Washington to withstand annexation proposal, IV, 24.

Massanet, Father, mission founded by, burns Fort St. Louis, I, 23, e. s.

Matagorda, county, land titles issued to early settlers, I, 163.

Matagorda, municipality created, II, 132.

Matagorda, oil field opened, V, 185.

Matamoros, proposed expedition against, III, 91, e. s.; demand for expedition against, IV, 200.

Mathews, Dr. Mansell W., representative in first congress of Texas republic, III, 364.

Maverick, Samuel., signs declaration of independence of Texas, III, 224; member of commission to confer with General Twiggs in regard to surrender of arms, IV, 340; origin of term "maverick," V, 152-153.

Maxey, Major-General Samuel B., serves in Civil war, IV, 348.

McAllen, town of, sketch of, V, 294.

McClesky, J. H., first oil well in Ranger field drilled on farm of, V, 194.

McCormic, Michael, named vice-president at San Jacinto battlefield convention, IV, 293;

McCoy, Joseph G., originator of "Kansas Trail," V, 162.

McCulloch, Ben, serves in war between Mexico and U. S., IV, 215; appointed military officer of committee of public safety, 340.

McDonald, Donald, represents Ayish Bayou at first convention of colonists in Texas, II, 48.

McDonald, Lieutenant, cited by Johnson for services at battle of San Antonio, III, 58.

McFarland, William, represents Ayish Bayou at first convention of colonists in Texas, II, 48; proposes that state government be asked for Texas, 50; serves on committee at first convention of colonists in Texas, 53; named vice-president at convention on San Jacinto battle grounds, IV, 293.

McGloin, empresario, founds San Patricio, I, 325.

McGowan, A., member of committee on resolutions at convention on San Jacinto battle grounds, IV, 293.

McGuffin, Hugh, represents Lavaca at first convention of colonists in Texas, II, 47.

McHenry, ----, I, 189.

McKinney, Collin, serves on committee to draft declaration of independence at Washington convention, III, 218; signs declaration of independence at Washington convention, III, 218; signs Declaration of Independence of Texas, 224; member of committee to draft constitution at Washington convention, 224; representative in first congress of Texas republic, 364.

McKinney, Thomas F., asked by Austin to recommend agent at Nacogdoches, II, 6;

Austin's letter to, 150-152; objects to plan of obtaining loan at New Orleans, 394; sent by council to assist Mexia, III, 37.

McKinney, town of, sketch of, V, 288.

McKinstry, George B., member of Brazoria delegation to Anáhuac, II, 10; sent to Brazoria for men and ammunition, 23; represents Brazoria at first convention of colonists in Texas, 47; member of committee to prepare resolutions at Columbia convention, 220; named member of vigilance committee at Columbia convention, 223.

McLane, E., serves in war between Mexico and U. S., IV, 215.

McLane, Louis, secretary of state in Jackson's cabinet, II, 141; writes Butler to look into Austin's case, 141.

McLean, Judge W. P., named on state railroad commission, V, 98.

McLeod, Gen. Hugh, commands military escort of Santa Fe expedition, IV, 83.

McMullen, empresario, founds San Patricio, I, 325.

McMullen & McGloin, granted colonization contract, I, 186.

McMullen, John, member of committee of general council to which Smith's communication was referred, III, 111.

McNeel, John G., member of committee of safety and correspondence at Columbia meeting of August 15, II, 287.

McNeel, Pleasant D., member of committee to decide question of joining in Mexican war, II, 27; member of committee to prepare resolutions at Columbia convention, 221; signs appeal for volunteers to go to Gonzales, 338; elected member of "board of war" at Gonzales, 353.

McNeil, J. G., named member of vigilance committee at Columbia convention, II, 223.

McNeil, Sterling, member of committee to represent Columbia at San Felipe meeting, II, 247.

McNutt, Major, commands guard left at Hacrisburg with disabled men of Houston's army, III, 292.

McNutt, John, I, 315.

McNutt, Nicholas, marriage of, I, 314.

Meigs, H., interests himself in Austin's case, II, 141, 143.

Melbourne, Lord, British prime minister, Palmerston sends Jones's memorandum to, IV,

Memphis, town of, sketch of, V, 326.

Menard, M. B., becomes Austin's agent at Nacogdoches, II, 6.

Menard, M. N., signs declaration of independence of Texas, III, 223; member of committee to draft constitution at Washington convention, 224.

Menard, P. J., elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, II, 404.

Menifee, William, represents Lavaca at first convention of colonists in Texas, II, 47; elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, 402; named on committee at San Felipe consultation to draw up statement of causes for war, 413; chosen member of general council of Texas, 420; signs resolution paying tribute to Austin, III, 81; signs declaration of independence of Texas, 223; member of committee to draft constitution at Washington convention, 224; commissioner to select and purchase site for Texas capital, IV, 69.

Mercedes, town of, sketch of, V, 317-318.

Mercer, Eli, represents Mina at first convention of colonists in Texas, II, 47.

Mer Rouge, town of, I, 59.

Metternich, dominates Europe, I, 10.

Mexía, Col. José Antonio, compact with Guerro, comes to Texas with Austin, receives visit from Brazoria committee, communicates with John Austin, entertained by colonists, sails from mouth of Brazos, meets Anáhuac garrison, seizes Matamoros, joins Santa Anna, II, 32-36; defeats Azcárate, 45, 46; heads expedition against central government, III, 7; offers services to provisional government, 37; 'activities in Mexico, defeat at Tampico, council passes ordinance extending support to, ordinance vetoed by Governor Smith, returns to New Orleans, 38, 39; thought by Austin to be proper leader for expedition to Mexico, 94.

Mexia, town of, sketch of, V, 271-272.

Mexico, discovery of, I, 17; state of, revolt in, II, 11; government of, protests against recognition of Texas by United States, IV, 2; severs diplomatic relations with U. S. following passage of annexation resolution, 189; war with U. S., 213-215.

Mexican, peace proposal, passed, IV, 202; rejected in Texas senate, 205.

Michoacan, Mexican province of, revolt in, II,

Mier, expedition, fate of prisoners, IV, 99-101.

Mier, Padre Senoneto, II, 124.

Milam, Benjamin R., granted colonization contract, I, 186; captured with Viesca, detained at Monterey, II, 201; escapes from prison, found by Collinsworth's men, joins in fight at Goliad, 348-349; member of deputation sent to demand surrender of Goliad, 349; Austin places in command of spy company, discovers trail of enemy's cavalry, 367, 368; calls for volunteers to take San Antonio, III, 52; commands division of army at battle of San Antonio, 53; death and burial of, 55; praised by Johnson in report on battle of San Antonio, 61.

Millard, Henry, elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe. II, 404; named on committee at San Felipe consultation to draw up statement of causes for war, 413; named on committee at San Felipe consultation to draw up plan for provisional government, 416; chosen member of general council of Texas, 420; named lieutenant-colonel of infantry of regular army, III, 71; signs resolution paying tribute to Austin, 81; cited for bravery at San Jacinto by Rusk in report to Burnet, 310; attempts to arrest Burnet, 343-344.

Miller, J. B., named member of central com-

mittee at first convention of colonists, II, 57; requested to accompany Austin to Mexico City, 82; member of central committee, reply to Smith's address, 161; political chief, receives instructions from Cos, II, 211; issues proclamation calling people to arms to rescue Viesca, 213; presides at San Felipe meeting, 225; political chief of Brazos department, drafts letter explaining attack on Anáhuac to Cos, issues proclamations to people, 239-243; retires as political chief on plea of ill health, 252-253; resumes office as political chief, revokes writs for arrest of war party leaders, 298, 299; takes seat as member of "board of war," at Gonzales, 354; conducts captured Mexican officers to San Felipe, 362.

Miller, Dr. J. H. C., suggests arrest of leaders of war party in letter to Smith, II, 265-266.

Miller, Dr. J. C., candidate for governor of Texas, IV, 207.

Miller, S. R., signs letter inviting Austin to Gonzales, II, 352.

Miller, Thomas R., elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, II, 403.

Miller, Major William P., volunteers under captured and sent to Goliad, III, 255, 257-258; escapes with men, massacre at Goliad, 262.

Miller, W. D., declares annexation hopeless in letter to Jones, IV, 182.

Millican, William, meeting held at gin house of, II, 246; elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, 403.

Mina, Austin's colony of, resolutions condemning Fredonians adopted at, I, 256; district of, election held in, 291; Columbia resolutions endorsed at meeting held at, 238.

Mina, Xavier, Spanish officer, joins forces with Perry against Mexican government, execution of, I, 46, 47.

Mina (Bastrop) municipality created, II, 132. Mineral Wells, town of, sketch of, V, 285.

Mining industry, in Texas, V, 204.

Miracle, Captain Julian, reports Mexican liberals of Tamaulipas and Nuevo Leon ready to join Texans, III, 42.

Miro, Governor of Louisiana, encourages immigration in upper Louisiana, I, 55.

Mission, town of, sketch of, V, 310-311.

Missouri compromise, I, 11; IV, 238, e. s.

Mitchell, Eli, member of "The Lodge of Union," I, 302; offers cornfield as camp ground for Gonzales army, II, 354.

Mitchell, Asa, elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, II, 403; named on committee at San Felipe consultation to draw up statement of causes for war, 413.

Moctezuma, Gen. Esteban, comandante at Tampico, deseats Terán at Tampico, II, 14; deseats Otero, 44; deseated by Bustamante, 45.

Monclova, capital of Texas and Coahuila moved to, II, 156; controversy over location of capital of state, 156-157; 163-164.

Money, J. H., refuses to act as political chief in Miller's place, II, 252.

- "Monroe doctrine," 143, 145.
- Monroe, James, I, 10; elected president, 12; president of U. S., message to congress, "Monroe doctrine," 143, 145.
- Montgomery, Andrew, named vice-president at convention held on San Jacinto battlefield, IV, 293.
- Montezuma, ancient Aztec ruler, movement to restore dynasty of, II,154.
- Moore, A. W., member of caucus to draw up letter requesting Throckmorton to become candidate for governor of Texas, V, 11.
- Moore, George F., chief justice of supreme court of Texas, V, 17.
- Moore, John H., Ugartechea orders arrest of, II, 266; elected colonel of volunteers at Gonzales, 335; parley with Castaneda, attacks Mexicans, 336, 337; appointed by "board of war" to command troops at Gonzales, 353-354; elected colonel of Texas army at Gonzales, 360; expedition under destroys Comanche village, IV, 65.
- Moore, John W., Travis reports change of sentiment in Texas in letter to, II, 299, 300; elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, 403; signs declaration of independence of Texas, III, 224.
- Moorehouse, Edwin, senator in first congress of Texas republic, III, 364.
- Morales, Colonel, serves on commission to arrange terms of surrender between Fannin and Urrea after battle of Coleta, III, 253.
- Moreland, Captain Isaac N., commands artillery company at battle of San Jacinto, III, 307.
- Morelos, José María, leads Mexican revolt, execution of, I, 41, 45; general, II, 124; battalion ordered to Copano to be distributed throughout Texas, 212.
- Morfit, Henry M., Jackson sends to Texas to investigate conditions, III, 385.
- Morgan, Col. George, colony founded by, I, 54.

  Morgan, James, represents Liberty at first convention of colonists in Texas, II, 48; named vice-president at convention held on San Jacinto battlefield, IV, 293.
- Morosco, Luis de, leads De Soto's men into Texas, I, 19.
- Morris, Retson, first lieutenant under Travis at Anáhuac, II, 226.
- Morris, Maj. Robert C., aids Milam in command of division of Texas army at battle of San Antonio, III, 53; made second in command after Milam's death, 55; praised by Johnson in report on battle of San Antonio, 61; signs treaty of capitulation entered into by Cos and Burleson at San Antonio, 65; suggests westward move of volunteers to Houston, 118; Houston orders troops to Refugio through, 119; goes on expedition from San Patricio to find horses, 172; death of, 174.
- Morrison, Moses, member of Austin's first municipal electoral assembly, I, 292.
- Morton, William, I, 192; brings cattle into Texas, V, 138.
- Motley, Dr. William, signs declaration of independence of Texas, III, 223; member of

- committee to draft constitution at Washington convention, 224; mortally wounded at battle of San Jacinto, 310, 317.
- Mount Pleasant, town of, sketch of, V, 307-308.
- Muldoon, Padre, permitted to speak to Austin while in prison, II, 122; promises to send book to Austin, 126.
- Mundine, T. H., named vice-president at convention held on battlegrounds of San Jacinto, IV, 293; signs address to defeat secession ordinance, 339.
- Murphy, William S., chargé d'affaires representing U. S. in Texas, informs Upshur of movements of British agent in Texas, IV, 127, 128.
- Murrah, Pendleton, elected governor of Texas, IV, 361; represents change of sentiment toward confederacy, 362-363; proclamations do not prevent chaos after surrender of confederacy, flees to Mexico, 364-365.
- Músquiz, General Melchior, elected president ad interim by Mexican congress, II, 44; installed in office, 45; president ad interim of Mexico, 61.
- Músquiz, Ramón, political chief of department in Texas, appeals to governor and president in behalf of slaveowners, I, 335; quotation from, 344, 345; reappointment as political chief recommended by ayuntamiento, 368; calls upon authorities at San Felipe to put down rebellion, II, 31; condemns convention of colonists in letters to ayuntamiento of San Felipe and Stephen F. Austin, 59; political chief of Texas, attitude toward activities of colonists, 69-71; writes in Austin's favor, 136; named vice-governor of Texas and Coahuila, 191; signs treaty of capitulation entered into by Cos and Burleson at San Antonio, III, 65; Santa Anna orders to attend wounded at battle of Alamo, 210.
- NACOGDOCHES, capture of, by Long's expedition, I, 12; rejuvenation and settlement of, 33; district of, conditions in, 320-323; garrison at, 365; ayuntamiento declares for Santa Anna, II, 39; meeting held at, steps taken toward unity, vigilance and correspondence committee appointed, 247; resolutions adopted favoring independence at meeting held at, III, 88; town of, V, 315-316.
- Napoleon, (Bonaparte) rise of, I, 7; sale of Louisiana, 8; death of, 10.
- Narvaez, Panfilo de, colonizing expedition to Florida under, I, 17.
- Nash, John D., member of caucus to draw up letter requesting Throckmorton to become candidate for governor of Texas, V, 11.
- Navarro, Angel, alcalde of San Antonio, deplores convention of colonists, II, 59.
- Navarro, José Antonio, Texans take house of in battle of San Antonio, III, 59; signs declaration of independence, 223; member of committee to draft constitution at Washington convention, 224; appointed commissioner to Santa Fe, IV, 83; escapes from Vera Cruz, 91.
- Navasota, town of, sketch of, V, 299.

Nazro, Underwood, V, 186.

Neches, San Francisco de los, mission of, I, 27. Neff, Pat Morris, governor of Texas, V, 105.

Negrete, Pedro Celestino, Mexican executive, I, 111.

Neighbors, R. S., sent to Santa Fe to organize counties, prevented by federal authorities. IV, 222-223.

Neill, Col. James C., Johnson sends detachment under to open attack on Alamo at battle of San Antonio, III, 54; named lieutenant-colonel of artillery of Texas army, 71; tells of plight of San Antonio garrison in letter to Smith and council, 105-107; appeals to Houston for reinforcements, 117, 119; presides at indignation meeting at San Antonio, 136; appeals for help in letter to Smith of January 14, 176; prays for material help rather than resolutions in letter to Smith, 178; leaves San Antonio garrison in command of Travis when called home, 182; wounded in artillery skirmish before battle of San Jacinto, 293.

Nelson, A. W., member of caucus to draw up letter requesting Throckmorton to become candidate for governor of Texas, V, 11.

Nelson, James, wounded in battle of San Jacinto, III, 317.

Nesby, Captain, P., renders aid to Nacogdoches committee, I, 264.

"Neutral ground," territory created in 1806, I, 38.

New Braunfels, town of, sketch of, V, 314-315.

New Mexico and Utah acts, IV, 238-239.

New Orleans, proposed purchase of, I, 8.

New Orleans Greys, military company from Louisiana to join Texas forces, II, 399.

New York, legislature calls upon representative at Washington to oppose annexation proposal, IV, 24.

Nolan, Philip, expedition under, defeat by Spaniards, death of, fate of men, I, 36, 37.

"Nonintervention," doctrine of, (See Kansas-Nebraska Act), Texas legislature adopts resolutions to uphold doctrine of, authorizes election of delegates to convention of slave states, IV, 255.

Norris faction, political party in Edwards's colony, I, 233.

Norris, brother-in-law of James Gaines, candidate for alcalde in election of 1825, I, 232, 233; escapes after failure to take Nacogdoches, 276.

Norris, J. M., member of caucus to draw up letter requesting Throckmorton to become candidate for governor of Texas, V, 11.

Norton, A. B., delegate from Texas to constitutional union convention at Baltimore, IV, 297; signs address to defeat secession ordinance, 339.

Norton, James, signs resolutions of DeWitt's settlers, I, 258.

Norwich, cited by Johnson for services in battle of San Antonio, III, 61. OBREGON, Mexican minister to U. S., asks for American attitude toward Texas, I, 279.

Ocean, steamer arrives at Velasco with American volunteers under Green, III, 335-336.

O'Connell, Daniel, opposes recognition of independence by England, IV, 40; demands world-wide abolition of slavery, 113; proposes establishment of "free state" in Texas for fugitive slaves, controversy with Kennedy, 113-115.

Ochiltree, William B., secretary of treasury in Jones's cabinet, IV, 191; named delegate to Birmingham convention, 339.

O'Donojú, Juan, last viceroy of Mexico, I, 93, 103.

Ohio, legislature calls upon representative at Washington to withstand annexation proposal, IV, 24.

Oil industry, history of in Texas, V, 179, e. s. Oil Springs, first oil well in Texas drilled, V, 181.

Old Three Hundred, Austin's original colonists, list of, I, 412, e. s.

Oldham, William, named major of infantry of regular army, III, 71; named delegate to Birmingham convention, IV, 339; elected senator to confederate government from Texas, 345.

Olivares, Father, I, 28.

Only Son, schooner, I, 125.

Orange, oil field opened, V, 192.

Orange, town of, sketch of, V, 281-282.

Oregon question, boundary dispute, "Fifty-four forty or fight," combined with annexation of Texas on Democratic platform, IV, 168.

Otero, Colonel, defeated by Moctezuma, II, 44.
Owens, J. M., signs address to defeat secession ordinance, IV, 339.

PACKING industry, established at Fort Worth, V, 175.

Padilla, Juan Antonio, granted colonization contract, I, 186; appointed land commissioner at Nacogdoches, arrested for murder, 322; member of deputation sent to demand surrender of Goliad, II, 349; joins Texan army, 373; signs resolution paying tribute to Austin. III, 81.

Page, Calvin, wounded in battle of San Jacinto, III, 317.

Palestine, town of, sketch of, V, 275.

Pallard, A., signs letter inviting Austin to Gonzales, II, 352.

Palmerston, Lord, British foreign secretary, transmits Jones's memorandum to Lord Melbourne, IV, 35.

Panic of 1818, I, 11.

Pannell, H. G., named vice-president at convention held on San Jacinto battle ground, IV, 293.

Paredes, General, becomes president of Mexico, issues proclamation declaring defensive war on U. S., IV, 212-214.

Paris, town of, sketch of, V, 264-265.

Paris, treaty of, 1763, I, 3, e. s.

Park, William A., wounded in battle of San Jacinto, III, 317.

Parker, \_\_\_\_\_, murders Early, confesses crime, escapes, I, 317-320.

Parker, Daniel, elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, II, 403; chosen member of general council of Texas, 420; signs resolution paying tribute to Austin, III, 81.

Parker, Jesse, represents Sabine at first convention of colonists in Texas, II, 48.

Parker, Joshua, I, 194.

Parker, J. W., elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, II, 403.

Parmer, Martin, leads insurgents at Nacogdoches, I, 254; returns to Texas, II, 4; chosen member of general council of Texas, 420; tells of defeat of Texans in letter to wife, III, 217; wants amendment to Childress's motion at Washington convention, 218; signs declaration of independence of Texas, III, 224; member of committee to draft constitution at Washington convention, 224.

Parrot, Dr., offers name as security for Austin, II, 150.

Parrott, T. F. L., named major of artillery of Texas army, III, 71.

Parsons, J. W., member of caucus to draw up letter requesting Throckmorton to become candidate for governor, V, 11.

Paschal, J. A., signs address to defeat secession ordinance, IV, 339.

Paschal, Sam, named vice-president at convention held on San Jacinto battle grounds, IV, 293.

Patrick, George M., elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, II, 403.

Patton, Captain William H., commands company at battle of San Antonio, III, 53; Santa Anna placed in charge of, 351; escorts Santa Anna to U. S., 382.

Peacock, Captain, commands company at battle of San Antonio, III, 53.

Pearce, bill passed, Santa Fe controversy settled, IV, 227-228.

Pease, Elisha M., signs resolution paying tribute to Austin, II, 81; fourth governor of Texas, IV, 228; calls attention to progress of Republican party in U. S. in address to legislature, 252-253; supports Houston in race for governor of Texas, 258; nominated for governor of Texas by radicals at Austin convention, V, 10; Sheridan appoints governor of Texas, 50; recognizes validity of laws passed since secession, not in conflict with constitution of U. S., 52; takes moderate view on "Ab Initio" issue, message to convention at Austin, 53-54; governor, resigns from office, 60; leads movement against Davis's administration, 73; president of taxpayers' convention at Austin, 75.

Peck, Solomon R., presents resolutions at meeting at Teal's Tavern, II, 296-297.

Pedraza, Manuel Gómez, secretary of war in Victoria's cabinet, candidate for presidency in election of 1828, I, 303-304; compelled to resign from cabinet, goes to England, 305; election of declared legal by states of Za-

catecas and Jalisco, II, 15; proclaimed legal head of Mexico, 44; returns to Mexico, 61; serves unexpired term as president of Mexico, 71; candidate for presidency of Mexico, III, 396.

Peebles, Dr. Robert, story-teller, I, 314; named member of central committee of colonists at first convention, 11, 57; member of central committee, reply to Smith's address, 161; governor grants land to, 201.

Peel, Sir Robert, prime minister of Great Britain, IV, 119.

Pennington, Isaac M., starts first school in Texas, I, 167.

Pennington, Sydney S., signs declaration of independence of Texas, III, 224; representative to first congress of Texas republic, 364.

Perry, A. G., elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, II, 403; chosen member of general council of Texas, 420.

Perry, Captain —, officer of Magee's expedition, I, 42: commands Magee's men in Texas, escapes after defeat of republican forces in Texas, joins Mina, second defeat and escape, 44-47.

Perry, James F., comes to Texas, I, 307; receives letters from Austin, 103, 104, 105, 106, 107, 108, 120; Austin's letters to, II, 133-135; 136-137; Henry Austin urges in letter to attend meeting at Columbia, 217-218; member of committee to prepare resolutions at Columbia convention, 220; member of committee to represent Columbia at San Felipe meeting, II, 247; member of committee of safety and correspondence at Columbia meeting of August 15, 287.

Perry, Mary, niece of Stephen Austin, death of, II, 104.

Petroleum, development of industry in Texas, V, 179, e. s.

Pettus, William, (Buck), I, 194; member of company to rescue Bradburn's prisoners, II, 17, 24; named member of central committee of colonists at first convention, 57; member of central committee, reply to Smith's address, 161; appointed member of committee of vigilance and safety at San Felipe meeting, 321; sent by council to assist Mexía, III, 37.

Peyton, Jonathan C., I, 194.

Phelps, James A. E., passenger on the *Lively*, I, 118; member of committee to prepare resolutions at Columbia convention, II, 221; Santa Anna moved to plantation of, III, 351.

Phillips, Isaac, member of committee to present resolutions adopted at Mina, I, 257.

Piedras, Colonel, commands Mexican garrison at Nacogdoches, I, 365; permits Thomson to obtain colonization certificate from Austin, II, 4-5; seeks to postpone conflict, signs compact with colonists, 25-27; carries out agreement with colonists, 30-31; refuses to declare for Santa Anna, fort stormed, retreats, resigns command, sent to Velasco, return to Mexico, 40-42.

Piedras Pintas, oil field opened, V, 191.

Pierce, Franklin, president of U. S., inauguration of, IV, 239; 240; administration supports Kansas-Nebraska bill, 242; controversy with Douglass, 251.

Pierson, J. G. W., elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, II, 403.

Pinedo, Alvarez de, explored and mapped coast of Texas, I, 16; stories of, 17.

Pioneer, American vessel, Santa Anna sails for Vera Cruz on, III, 396.

Pittsburg, town of, sketch of, V, 330.

Plainview, town of, sketch of, V, 308-309.

Poe, George W., Houston sends advice to Ward by, III, 119.

Pollard, Dr., member of committee to draw up resolutions at indignation meeting in San Antonio, III, 136.

Poinsett, Joel R., quotation from, I, 101, 107; appointed American minister to Mexico, 197, 200; address in Mexico City, 201; efforts to obtain treaties of commerce and boundaries, arouses suspicions of Mexicans by interfering in internal politics of country, 200, 203, 204; describes Mexican attitude, 204, 205: reports to Washington, proposed expedition against rebels in Texas, 279; unpopularity in Mexico, proposed expulsion of, 282, treaty of 1828, 284; trouble in Mexico, 342, 343; recall of, 344, 345.

Polk, James K., nominated for presidency at Democratic convention of 1844, IV, 167-168; elected president of United States, 185; signs resolution declaring war between Mexico and U. S., 214.

Pollitt, George, named member of vigilance and correspondence committee at Nacogdoches, II,

Pontalba, Col. Joseph Xavier Delfau de, settlement of upper Louisiana urged by, I, 57.

Pontois, American minister to France, Jones interests in affairs of Texas, IV, 37; urges king of France to recognize Texas independence, 39.

Ponton, Andrew, alcalde of Gonzales, refuses to surrender cannon to Ugartechea's men, sends out appeals for help, II, 333-335; alcalde of Gonzales, Travis appeals to for help, III, 183.

'Popular (squatter) sovereignty," (see Kansas-Nebraska act,) Texas Democratic convention repudiates Douglass's interpretation of, IV. 248.

Port Arthur, town of, sketch of, V, 260-261. Porter, ---, I, 191.

Potter, Captain Reuben M., account of storming of Alamo, III, 199-209.

Potter, Robert, moves that delegates to Washington adjourn and hasten to relief of Alamo, III, 218; member of committee to draft constitution at Washington convention, 224; signs declaration of independence of Texas,

Powers, James, signs resolution paying tribute to Austin, III, 81; member of committee to draft constitution at Washington conventions of the constitution of the cons tion, signs declaration of independence of Texas, 224.

Prairie Pipe Line Company, V, 199.

Preston, Senator, introduces annexation resolu-tion into U. S. Senate, IV, 25-26.

Procela, Luis, trouble with Hayden Edwards. I, 227.

Prohibition, election of, 1911, V, 106-108.

Provisional government, plan of the, adopted at San Felipe consultation of all Texas, text of, II, 422, e. s. Pruitt, Pleasant, I, 126.

Pryor, Ike T., describes cattle drives in early Texas, V, 164-168; describes danger of foreign competition to cattle industry in U. S., 175-176.

Public school lands, endowment for public edu-cation to be set aside urged by Lamar, IV, 71, e. s.; law passed by congress, 74.

Puebla, state of, revolt in, II, 11.

Putnam, Mitchell, wounded in battle of San Jacinto, III, 317.

OUANAH, town of, sketch of, V. 313.

R ABB, WILLIAM, receives special grant of land, I, 164.

Rada, J. Francisco de, signs treaty of capitulation entered into by Cos and Burleson at San Antonio, III, 65.

Raguela, José Manuel, granted colonization contract, I, 187.

Railroads in Texas, struggle for, regulation of, V, 95-103; development of, 215-222.

Rains, Emery, signs address to defeat secession ordinance, IV, 339.

Rains, J. D., signs address to defeat secession ordinance, IV, 339.

Ramírez y Sesma, General, Santa Anna orders to San Juan Bautista on Rio Grande, III, 68; commands Mexican army on Rio Grande, 139; participates in storming of Alamo, 211; division under reported to be advancing to-ward Gonzales, 236; camps near Columbia on Colorado, 267-268; asks Santa Anna for reinforcements, 268; joins Santa Anna at Thompson's Ferry, 288.

Ramón, Captain Diego, I, 26; heads expedition into Texas to establish missions, 27.

Randolph, Benton, member of caucus to draw up letter requesting Throckmorton to become candidate for governor, V, 11.

Ranger oil field, discovery of, V, 194-195.

Ranger, town of, sketch of, V, 262-263.

Random, David, signs appeal for volunteers to go to Gonzales, II, 338.

Rawls, Amos, elected sindico in district of Mina, I, 292.

Raymond, Charles H., takes charge of Texas affairs at Washington, IV, 180.

Raymond, James H., named by legislature as treasurer of state of Texas, IV, 209.

Reagan, John H., suggests convention of Southern states for purpose of obtaining guarantees from free states in the event of Lincoln's election, IV, 326-327; cheered at Austin convention, 337; named delegate to Birming-ham convention, 339; appointed postmaster general of Davis's cabinet, 345; chairman of committee on platform and resolutions at Democratic convention at Austin, V, 80;

author of interstate commerce commission bill, 96; appointed chairman of Texas railroad commission, 98.

Reconstruction, Johnson's program of, V, 1; congressional program of, 13.

Reconstruction convention, V, 5-10.

Record, J. K. P., member of caucus to draw up letter requesting Throckmorton to become candidate for governor, V, 10.

Rector, E. G., wounded in battle of San Jacinto, III, 317.

Redgate, Sam J., signs address to defeat secession ordinance, IV, 339.

Refugio Mission, troops ordered to, III, 119.

Refugio, battle of, III, 240-241; occupied by Mexicans, IV, 93.

Reilly, Major James, appointed minister from Texas to United States, IV, 119; accomplishes nothing toward annexation, sends in resignation, 119-120.

"Religion and Privileges," political faction in Mexico, II, 153.

"Remember the Alamo," war cry of Texans, III, 215, 298.

Republic of Texas, constitution of, III, 412, e. s.

Revenue laws, violation of in Texas, II, 205. Revolutionary war, causes, I, 5.

Revolution, Mexican, I, 99-106; 111-113.

Reynolds, Gen. J. J., supersedes Hancock as military commander in fifth district, V, 52; becomes dictator of Texas politics, orders revision of registration lists and of registrars, prepares to carry election for ultra-radicals, 60-61; appoints Davis provisional governor of Texas, convenes legislature, fourteenth and fifteenth amendments ratified, 62; transfers civil authority to officers elected by people, 62.

Rice, James O., rangers under capture Flores and party with Canalizo's plans, IV, 54.

Rice, William Marsh, founds Rice Institute, V, 93.

Rice Institute, founded, V, 93.

Richardson, George F., represents San Jacinto at first convention in Texas, II, 47; votes against resolution asking for separate state-hood for Texas, 51.

Richardson, Stephen, I, 312.

Richmond, Southern Democratic convention held at, IV, 298.

"Rio Grande, republic of," established, IV, 77; viewed with favor in Texas, 78; move to organize territory of, 224-226.

Rio Grande, town of, sketch of, V, 323.

Rives, George Lockhart, describes early settlets, I, 207-208; quotation from, 342, II, 188; describes conditions on American border as Gaines found them, III, 281-283; describes the folly of Santa Fe expedition, IV, 84-85.

Robards, W. L., made comptroller of Texas, V. 17.

Robbins, William, Austin's messenger to the Cherokees, I, 273.

Roberts, John S., influences Rueg to call meet-

ing of people of Nacogdoches municipality, II, 280; signs declaration of independence, III, 224.

Roberts, Oran M., chairman of secession convention, IV, 336; describes conditions in Texas during Civil war, 353-355; member of caucus to draw up letter requesting Throckmorton to become candidate for governor of Texas, V, 11; elected U. S. senator from Texas, 17; Texas senators and congressmen denied seats, issues "Address to the Congress and People of United States," 19, e. s.; made chief justice of supreme court of Texas, 87; becomes governor of Texas, rehabilitates finances of state, 90-91; calls special session of legislature for purpose of providing for new state capital, 93.

Robertson, John C., elected chairman of committee of public safety at Austin convention, IV, 339.

Robertson, Sterling C., contract transferred to, I, 187; empresario, Thomson settles in colony of, II, 4-5; signs declaration of independence of Texas, III, 223; senator in first congress of Texas republic, 363.

Robins, Nat, elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, II, 403.

Robinson, Andrew, family of, first immigrants to cross Brazos, I, 122.

Robinson, G. W., wounded in battle of San Jacinto, III, 317.

Robinson, James W., elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, II, 403; named on committee at San Felipe consultation to draw up plan for provisional government, 416; signs resolution paying tribute to Austin, III, 81; acting governor for council, resolutions empowering him to defend San Antonio sent to Neill, 178; elected judge of the fourth district of Texas republic, IV, 43; Santa Anna sends to Texas with peace proposition, 128-130.

Robinson, John G., representative to the first congress of Texas republic, III, 364.

Robinson, William, represents Viesca at first convention of colonists in Texas, II, 47; votes against resolution asking for separate statehood for Texas, 51.

Rodgers, M. C., named vice-president at convention held on San Jacinto battle grounds, IV, 293.

Rogers, James H., member of commission to confer with Gen. Twiggs in regard to surrender of arms, IV, 340.

Roman, Richard, representative to first congress of Texas republic, III, 364.

Roosevelt, Col. Theodore, organizes "Rough Riders" at San Antonio, V, 104.

Rosenberry, life spared at Goliad massacre, III, 262; sent to San Miguel to announce approach of Santa Fe expedition, IV, 85-86; arrest of, 87.

Rosillo, battle of, I, 43.

Ross, Captain, officer of Magee's expedition, I, 42.

Ross, Col. James, Edwards sends appeal to, I, 244, 247.

Ross, Lawrence Sullivan, (Sul.) first governor

of Texas to occupy new capitol, V, 94; reelected, favors creation of state railroad commission, 97.

"Rough Riders," regiment organized at San Antonio, V, 104.

Rowe, Dr. Joseph, representative to first congress of Texas republic, III, 364.

Royall, R. R., organizes permanent council at San Felipe, elected president in Austin's place, issues appeal for help, calls preliminary consultation, II, 368-370; reports information received from army contractor in regard to supplies, 394; calls delegates to order at San Felipe consultation, 402; elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, 403; named on committee at San Felipe consultation to draw up statement of causes for war, 413; chosen member of general council of Texas, 420; signs resolution paying tribute to Austin, III, 81; member of committee of general council to which Smith's communication was referred, III, 111.

Royston, M. H., made treasurer of Texas, V, 17.

Rueg, Henry, calls meeting of people of Nacogdoches municipality, II, 280.

Ruíz, Col. Francisco, commands Mexican garrison at San Antonio, I, 365; retreats with troops to San Antonio, II, 42; alcalde of San Antonio, required to identify slain Texan leaders to Santa Anna, III, 207; describes scene following massacre at Alamo, 209-211; signs declaration of independence of Texas, 223; senator to first congress of Texas republic, 364.

"Runaway scrape," (Flight of colonists before Mexican army,) III, 269, 271-276.

Runnels, Hardin R., elected governor of Texas, IV, 251; reviews slavery question history in inaugural address, 253; recommends that action be taken on resolutions regarding non-intervention doctrine in special message to legislature, 254-255; candidate for reelection, 257-258; elected delegate to national Democratic convention, 291; cheered at Austin convention, 337; member of caucus to draw up letter requesting Throckmorton to become candidate for governor of Texas, V, 11.

Rusk, Thomas J., secretary of meeting at Nacogdoches, II, 246; named member of vigilance and correspondence committee at Nacogdoches meeting, 247; meets Johnson and Baker, 279, 280; named member of committee to treat with Indians at Teal's Tavern meeting, 297; elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, 403; signs declaration of independence of Texas, III, 224; chosen secretary of war of Texas republic, 227; sent to prevent further retreat of Houston's army, 283; makes speeches to men at Harrisburg, 291; conducts interviews with Santa Anna, 302, e. s.; reports battle of San Antonio to Burnet, 305; Houston commends for services at San Jacinto, 316; succeeds Houston as commander in chief of army, 326; orders tribute paid to heroes at Goliad, delivers memorial address, 338; refuses Andrade's request to pass through Goliad, 339; commissioners sent to Matamoros imprisoned, report plan for new invasion of Texas, 342, 343; secretary of war in Hous-

ton's cabinet, 374; puts down "Córdova Rebellion," IV, 53-54; elected U. S. senator from Texas, 209; death of, 253; sends out detachments to drive up cattle for slaughter for Texas army, V, 140.

Russell, William J., sent to Brazoria for men and arms, II, 23; member of committee to decide question of joining in Mexican war, 27; 28; commands volunteers on Brazoria, 28, 29; suggests reconciliation between Wharton and Austin, 358.

Ruth, James, member of committee on resolutions at San Jacinto meeting, 258.

SABINE, trading vessel, disregards revenue laws, II, 10.

Sabine Pass, confederates successfully defend, IV, 359.

Saint Denis, Louis Juchereau, Cadillac's agent, trip to Texas, sojourn in Mexico, guides Ramón's expedition, I, 25-28.

Salada creek, Texan army camps at, II, 373, e. s.

Salas, Colonel, serves on commission to arrange terms of surrender of Fannin after battle of Coleta, III, 253.

Saldana, Vicente, to take part in escape of Austin, II, 145, 146.

Saligny, Count A., sent by French government to investigate conditions in Texas, IV, 38; French minister to Texas, signs memorandum proposing that Mexico recognize independence of Texas as alternative to annexation, 192.

Saltillo, controversy over location of capital of Texas and Coahuila, II, 156-157; 163-164; delegates withdraw from legislature and appeal to national authorities, 193, e. s.

Sam Houston Normal Institute, founded, V, 92. San Angelo, town of, sketch of, V, 279-280.

San Antonio, settlement of, I, 29, e. s.; ayuntamiento condemns Austin's proposal to organize colony in Texas, Austin's letter sent to political chief, governor and president, 112-114; garrison at, 365; citizens issue address calling convention to organize provisional government, II, 158-159; battle of, III, 51-61; indignation meeting held at, draws up resolutions denouncing action of council in impeaching Smith, 136-138; captured by force under Vásquez, IV, 93; Democratic convention held at, Hogg nominated for governor, Culberson for attorney general, debates over constitutional amendment providing for creation of railroad commission, 97-98; city of, sketch of, V, 225-228.

San Augustine, municipality created, II, 132; citizens organize volunteer army, committee draws up resolutions making Houston commander in chief of department, 343, 344.

San Benito, town of, sketch of, V, 298.

Sánchez, José Juan, signs treaty of capitulation entered into by Cos and Burleson at San Antonio, III, 65.

San Diego, town of, sketch of, V, 316-317.

Sandoval, Colonel Francisco, commands guard at Goliad, captured by Texans, II, 347-349; captured at Goliad, 362. San Felipe de Austin, town of, founded, I, 134; named for Garza and Austin, 134, 135; becomes capital and commercial center of colony, 162; name shortened to Austin, 292.

San Felipe, ayuntamiento, passes act adhering to plan of Vera Cruz, II, 36-38.

San Felipe, American schooner, Austin arrives on, fight with Correo de Mexico, II, 309, 310.

San Jacinto, settlement on, settlers become disturbed over Edwards's threats regarding land titles, I, 213-214; meeting, resolutions adopted at, II, 258-264; battle of, III, 295, e. s.; list of soldiers in San Jacinto battle, 437, e. s., convention held at adopts resolutions, nominates Houston for president, IV, 292-296.

San José, mission of, I. 27.

San Luis Potosí, Mexican state, revolt in, II, 11; state of, declares Pedraza to be rightful executive, 44, 45.

San Marcos, town of, sketch of, V, 304-305.

San Patricio, settlement of, I, 325; municipality created, II, 132; Mexicans defeat Johnson's men at, III, 172.

Santa Anna, General Antonio López de, es-tablishes Guerrero as president of Mexico, tablishes Guerrero as president of Mexico, I, 304, 306; commands republican army against Spaniards, 329, 330; remains in seclusion, 370; accepts invitation of garrison at Vera Cruz to lead revolution, defeat of forces at Talome, retreat to Vera Cruz, American colonists in Texas declare for, II, 13-15; defeats Facio and Azcárate, 45-46; takes Puebla, raises siege of capital, 61; sieges person terms with Property of the Property of signs peace terms with Bustamante, advises reoccupation of Texas by Mexican troops, 71-73, elected president of Mexico, 71; absents himself from capital after inauguration, intrigues of, captured and declared dictator by troops, escape, undertakes campaign against Arista and Durán, 86-88; routs followers of Durán and Arista, 106; proposes sending troops to Texas in conference with Cabinet and Austin, 108-109; resumes control of government, responds to "plan of Cuernavaca," assumes absolute power, 153-Cuernavaca, assumes absolute power, 193-155; congress refuses to accept resignation of, retires to estate in Vera Cruz, 181-182; begins preparations for new invasion of Texas, III, 68; prepares for invasion of Texas, 139-140; storming of Alamo, 197-199; gives signal for attack, 204; refuses to spare lives of Texans, 208; orders bodies of Texans burned, 211; reports victory of Alamo to war department at Mexico City, 211-213; orders Gaona and Urrea to form junction with Ramírez y Sesma, leaves San Antonio to join armies on Colorado, 270; moves to San Felipe, joined by Ramírez y Sesma at Thompson's Ferry, orders Urrea to Brazoria, orders Cos to Velasco and Galveston, burns Harrisburg, proceeds to New Washington, 287-289; orders Cos to the San Jacinto, battle of San Jacinto, 295, e. s.; capture of, 300, e. s.; interviews with Houston, defends slaughter of men at Alamo and Goliad, thanks Sylvester for sparing life, orders withdrawal of army, 302-305; report of battle of San Jacinto, expresses friendship for Texas in conversation with Stephen Austin, II, 303, 317-322; sent to Velasco, signs public and secret treaties with Texans, 326-330; orders Filisola to carry out provisions of public treaty with Texas government, 331; prepares to sail on Invincible, writes message of farewell to Texas army, seized and returned to prison by Green and followers, 335-336; army proposes to execute at Goliad, 339; sends protest against treatment at Velasco to Burnet, 339-341; orders Urrea to abandon invasion of Texas, 346; asks U. S. recognition of treaties with Texas in letter to Jackson, 346, 348-350; moved to Phelp's plantation, 351; escape planned, placed in irons, 354; asks permission to return home via Washington, in order to negotiate with Jackson over transfer of Texas, letter to Houston, 375-378; sails for U. S., 382; popularity wanes in Mexico, 394; calls upon Jackson, proposal to sell Texas to U. S. unfavorably received, 395; arrives in Vera Cruz, defeated in presidential election, retires to estate, publishes defense of conduct in Texas, denounces captors, 397; restored to popular favor in Mexico, IV, 52; returns to power in Mexico, 78; again becomes unpopular in Mexico, 201.

Santa Anna, war vessel commanded by Mexia, II, 33.

Santanistas, political party in Mexico, II, 181. Santa Fe, expedition, IV, 80-91.

Santa Fe, territorial controversy between Texas and federal government, IV, 218-228; county created by Texas legislature, 219.

Salcedo, governor of the province of Texas, commands Spaniards in Texas against Magee's forces, murder of, I, 42-43.

Saratoga, oil field opened, V, 185.

Saucedo, Antonio, political chief of Texas, promulgates schedule of fees annulling Austin's contract, I, 154; political chief of Texas, dispatches troops to San Felipe, directs Austin to raise force, 253; presented resolutions adopted at Mina, 258; sends letters to Edwards and Richard Fields, 260; march to Nacogdoches, 276; carries out terms of amnesty proclamation, 278; authorizes Flores to issue land titles, 289.

Savariego, Cap. Manuel, Mexican officer, paroled on honor after capture by Texans at Goliad, II, 362.

Sayers, Joseph D., governor of Texas, V, 105. Sayre, Charles D., represents Brazoria at first convention of colonists in Texas, II, 47.

Scates, William B., signs declaration of independence of Texas, III, 223.

Scott, Capt. William, presides at San Jacinto meeting, II, 258.

Scurry, Lieutenant-colonel, wins distinction at recapture of Galveston by confederates, IV, 358

Secession, becomes topic of public discussion, IV, 257; becomes issue in gubernatorial race in Texas, 258; resolutions adopted defending right of, at Galveston convention, 288-291; of Texas from union, 334, e. s.; declaration of causes adopted at Austin convention, text of, 391, e. s.

- Secession convention, IV, 333-340; reconvenes, adopts ordinance joining Southern Confederacy, declares Houston's office vacant, 341, 342.
- Seguín, Erasmo, heads commission to deliver confirmation of grant to Moses Austin, I, 75; member of congress from Texas, 172; requested to accompany Austin to Mexico City, II, 82; favors separate statehood movement, 82-83.
- Seguín, Juan, joins Texas army, I, 374-375; member of committee to draw up resolutions at indignation meeting in San Antonio, III, 136.
- Seguin, town of, sketch of, V, 314.
- Selkirk, William, member of committee to present resolutions adopted at Mina to political chief, I, 257.
- Sepulveda, José Antonio, Edwards lodges complaints against, I, 227, 228; appeals election of 1825 to political chief at San Antonio, 233; escapes after failure to capture Nacogdoches, 276.
- Sertuche, Ignatius, appointed ferryman at Trinity crossing, I, 234.
- Seven Years' war, I, 4.
- Shackleford, Dr., refuses to abandon wounded men after battle of Coleta, III, 250-251; attends wounded after battle of Coleta, 252; life spared at Goliad massacre, 259, e. s.
- Shad brothers, locate ranch in Wichita county, V, 168.
- Sharp, Walter B., organizer of Texas company, V, 185.
- Shaw, James B., named by legislature comptroller of state of Texas, IV, 209.
- Shawnee trails, description of "Old" and "West" Shawnee trails, V, 162-163.
- Shepherd, William, elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, II, 403.
- Sheridan, Gen. Philip; made commander of fifth military district of seceded states, V, 43; issues order declaring state and municipal governments of Texas and Louisiana provisional, 45-46; issues secret orders to registrars, removes Throckmorton from office, appoints Pease governor of Texas, 49-50; removed from command of fifth military district, 51.
- Sherman, Sidney, organizes company from Kentucky, arrives at Gonzales, III, 235; elected lieutenant-colonel of regiment at Gonzales, 235; urges Houston to attack Ramírez y Sesma, 268-269; attempts to capture enemy's gun in skirmish preliminary to battle of San Jacinto, 293; commands second regiment in battle of San Jacinto, 295, e. s.; cited for bravery at San Jacinto by Rusk in report to Burnet, 310; leads procession bonoring slain at Goliad, 338; supervises building of first railroad in Texas, V, 217.
- Sherman, town of, sketch of, V, 265-266.
- Shote, Colonel, II, 64.
- Shuford, A. P., votes against secession ordinance at Austin convention, IV, 337; signs address to defeat secession ordinance, 339.
- Sibley, Gen. H. H., commands confederate vessels at recapture of Galveston, IV., 357.

- Sigler, Wm. H., elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, II, 403.
- Simms, Edward, V, 186.
- Sims, Bartlett, elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, II, 403.
- Sinclair Pipe Line Company, V, 199.
- Singleton, Philip, member of committee on resolutions at San Jacinto meeting, II, 258.
- Slaughter, R. F., member of caucus to draw up letter requesting Throckmorton to become candidate for governor, V, 11.
- Slavery, institution of, formally recognized in constitution of Texas, III, 226, Northern states of U. S. object to annexation of Texas because of, IV, 24; British policy on, regarding Texas, 124-128; Aberdeen sets forth Great Britain's attitude in document to be read to American secretary of state, 146; Calhoun links annexation question with slavery in Texas in reply to Aberdeen's note, 150; anti-slavery element in U. S. claims Santa Fe territory, 219-220; Missouri compromise, arrangements controlling spread of in U. S., 238, e. s.; points of view in northern and southern states, 249-250.
- Slidell, John, dispatched to Mexican capital with instructions to offer cash in exchange for establishment of Rio Grande boundary and cession of lower California, mission fails, IV, 212-213.
- Smith, Captain —, wounded in battle of San Jacinto, III, 317.
- Smith, Dr. Ashbel, appointed minister to Great Britain and France from Texas republic, IV, 119; urges Great Britain to induce Mexico to recognize independence of Texas republic, 212; sets forth British policy on slavery in letter to Jones, 125-126; warns Aberdeen against interference in internal affairs of Texas by Great Britain, 127; transmits Aberdeen's proposal of a "diplomatic act," to Jones, 183; Jones names secretary of state, 191; signs memorandum proposing that Mexico recognize independence of Texas as alternative to annexation, 193-194, 195; reserves for Texas the right to accept annexation instead of treaty with Mexico, 195-196; sent to London and Paris to negotiate with British and French governments, 196; Throckmorton's attitude toward negro voters shown in letter to, V, 49.
- Smith, Major Ben F., appointed by "board of war" at Gonzales to command company to Victoria, II, 354; ordered by Austin to reinforce Collinsworth at Goliad, 361; Austin's army awaits arrival of at Cibolo creek, 368; joins Texas army at Cibolo, 373; takes Santa Anna before Houston, III, 302; carries public treaty between Santa Anna and Texas government to Filisola, 331.
- Smith, Erasmus, (known as "Deaf" Smith) joins Texas army, II, 374; chief guide for second division of Texan army at battle of San Antonio, III, 53; cited by Johnson for services in battle of San Antonio, 61; Houston sends on scouting party toward San Antonio, 235-236; captures Mexican courier with dispatches from Filisola to Santa Anna, 291; converses with Cos, 300.

Smith, George W., associate justice of supreme court of Texas, V, 17.

Smith, Henry, serves with Houston on committee to draw up constitution, II, 78; made political chief of department of Brazos, 132; letter from Oliver Jones, 157-158; issues broadside proposing organization of separate government for Texas, 160; second address to people, election held, issue defeated, 162-164; document showing attitude of colonists toward proposal that Texas organize separate state government, 164-168; member of committee to prepare resolutions at Columbia convention, 220; member of committee of safety and correspondence at Columbia meeting of August 15, 287; elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, 403; favors immediate declaration of independence for Texas, 407-408; named on committee at San Felipe consultation to draw up plan for provisional government, 416; elected governor of Texas at San Felipe consultation, 418; friction with council, vetoes ordinance extending support to Mexía, instructs Burleson to watch Gonzales, III, 39; vetoes ordinance calling convention of all Texas, sets forth objection to Mexicans in message to council, 40-41; urges council to complete organization of regular army, 71; urges immediate action on question of loan and instructions to commissioners, 79; commission to U. S., urges declaration of independence of Texas in official letter to, 89; suggests expedition against Matamoros to Houston, 91; Dimmitt's letter to, 92-94; transmits Johnson's letter to council, 95; refers resolution of council urging concentration of forces on frontier to Houston, 97; refuses to issue commissions to Barrett and Gritten, 98; violently opposes Johnson's plan to lead an expedition against Matamoros, 100; orders Houston to take command of troops, 102-103; transmits Neill's letter to council, 105; flays council in bitter communication, 107-111; presents apologetic message to council, 112-113; prepares to defend himself before convention, 114; orders Travis to reinforce garrison at San Antonio, 176; sends appeal for aid to Texans with printed message of Travis, 185-186; becopresident of Texas, 361. becomes candidate for

Smith, J. C., member of committee on resolutions at San Jacinto convention, IV, 293.

Smith, Gen. J. Kirby, prevents invasion of east Texas by union troops, IV, 363; surrenders to unionists, 364; flees to Mexico, 365.

Smith, John W., I, 191; shows Dr. Miller's letter to Ugartechea, II, 265-266; sends Austin map of San Antonio, III, 12; chief guide for first division of Texas army at battle of San Antonio, 53; cited by Johnson for services in battle of San Antonio, 61; carries Travis's last message through enemy's lines, 186.

Smith, M. W., elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, II, 403.

Smith, William, wounded by one of Tenorio's men, II, 209.

Smith, W. P., elected secretary of "board of war" at Gonzales, II, 353; named surgeongeneral on Austin's staff, 360. Smithers, W., member of Stephen F. Austin's expedition, I, 77.

Smithville, town of, sketch of, V, 320.

Smithwick, Noah, describes efforts made to stimulate immigration, I, 182, 183, 184; quotation from, 313-316, 319; buys Early's mustang, 317; describes visits to colonies in Texas, 189-195; quotation from, II, 357; describes first Texas army, 365-367; describes flight of Texans before Santa Anna's army, III, 272-273.

Smyth, George W., signs declaration of independence of Texas, III, 223; named, to be voted on, for elector-at-large at San Jacinto convention, IV, 296.

Snively, Col. Jacob, force under attempts to intercept Mexican traders en route to Santa Fe from Missouri, IV, 101.

Soldiers of San Jacinto, list of, III, 437, e. s. Somervell, Alexander, member of San Felipe representative committee, II, 248; elected major of Texas army at Gonzales, 360; elected major of regiment at Gonzales, III, 235; cited for bravery at San Jacinto by Rusk in report to Burnet, 310; senator to first congress of Texas republic, 363; Houston orders to command volunteers at San Antonio, IV, 94; men refuse to accept as commander, 95; crosses Rio Grande with force of Texans, abandons invasions, 96.

Soto, Fortunato, granted colonization contract, I, 187.

Soult, Marshal, signs treaty recognizing Texas independence by France, IV, 40.

Sour Lake, oil field opened, V. 185.

Sour Lake, town of, sketch of, V, 323.

South Carolina, legislature of adopts resolutions reaffirming ordinance of 1852, invites other southern states to convention, governor sends resolutions to Houston, IV, 263-265; secedes from union, 329.

Southern Tariff, association organized, V, 177.

Southwick, Stephen, member of committee on resolutions at convention held on San Jacinto battle grounds, IV, 293; named vice-president at convention, 293; named on committee of correspondence at convention, 296.

Spanish-American war, Texas's part in, V, 104.
Sparks, Richard, named member of committee
to treat with Iudians at Teal's Tavern meeting, II, 297.

Spindletop, oil sensation, V, 183, 184.

Stamford, town of, sketch of, V, 312-313.

Stanberry, William, U. S. representative from Ohio, trouble with Sam Houston, II, 63.

Standard Oil Company, connected with few companies in Texas, V, 200.

Stapp, Elijah, signs declaration of independence of Texas, III, 223; member of committee to draft constitution at Washington convention, 224.

State of Texas and Coahuila, created, I, 149.

Steel, Alphonso, wounded in battle of San Jacinto, III, 317.

Steel, Colonel, wins distinction at recapture of Galveston, IV, 358.

Stephenville, town of, sketch of, V, 309-310. Stevens, A. R., wounded in battle of San Jacinto, loses life, III, 317.

Stevens, Thaddeus, leads radical union element in U. S. house of representatives during early reconstruction period, V, 5, 9.

Stephenson, Nathaniel W., quotation from, I, 280.

Sterling, R. S., V, 186.

Stewart, Charles B., member of San Felipe representative committee, II, 248; signs declaration of independence of Texas, III, 223; member of committee to draft constitution at Washington convention, 224.

Stillwell, Captain, commands artillery company at battle of San Jacinto, III, 307.

Stinnett, C., represents Gonzales at first convention of colonists in Texas, II, 48.

Stockdale, F. S., author of majority report in debate over secession in Texas senate, defends right of secession, IV, 283-286; elected delegate to national Democratic convention, 291.

Subarán, Colonel, supersedes Bradburn in command, II, 18; ordered to follow Piedras to Nacogdoches, men demand Subarán as commander, 30-31.

Sublett, Philip, member of delegation to call upon Piedras, II, 40; represents Ayish Bayou at first convention of colonists in Texas, 48; commands San Augustine volunteer company, 342; made lieutenant-colonel, presents Austin with communication opposing attack on San Antonio, III, 12-13; named colonel of infantry of regular army, declines appointment, 71.

Sulphur Springs, town of, sketch of, V, 293-294.

Sumner, Charles, leads radical union element in U. S. senate during early reconstruction period, V, 5, 9.

Sumter, Fort, fall of, IV, 346. Sun Pipe Line Company, V, 198.

Sutherland, George, represents Lavaca at first convention of colonists in Texas, II, 47; votes against resolution asking for separate statehood for Texas, 51; signs appeal for volunteers to go to Gonzales, 338; elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, 403; commands company in battle of San Antonio, III, 60.

Sweetwater, town of, sketch of, V, 305-306.

Swisher, Captain, James G., commands company at battle of San Antonio, III, 53; signs treaty of capitulation entered into by Cos and Burleson at San Antonio, 65.

Sylvester, Sergeant James A., party captures Santa Anna, III, 300, e. s.

Syms, Capt. Bartlett, Edwards sends appeal to, I, 244, 247, 248.

TARNAVA, LIEUTENANT CONSTAN-TINE, aide of Terán, I, 351.

Taylor, Charles S., represents Nacogdoches at first convention of colonists in Texas, II, 48; signs declaration of independence, III, 224.

Taylor, John D., elected sindico in district of Victoria, I, 292; member of Austin's first municipal electoral assembly, I, 293.

Taylor, Robert H., signs address to defeat secession ordinance, IV, 339.

Taylor, W. S., named vice-president at convention held on San Jacinto battleground, IV, 293.

Taylor, Gen. Zachary, commands U. S. troops on Nueces river in Texas, IV, 205; moves army to Rio Grande, 211; blockades mouth of Rio Grande, 213; defeats Mexico under Arista, takes possession of Matamoros, 214; elected president of U. S., 219; death of, 227.

Taylor, town of, sketch of, V, 291.

Teague, town of, sketch of, V, 318.

Teal, Henry, carries public treaty between Santa Anna and Texas government to Filisola, III, 331.

Teal's Tavern, (The Old Stone House) meeting held at, II, 296-297.

Tejas, (Texas) Indians, I, 23, e. s.

Tejas, (Texas) San Francisco de los, mission of, I, 23, e. s.

Telegraph, Houston newspaper, stands for absolute maintenance of rights of Texas, IV, 221, 222.

Temple, town of, sketch of, V, 276.

Tennel, Benjamin F., member of company to rescue Bradburn's prisoners, II, 17.

Tenorio, Captain Antonio, sent to reestablish custom house on Galveston bay, II, 204; attempts to enforce revenue laws, 208; surrenders fort at Anáhuac to Travis, 225, 226, 227, 228.

Tenoxtitlan, garrison established at, I, 365.

Tepixtoc, Father Carlos, author of plan to restore Montezuma dynasty, II, 154.

Terán, Don Manuel de Mier y, investigates geographical and other conditions in Texas, I, 285-286; encounter with Spanish invaders, 329; believes the abolition of slavery would check immigration in Texas, 331-332; becomes commandant of eastern internal provinces, 338; quotation from, 349; proposes military and political measures against Texas, 351-353; orders arrest of Madero, II, 9; defeat of Tampico, 14; death of, 15.

Terán, town of, force at, retreats to San Antonio, II, 42.

Terrell, town of, sketch of, V, 283.

Terrell, A. W., member of caucus to draw up letter requesting Throckmorton to become candidate for governor of Texas, V, 11; author of Terrell election law, V, 106.

Terrell, George W., Jones appoints as minister from Texas to Great Britain, IV, 191.

Terrell, (Mrs.) Kate Scurry, describes "runaway scrape," III, 273-276; describes scene of rejoicing after battle of San Jacinto at camp on Buffalo Bayou, 323-324.

Terrell election law, enacted, V, 105-107.

"Test oath," required of all voters in the South after Civil war, V, 47.

Texarkana, town of, sketch of, V, 273-274.

Texas, "The independent republic of," I, 12. Texas, (Tejas) origin of name, I. 24.

"Texas and Southwestern Cattle Raisers' Association," origin and growth of, V, 172.

Texas City, town of, sketch of, V, 331.

Texas, economic development of, V, 111, e. s.; history of cattle industry in, 135, e. s.

Texas Pipe Line company, V, 198.

"Texas Railroad, Navigation and Banking company," IV, 48.

Texas, republic of, efforts to secure recognition of, III, 384, e. s.; independence recognized by United States, 403, e. s.; constitution of, text of, 412, e. s.; independence of recognized by France, IV, 40; by England, 41; official seal of adopted, 44; congress provides for purchase of vessels for navy, 45; army reduced, 46; financial problems, 47, e. s.; boundaries set forth by act of congress, 79-80.

Texas Republican, Texas newspaper, reflects attitude of people toward state government, II, 199; newspaper article showing activities of war party in Texas, 218-219; notice in, calling meeting of Columbia citizens to discuss convention of all Texas, 253-254.

Texas, state of, constitution drafted, IV, 207; officers elected, 207; formally admitted into union, 207; controversy over Santa Fe territory, 218-228; dispute over Rio Grande territory, 224-226; public debt liquidated, 228; public buildings erected, 228-229; dispute with federal government over defense of frontier, 229; trouble with Mexicans, general growth of, 231-235; legislature adopts resolutions to uphold doctrines of 'popular sovereignty' and 'nonintervention,' authorizes election of delegates to convention of slave states, 254-255; reaffirms resolutions, 257; secedes from union, 334-338; legislature of refuses to ratify fourteenth amendment, V, 15; enacts legislation pertaining to freed slaves, elects U. S. senators, calls election for congressmen, 16-17; senators and congressmen from, denied seats in congress, V, 19, e. s.; readmitted to the union, 62; legislature destroys Davis's machine, 79-80; new constitution ratified, 88.

Texas State Fair, established at Dallas, V, 173. Thomas, David, signs declaration of independence of Texas, member of committee to draft constitution at Washington convention, III, 224; chosen attorney general of Texas republic, 227.

Thompson, B. J., member of Edwards's governing committee, Austin sends appeal to, I, 252-253.

Thompson, Capt. Jesse, Edwards sends appeal to, I, 244-247; 315.

Thompson, Capt. Thomas M., commander of Correo de Mexico, sent with crew as prisoners to New Orleans, II, 310.

Thompson, Waddy, manifests friendship for Texas in U. S. house of representatives, III, 393; resolution declaring for recognition of Texas tabled, 400; proposes amendment to appropriation bill providing for sending of diplomatic agent to Texas, bill finally adopted, 400-401; American chargé d'affaires to Mexico, Mexican minister threatens war in note to, IV, 135.

Thompson, Wells, member of caucus to draw

up letter requesting Throckmorton to become candidate for governor of Texas, V, 11.

Thomson, Alexander, attempts to settle in Texas, evades law of April 6, settles in Austin's colony, II, 4-6; represents Hidalgo at first convention of colonists in Texas, 47; votes against resolution asking for separate statehood for Texas, 51; elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, 403; named on committee at San Felipe consultation to draw up plan for provisional government, 416; member of committee of general council to which Smith's communication was referred, III, 111.

Thorn, Frost, empresario, obtains colonization contract, I, 175; situation of grant, 175; presides over meeting at Nacogdoches, II, 246; named member of vigilance and correspondence committee at Nacogdoches meeting, 247

Thornton, Lieutenant, commands detachment of regulars in Texan army, III, 119; Houston orders with command to Goliad, 120; scouting party under engages in skirmish with Mexicans, IV, 214.

Thrall, describes waning enthusiasm for Confederacy in Texas toward close of Civil war, IV, 361-362.

Throckmorton, James W., supports Houston in race for governor of Texas, IV, 258; leads fight for minority report in debate over secession in Texas senate, 283; votes against secession ordinance at Austin convention, 337; signs address to defeat secession ordinance, 339; joins confederate army, 343; elected president of reconstruction convention at Austin, V, 5; urges support of president in address to convention, 5; nominated for governor of Texas by conservatives at Austin convention, 10; formally requested to become candidate for governor in letter setting forth principles of conservative party, 10-12; accepts nomination and principles of conservative party, 12-13; elected governor of Texas, 14; disapproves of fourtcenth amendment, 15; cooperates with military authorities in attempting to secure registration of voters in Texas, 46; attitude shown in letter to Ashbel Smith, removed from office, 48-50; recognizes validity of laws passed since secession not in conflict with constitution of U. S., 53; leads movement against Davis administration, 73; serves on committee "to consider and report business." at taxpayers' convention at Austin, 75.

Thurber, town of, sketch of, V, 290-291.

Tilden, Samuel J., Democratic candidate for presidency of United States, election contested, V, 88.

Tinsley, Isaac T., member of committee of safety and correspondence at Columbia meeting of August 15, II, 288.

Toledo, Don José Alvarez, Spanish revolutionary officer, establishes headquarters at San Antonio, defeat by Arredondo's forces, I, 44-45.

Toler, Daniel J., escapes with Johnson from San Patricio, III, 172-173.

Tolsa, General, commands Cos's troops at Monclova, III, 139. Tom, J., loses life in battle of San Jacinto, III, 317.

Tomlinson, John, elected alcalde of Colorado colony, I, 130.

Tonkawa, Indians, I, 120, 128, 156, 165.

Tornel, José María, induces Guerrero to sign edict abolishing slavery, I, 330-331; Mexican minister to United States, warns Americans against going to Texas as colonists, II, 1-2; minister of war in Mexican cabinet, plans to crush government of Coahuila and Texas, 198; plans expedition to Texas, 208; orders arrest of De Zavala, 265; attitude toward Texas, 300.

Tramel, sells right to operate ferry, I, 234.

Trask, Olwyn J., wounded in skirmish before battle of San Jacinto, III, 317.

Travis, William Barrett, arrested and imprisoned by Bradburn, II, 16; sends memorial to Mexican government for Austin's release, 139; member of central committee, reply to Smith's address, 161; capture of fort at Anáhuac, 225-228; description of man, 226; defends action in capture of fort at Anáhuac, 228-229; Ugartechea orders arrest of, 266; returns to San Felipe, 298; reports change of feeling in Texas in letter to Moore, 299-330; commands advance guard to San Antonio, 382-383; elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, 402; detachment under captures horses from enemy's cavalry, III, 1; declines appointment of major of artillery of Texas army, 71; placed in command of cavalry force of Texas army, 77; Smith orders to reinforce garrison at Alamo, 176; fails to get enough men, deplores conditions in Texas in letter to Smith, 178-179; asked to be relieved of duty of personally conducting men to San Antonio, 179-180; expresses determination to hold Alamo in letter to Smith, 181-182; placed in command of Alamo garrison with Bowie, 182-183; message to Anglo-American world, 184; appeals to Fannin at Goliad for help, 184; last message to countrymen, 186-189; body found after battle of Alamo, 210.

Treaty of 1819, I, 2, 9; confirmed by treaty of 1828, 284; text of, 376-387.

Treaty of 1795, I, 7.

Treaty of 1828, I, 284.

Treaty of annexation, between Texas and U. S., signed, IV, 147; rejected in U. S. senate, 169.

Treaty of capitulation, entered into by Cos and Burleson following battle of San Antonio, III, 62-65.

Treaty of Guadalupe Hidalgo, text of, IV, 368, e. s.

Treviño, Colonel, killed at battle of San Jacinto, III, 297.

Trinity, settlers on, land dispute with Edwards, I, 230-231.

Turner, Major A., warns Burnet of plan to arrest him, III, 343-344.

Turner, John, signs declaration of independence of Texas, III, 224.

Turtle bayou, colonists camp while awaiting release of Bradburn's prisoners, II, 19-20. "Turtle Bayou Resolutions," colonists declare for Santa Anna, II, 21-23.

Twiggs, General, commander of U.S. military department of Texas, surrenders military posts of Texas, IV, 340.

"Twin Sisters," Houston awaits arrival of, III, 289-290.

Tyler, John, becomes president of U. S., IV, 103; becomes alarmed at Great Britain's interest in Texas, 128; refers to Texas in annual message to congress, 137-141; points out advantages of the annexation of Texas to U. S. in special message to congress, 150-161; makes annexation platform in race for presidency of U. S., 162, e. s.; informs senate of military preparations for war with Mexico in special message, 163; explains mission of messenger to Mexico in special message to senate communications showing the danger of a British alliance with Texas, 163-165; nominated for reelection at independent convention at Baltimore, 166; calls upon congress to carry out will of people in regard to annexation in annual message, 185-186; signs annexation resolution, 189; directs American chargé d'affaires to present annexation proposal to Texan government, 189.

"Tyler and Texas," Democratic slogan at Baltimore convention, IV, 166.

Tyler, town of, sketch of, V, 270-271.

Tyus, Benjamin R., member of caucus to draw up letter requesting Throckmorton to become candidate for governor of Texas, V, 11.

GARTECHEA, COL. DOMINIC, commands Mexican garrison at Velasco, I, 365; requests transfer of Bradburn's prisoners, II, 18; refuses to declare for Santa Anna, surrenders Fort Velasco to colonists, 27-30; prevents Béxar militia from going to Viesca's assistance, 199; made commandant of Coahuila and Texas, 204; letter to Tenorio, 208; letter to Tenorio intercepted by colonists, 212-213; gives assurances of good will of central government, 243; orders arrest of war party leaders after seeing Miller's letter, 265-266; failure of mission of Barrett and Gritten, report to Cos, 267-271; sends for cannon at Gonzales, 333; sends appeal for peace to Austin, 350-351.

University of Texas, founded, V, 91-92.

Upshur, Abel P., succeeds Webster as secretary of state, favors annexation of Texas, IV, 122-123; becomes alarmed at Great Britain's interest in Texas, 127-128; announces readiness to open negotiations with Texas for annexation, 132; refuses to recognize Mexican claim to Texas in reply to Almonte's threat of war, 136; suggests annexation of Texas to U. S. to Almonte, 145-146; death of, 147.

Urrea, General, ordered with detachment to Matamoros, III, 139; defeats Texans at San Patricio, 172; massacres Grant and men near Agua Dulce, 173-175; forces under, annihilate King's party, battle of Refugio 239-241; meets Fannin near Goliad, battle of Coleta, 246-253; Fannin surrenders ta

251, e. s., ordered to Colorado to form junction with Ramirez y Sesma, 270; Rusk's commissioners report new invasion of Texas under, 343; leads federalist revolt in Mexico, IV, 77.

Urriza, Captain Fernando, wounded in skir-mish before battle of San Jacinto, III, 318. Uvalde, town of sketch of, V, 310.

VACA, CABEZA DE, sojourn in Texas, first physician and first merchant on Texas soil, I. 17-18.

Valero, San Antonio de, mission of, I, 28.

Van Buren, Martin, secretary of state in Jackson's cabinet, I, 340; sends instructions to Poinsett by Butler, 341; President of U. S., letter from Gutiérrez, II, 138; Austin's appeal to Jackson and cabinet, III, 278, e. s; elected President of United States, 385; inaugurated, IV, 1; delays recognition of Texas minister, 1-2; defeated by Harrison in race for presidency of U. S., 103; opposes annexation of Texas, 162, e. s.; candidate for nomination for presidency at Democratic convention, 167.

Vandever, Logan, wounded in battle of San Jacinto, III, 317.

Van Fossen, John, letter to Houston, II, 64.

Van Zandt, Isaac, succeeds Reilly as minister to U. S. from Texas, IV, 120 Jones approves of appointment of, 120; efforts to bring about annexation, 120-123; informs Jones of Upshur's proposal to negotiate for treaty of annexation, 133; sends to Texas assurances of certainty of ratification of annexation treaty by U. S. senate, 143; resigns as Texas minister to Washington, 180.

Vásquez, General, Mexican force under, captures San Antonio, IV, 93; withdraws forces from Texas, 94.

Veatch, John A., elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, II, 403.

Veeder, L. L., named member of central committee at first convention of colonists, II, 57.

Vehlein, Joseph, & Co., granted colonization contract, I, 186.

Velasco, garrison established at, I, 365.

Velasco, fort, Ugartechea surrenders to John Austin and company, II, 27; stormed and captured by colonists under John Austin, 27-30; Santa Anna and Texans negotiate treaty at, III, 326-330; citizens express indignation at release of Santa Anna, 335.

"Vera Cruz, Plan of," II, 12-13.

Veramendi, Juan Martín de, heads commission to deliver confirmation of grant to Moses Austin, I, 75; house of, occupied by Texans in battle of San Antonio, III, 55.

Vermont, legislature adopts resolution protest-ing against annexation of Texas, IV, 24.

Vernon, town of, sketch of, V, 296-297.

Victoria, town of, I, 190; district of, Austin's message to, 254-256; election held in district of, 291; sketch of town, V, 291-292.

Victoria, Guadalupe, Mexican executive, I, 111; named president of Mexico, 170; attitude

toward U. S. with respect to Texas territory, 279; Poinsett's appeal to, 282-283; capitulates to Guerrero party, 305; issues amnesty proclamation, 306.

Viesca, Augustin, elected governor of Texas and Coahuila, II, 191; calls for militiamen from Texas, 193; appeal for militia published by "Texas Republican," 199-200; capture and rescue of, 201.

Viesca, J. M., plans to join Texas in struggle to uphold constitution of 1824, offended at treatment received at Goliad, complains to Austin, III, 5-6.

Villar, Pascual, goes on Austin's bond, II, 149-150.

llaseñor, acting governor of Texas and Coahuila, II, 153; deposed, 157. Villaseñor.

Von Eckhardt, German minister to Mexico, Zimmermann's note to, V, 107-109.

WACO, city of, sketch of, V, 250-253. Waggoner, Dan, establishes cattle ranch in North Texas, V, 168.

Waggoner, W. T., oil discovered on ranch of, V, 191.

Walker, Gen. J. C., succeeds Magruder Confederate commandant of Texas, IV, 363.

Walker, Martin, wounded in battle of San Jacinto, III, 317.

Walker, Senator Robert J., introduces resolution in U. S. senate urging recognition of Texas, III, 397-398, 400; calls Thomp-son's amendment before senate, 401.

Walker, S. N., serves in war between Mexico and U. S., IV, 215.

Walker, Wm. S., wounded in battle of San Jacinto, III, 317.

Wallace, J. W. E., elected lieutenant-colonel of volunteers at Gonzales, II, 335; signs letter inviting Austin to Gonzales, 352; apter inviting Austin to Gonzales, 352; appointed by "board of war," at Gonzales to command troops, 354; accompanies Fannin to meet Mexican officers to arrange terms of capitulation, III, 251; signs treaty of capitulation near Goliad, 253.

Waller county, land titles issued to early settlers, I, 163.

Waller, Byrd B., elected secretary of Columbia convention, II, 220.

Waller, Edwin, member of committee to decide question of joining in Mexican war, II, 27-28; member of committee to prepare resolutions at Columbia convention, 221; elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, 403; chosen member of general council of Texas, 420; signs declaration of independence of Texas, III, 223; member of committee to draft constitution at Washington convention, 224; appointed by Lamar agent to establish town of Austin, IV, 69; early exporter of cotton in Texas, V, 119.

Walton, W. M., member of caucus to draw up letter requesting Throckmorton to become candidate for governor of Texas, V, 11; made attorney-general of Texas, 17.

Waltrous. Charles, attorney general in Lamar's cabinet, IV, 56.

Ward, Henry George, British minister to Mexico, stimulates feeling of discontent against U. S. among Mexican leaders, I, 206-207.

Ward, Major William, Houston awaits arrival at Goliad, III, 119; detachment under sent to Refugio to relieve King, battle of Refugio, escapes with men, 240-241; surrenders to Urrea at Victoria, company sent to Goliad, 255, 257-258.

Washington county, land titles issued to early settlers, I, 163.

Washington, George, Houston quotes in speech against secession movement, IV, 272-273.

Washington, town of, convention held at, adopts declaration of independence, drafts and adopts constitution, provides for government ad interim, elects officers, III, 218-227; closes land offices during war, provides for ranger regiment, reelects Houston commander in chief of army, provides for draft of militia, etc., 224-225; adopts ordinance providing for annexation of Texas to U. S., IV, 206-207.

Waters, George, wounded in battle of San Jacinto, III, 317.

Waul, T. N., named delegate to Birmingham convention, IV, 339.

Wavell, Gen. Arthur C., granted colonization contract, I, 186.

Waxahachie, town of, sketch of, V, 284-285.

Weatherford, town of, sketch of, V, 289.

Webster, Daniel, secretary of state in Tyler's cabinet, opposes annexation of Texas, IV, 104; secretary of state in Fillmore's cabinet, 227; Houston quotes in speech against secession, 280.

Wells, F. T., signs appeal for volunteers to go to Gonzales, II, 338; cited for bravery at San Jacinto by Rusk in report to Burnet, III, 310.

West, Claiborne, represents Liberty at first convention of colonists in Texas, II, 48; elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, 404; signs resolution paying tribute to Austin, III, 81; member of committee of general council, to which Smith's communication was referred, 111; signs declaration of independence, 223; member of committee to draft constitution at Washington convention, 224; representative to first congress of Texas republic, 364; member of caucus to draw up letter requesting Throckmorton to become candidate for governor of Texas, V, 11.

Westall, Miss, marries Brown Austin, I, 316.

Westall, Thomas, member of committee to decide question of joining in Mexican war, II, 27-28.

Westover, Ira, signs resolution paying tribute to Austin, III, 81; enlists recruits for Texan army, 119, e, s.

Weathered, Francis W., elected representative to first congress of Texas republic, III, 364.

Wharton county, land titles issued to early settlers, I, 163.

Wharton, John A., member of committee to prepare resolutions at Columbia convention, II, 220; named member of vigilance committee at Columbia convention, 223; member of committee to represent Columbia at San Felipe meeting, 247; proposes calling of general convention of all Texas, 252; signs call for meeting of Columbia citizens, 254; member of committee of safety and correspondence at Columbia meeting of Aug. 15, 287; advocates Austin for commander in chief, 357; elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, 403; moves for appointment of committee to set forth causes for war at San Felipe consultation to draw up statement of causes for war, 413; brings Twin Sisters from coast to Houston's army, III, 290; present at interview between Santa Anna and Houston, 302; cited for bravery at San Jacinto by Rusk in report to Burnet, 310; representative to first congress of Texas republic, 364; made prisoner by Mexicans at Matamoros, escape of, IV, 45; serves in Civil war, 348.

Wharton, William H., comes to Texas, I, 311; quotation from, 347-348; sent to meet officers of Ugartechea, II, 29; represents Brazoria at first convention of colonists in zoria at first convention of colonists in Texas, 47; defeated by Austin for president of convention, 50; serves on committee at convention, chairman of committee on law of April 6, appointed to present memorials to state and national governments, 57; elected president of second convention of colonists in Texas, 77; shows concern for Austin's fate, 138; draws up memorial for Austin's release, 140-141; thanked by Austin for efforts to obtain his thanked by Austin for efforts to obtain his release in letter to McKinney, 151; writes Houston to come to Texas, 271; chairman of Columbia meeting of August 15, 286; issues broadside urging volunteers to repair to Gonzales, 338-340; reconciliation with Austin, 357-358; named judge-advocate on Austin's staff, 360; elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, 403; favors immediate declaration of independence for Texas, 407-408; named special commissioner San Felipe consultation to go to U. S., 420; sails with commission for New Orleans, III, 81; activities in behalf of Texas in U. S., 144, e. s.; endeavors to float loan in New York, 277; prepares to return to Texas after battle of San Jacinto, 325-326; returns to Texas, opposes execution of Santa Anna, 345; urges Austin to run for president of Texas republic, 360-361; senator to first congress of Texas republic, 364; Houston appoints as minister to U. S., 374; calls upon Jackson and Forsyth, receives little encouragement, 385-386; efforts to secure recognition of Texas, 397, 399-400, 401; sends final appeal to Jackson, 402; dispatches news of recognition of republic by U. S. to Texas, 406; captured and taken to Matamoros, IV, 45.

Wheeler, Royall T., appointed associate justice of supreme court of state of Texas, IV, 209.

Wheeler, T. B., mayor of Austin, members of Davis faction attempt arrest of, V, 85. White, Francis M., elected member of "board

- of war" at Gonzales, II, 353; elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, 403.
- White, Jesse, named vice-president at convention held on San Jacinto battle ground, IV, 293; named on committee of correspondence at convention, 296.
- White, Joseph, member of, "The Lodge of Union," I, 302.
- White, Samuel Addison, representative to first congress of Texas republic, III, 364.
- White, Walter C., store of, I, 194; member of committee to prepare resolutions at Columbia convention, II, 221; life spared at Goliad massacre, III, 262.
- Whitefield, J. W., member of caucus to draw up letter requesting Throckmorton to become candidate for governor, V, 11.
- Whiting, S., member of committee to prepare resolutions at Columbia convention, II, 220; signs call for meeting at Columbia, 254.
- Whitmore, G. W., signs address to defeat secession ordinance, IV., 339.
- Whittaker, William, elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, II, 403.
- Wichita Falls, city of, sketch of, V, 248-250.
- Wigfall, Louis T., elected U. S. senator from Texas, IV, 259; Houston flays in address defending union, 316-317, 318; declares "North will not yield an inch," 327; named delegate to Birmingham convention, 339; elected senator to Confederate government from Texas, 345.
- Wilcocks, James S., American consul general in Mexico, friend of Austin, II, 144, 146-147.
- Wilcox, John A., serves on committee to draft declaration of causes for secession at Austin convention, IV, 339.
- Wiley, A. P., serves on committee to draft declaration of causes for secession at Austin convention, IV, 339.
- Wilkinson, Gen. James, agreement with General Herrera, creation of "neutral ground," I, 38; intrigue with authorities at New Orleans, 55, 105.
- Wilkinson, Leroy, wounded in battle of San Jacinto, III, 317.
- Williams, Alfred M., quotation from, II, 275. e. s.
- Williams, E. F., named on committee of correspondence at convention held on San Jacinto battle ground, IV, 296.
- Williams, John A., proposes exchange of prisoners to Subarán, II, 19.
- Williams, L. H., votes against secession ordinance at Austin convention, IV, 337; signs address to defeat secession ordinance, 339.
- Williams, Robert H., member of committee of safety and correspondence at Columbia meeting of August 15, II, 287; builds one of the first cotton gins in Texas, V, 118.
- Williams, Samuel M., appointed secretary of local government of colony by Austin, I, 185; contract regranted to, 187; acts as temporary secretary of ayuntamiento of Austin's colony, 294; member of committee to plan independence celebration, 370; Austin's appeal to, II, 139; describes prosperity of

- Texas in letter to Austin, 186; governor grants land to, II, 201; Ugartechea orders arrest of, 266; named commissioner to negotiate with Woll on Rio Grande, IV, 132.
- Williamson, H. J., secretary of indignation meeting held at San Antonio, III, 136.
- Williamson, Robert M., comes to Texas, I, 310; member of company to rescue Bradburn's prisoners, II, 17, 24; serves with Houston on committee to draw up constitution, 78; alcalde of San Felipe, sends memorial to Mexican government for release of Austin, 139; presides over meeting of war party at San Felipe, 214; replies to Columbia resolutions in address to people, 233-238; Ugartechea orders arrest of, 266; returns to San Felipe, 298; elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, 403; favors immediate declaration of indepedence for Texas, 407-408; named on committee at San Felipe consultation to draw up statement of causes for war, 413; placed in command of ranger companies in Texas, III, 77; commands company of rangers, 272; elected judge of third district of Texas republic, IV, 43.
- Willie, A. H., associate justice of supreme court of Texas, V, 17.
- Wilson, Charles, elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, II, 403; named on committee at San Felipe consultation to draw ap plan for provisional government, 416.
- Wilson, Robert, represents San Jacinto at first convention of colonists in Texas, II, 47; senator to first congress of Texas republic, III, 363.
- Wilson, Stephen J., granted colonization contract, I, 186.
- Wilson, Lieutenant William, accompanies Stephen F. Austin to Natchitoches, I, 76.
- Winters, Wm., wounded in battle of San Jacinto, III, 317.
- Wolff, Theodore, German newspaper editor, criticizes Zimmermann for proposing conquest of lost territory in U. S., V, 109.
- Woll, General Adrian, Santa Anna complains of treatment of in protest to Burnet, III, 340; captures San Antonio, defeated by Texans under Coldwell, IV, 96-97; retreats across Rio Grande, 97.
- Wood, George T., serves in war between Mexico and U. S., IV, 215; governor of Texas, protests action of U. S. officers at Santa Fe, 219; vigorously urges maintenance of state's rights in message to legislature, 220-221.
- Wood, J. B., elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, II, 404; signs declaration of independence of Texas, III, 224.
- Woodbury, John L., granted colonization contract, I, 186.
- Woodlief, Devereaux J., wounded in skirmish before battle of San Jacinto, III, 317.
- World War, Texas's part in, 106, 108-110.
- Wright, David, represents Alfred at first convention of colonists in Texas, II, 47.
- Wright, George W., representative to first congress of Texas republic, III, 364; votes

against secession ordinance at Austin convention, IV, 337; signs address to defeat secession ordinance, 339.

Wyatt, Captain P. S., relieves Dimmitt at Goliad, III, 118; Houston orders to Refugio, 120.

YANCY, Houston denounces in address defending union, IV, 316-318.

Ybarbo, Antonio Gil, restores Nacogdoches, I, 32-33.

Yoakum, town of, sketch of, V, 289-290.

York, Captain, commands company at battle of San Antonio, III, 53.

Yorkinos, branch of Masonry organized in Mexico for political purposes, I, 203-204, 282; York Masons of Austin's colony ask for subordinate lodge, 301-302.

Yokums, colleagues of Martin Parmer, I, 254.

Young, Col. William C., captures forts in Indian territory for Confederacy, IV, 349.

Ysleta, town of, established in 1682, oldest town in Texas, I, 19.

"Yucatan, republic of," established, IV, 77; forms naval alliance with Texas, 78,79.

ZACATECAS, state of, revolt by, II, 14-15.

Zambrano, Juan, Ugartechea orders arrest of, II, 266.

Zambrano row, Texans occupy at battle of San Antonio, III, 55-56.

Zavala, Lorenzo de, Mexican federalist leader, Tornel orders arrest of, II, 265; message sent to meeting of colonists at Lynch's on the San Jacinto, 281-285; elected delegate to consultation at San Felipe, 403; named on committee at San Felipe consultation to draw up statement of causes for war, 413; takes part in consultation at San Felipe, III, 7; Dimmitt suggests as nominal leader of expedition against Matamoros in letter to Smith, 93; signs declaration of independence, 223; member of committee to draft constitution at Washington convention, 224; elected first vice-president of Texas republic, 227; acts as interpreter between Santa Anna and Houston, 302, e. s.; appointed to accompany Santa Anna to Mexico as commissioner for Texas government, 334.

Zimmermann, Dr. Alfred, German foreign minister, note to Von Eckhardt, suggesting reconquering of lost territory by Mexico, V. 108-109.

Zuber, W. P., quotation from, I, 308-310.

## RO1248 29808



## \* RO1548 54808

